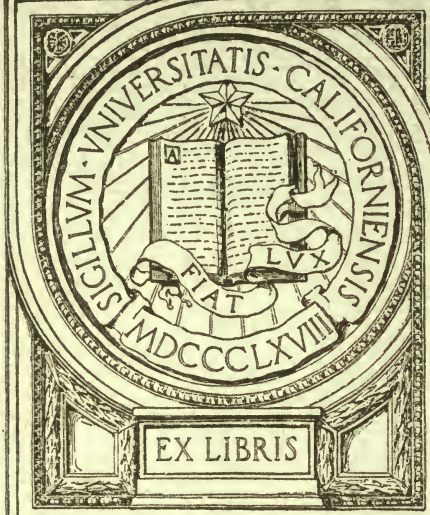


EX LIBRIS

952
I72
1860
v.2

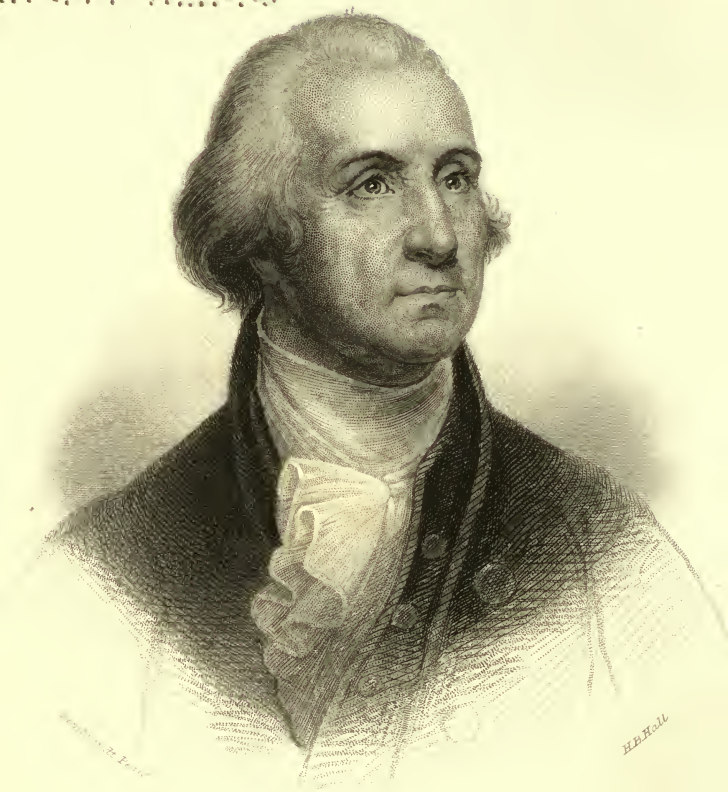
LIFE

OF

GEORGE WASHINGTON.

UNIV. OF
CALIFORNIA

UNIV. OF
CALIFORNIA



NEW YORK: G. P. PUTNAM

UNIV. OF
CALIFORNIA

UNIV. OF
CALIFORNIA

LIFE

OF

GEORGE WASHINGTON.

BY

WASHINGTON IRVING.

IN FIVE VOLS.

VOL. V.

NEW YORK:
G. P. PUTNAM, 532 BROADWAY.
1861.

Entered, according to Act of Congress, in the year 1859, by
WASHINGTON IRVING,
in the Clerk's Office of the District Court of the United States for the Southern District of New York.

John F. Trow,
Printer, Stereotyper, and Electrotyper,
50 Greene Street,
Between Grand & Broome, New York.

ILLUSTRATIONS.

For the National Edition of Washington. Volume Five

STEEL PLATES.

		PAGE
Portrait of Washington,	R. Peale.	Frontispiece.
Tomb at Mount Vernon,		Title.
Thomas Jefferson,		28
Alexander Hamilton,		121

WOOD CUTS.

Washington's Visiting Card,	13
First Presidential Mansion, No. 1 Cherry Street, New York,	19
Houdon's Bust of Washington,	44
The Tomb of Washington at Mount Vernon,	302
Washington's Book-plate,	304

264400

PREFACE.

The present volume completes a work to which the author had long looked forward as the crowning effort of his literary career.

The idea of writing a life of Washington entered at an early day into his mind. It was especially pressed upon his attention nearly thirty years ago while he was in Europe, by a proposition of the late Mr. Archibald Constable, the eminent publisher of Edinburgh, and he resolved to undertake it as soon as he should return to the United States, and be within reach of the necessary documents. Various circumstances occurred to prevent him from carrying this resolution into prompt effect. It remained, however, a cherished purpose of his heart, which he has at length, though somewhat tardily, accomplished.

The manuscript for the present volume was nearly ready for the press some months since, but the author, by applying himself too closely in his eagerness to finish it, brought on a nervous indisposition, which unfitted him for a time for the irksome but indispensable task of re-

vision. In this he has been kindly assisted by his nephew, Pierre Munro Irving, who had previously aided him in the course of his necessary researches, and who now carefully collated the manuscript with the works, letters, and inedited documents from which the facts had been derived. He has likewise had the kindness to superintend the printing of the volume, and the correction of the proof sheets. Thus aided, the author is enabled to lay the volume before the public.

How far this, the last labor of his pen, may meet with general acceptation is with him a matter of hope rather than of confidence. He is conscious of his own shortcomings and of the splendid achievements of oratory of which the character of Washington has recently been made the theme. Grateful, however, for the kindly disposition which has greeted each successive volume, and with a profound sense of the indulgence he has experienced from the public through a long literary career, now extending through more than half a century, he resigns his last volume to its fate, with a feeling of satisfaction that he has at length reached the close of his task, and with the comforting assurance that it has been with him a labor of love, and as such has to a certain degree carried with it its own reward.

WASHINGTON IRVING.

SUNNYSIDE, *April*, 1859

CONTENTS OF VOL. V.

CHAPTER I.

PAGE

The new Government—Domestic and Foreign Relations—Washington's anxious Position—Its difficulties—Without Cabinet or Constitutional Advisers—John Jay—Hamilton—His efficient Support of the Constitution and Theoretic Doubts—James Madison—Knox—His Characteristics..... 1

CHAPTER II.

Washington's Privacy beset with Visits of Compliment—Queries as to the proper Line of Conduct in his Presidential Intercourse—Opinions of Adams and Hamilton—Jefferson as to the Authors of the minor Forms and Ceremonies—His whimsical Anecdote of the first Levee—Inaugural Ball..... 7

CHAPTER III.

Journey of Mrs. Washington to New York—Honors paid her in her Progress—Receptions at the Seat of Government—The President's Equipage..... 14

CHAPTER IV.

Alarming Illness of the President—The Senate rejects one of his Nominations—His sensitive Vindication of it—Death of his Mother—Her Character—The Executive Departments instituted—Selection of Officers for the Treasury and War Departments—Hamilton instructed to report a Financial Plan at the next Session of Congress—Arrangement of the Judiciary Department—Edmund Randolph—Adjournment of Congress—Its Character, by Fisher Ames..... 20

CHAPTER V.

The Department of State still without a Head—Sketch of Jefferson's Character and Opinions—Deeply immersed in French Politics at Paris—Gouverneur Morris

CHAPTER XVII.

PAGE

Washington unanimously re-elected—Opening of Session of Congress—Topics of the President's Speech—Abortive attack upon the Secretary of the Treasury—Washington installed for his Second Term..... 133

CHAPTER XVIII.

Gouverneur Morris Minister at the French Court—His Representations of the State of Affairs—Washington's concern for Lafayette—Jefferson annoyed at his Forebodings—Overthrow of the French Monarchy—Imprisonment of Lafayette—Jefferson concerned, but not discouraged at the Republican Massacres—Washington shocked—His Letter to the Marchioness Lafayette..... 137

CHAPTER XIX.

Washington's entrance upon his Second Term—Gloomy Auspices—Execution of Louis XVI.—France declares War against England—Belligerent Excitement in America—Proclamation of Neutrality—French Mission to the United States—Genet arrives in Charleston—His Reception in Philadelphia—Views of Jefferson and Hamilton—Washington's dispassionate Opinion..... 144

CHAPTER XX.

Genet presents his Letter of Credence—His Diplomatic Speech—Washington's Conversation with Jefferson—Capture of the Ship Grange and other British Vessels—Question of Restitution—Dissatisfaction of Genet—Demands Release of two American Citizens—Washington's Sensitiveness to the Attacks of the Press—His unshaken Determination..... 152

CHAPTER XXI.

Washington called to Mount Vernon—The case of the Little Sarah comes up in his absence—Governor Mifflin determined to prevent her Departure—Rage of Genet—Jefferson urges Detention of the Privateer until the President's return—Evasive assurance of Genet—Distrust of Hamilton and Knox—Washington returns to Philadelphia—A Cabinet Council—Its determination communicated to Genet—The Vessel sails in defiance of it—Formation of the Democratic Society—The recall of Genet determined on—The Ribald Lampoon—Washington's Outburst. 159

CHAPTER XXII.

Threatened Dissolution of the Cabinet—Action between the Ambuscade and Boston—Triumphant return of the former to New York—A French Fleet arrives same Day—Excitement of the People—Genet arrives in the midst of it—His enthusiastic Reception—Is informed by Jefferson of the Measures for his Recall—His Rage and Reply—Decline of his Popularity..... 168

CHAPTER XXIII.

Neutrality endangered by Great Britain—Her ill-advised Measures—Detention of Vessels bound for France—Impressment of American Seamen—Persistence in

PAGE

holding the Western Posts—Congress assembles in December—The President's opening Speech—His Censure of Genet—The Vice President's allusion to it—The Administration in a Minority in the House—Proclamation of Neutrality sustained—Jefferson's Report—Retires from the Cabinet—His parting Rebuke to Genet—His Character of Washington..... 176

CHAPTER XXIV.

Debate on Jefferson's Report on Commercial Intercourse—A Naval Force proposed for the Protection of Commerce against Piratical Cruisers—Further instances of the Audacity of Genet—His Recall—Arrival of his Successor—Irritation excited by British Captures of American Vessels—Preparations for Defence—Embargo—Intense excitement at "British Spoliations"—Partisans of France in the Ascendant—A Chance for accommodating Difficulties—Jefferson's Hopes of Reconciliation—The War Cry uppermost—Washington determines to send a special Envoy to the British Government—Jefferson's Letter to Tench Coxe..... 185

CHAPTER XXV.

James Monroe appointed Minister to France in place of Gouverneur Morris recalled—His Reception—Pennsylvania Insurrection—Proclamation of Washington—Perseverance of the Insurgents—Second Proclamation—The President proceeds against them—General Morgan—Lawrence Lewis—Washington arranges a Plan of Military Operations—Returns to Philadelphia, leaving Lee in command—Submission of the Insurgents—The President's Letter on the Subject to Jay, Minister at London..... 196

CHAPTER XXVI.

Washington's Denunciation of self-created Societies—Not relished by Congress—Campaign of General Wayne—Hamilton reports a Plan for the Redemption of the Public Debt—And retires from his Post as Secretary of the Treasury—Is succeeded by Oliver Wolcott—Resignation of Knox—Succeeded by Timothy Pickering—Close of the Session..... 205

CHAPTER XXVII.

Washington's Anxiety about the Progress of the Negotiation with England—Jay's Treaty arrives for Ratification—Predisposition to Condemn—Return of Jay—Adet succeeds Fauchet as Minister from France—The Treaty laid before the Senate—Ratified with a Qualification—A Novel Question—Popular Discontent—Abstract of the Treaty published—Violent Opposition to it—Washington resolved to ratify—His Resolution suspended—Goes to Mount Vernon—Reply to an Address from Boston—Increasing Clamor..... 212

CHAPTER XXVIII.

Washington recalled to the Seat of Government—Conduct of Randolph brought in Question—Treaty Signed—Resignation of Randolph—His Correspondence with Washington—Unlimited Disclosure permitted—Appearance of his Vindication—Pickering transferred to the Department of State—M'Henry appointed Secretary of War—Arrival of George Washington Lafayette..... 220

CHAPTER XXIX.

PAGE

Meeting of Congress—Washington's Official Summary of the Events of the Year—Cordial Response of the Senate—Partial Demur of the House—Washington's Position and Feelings with regard to England, as shown by himself—Mr. Adet presents the Colors of France—The Treaty returned—Proceedings thereupon—Thomas Pinckney resigns as Minister at London—Rufus King appointed in his Place—Washington's View of the Political Campaign—Jefferson's Fears of an attempt to sow Dissension between him and Washington—Mr. Monroe recalled, and C. C. Pinckney appointed in his Stead—Resentful Policy of France..... 231

CHAPTER XXX.

Washington's Farewell Address—Meets the two Houses of Congress for the last Time—His Speech—Replies of the Senate and House—Mr. Giles—Andrew Jackson—Offensive Publication of the French Minister—John Adams declared President—Washington's Letter to Knox on the eve of his Retirement—The spurious Letters—His Farewell Dinner—John Adams takes the Oath of Office—Greetings of Washington at the Close of the Ceremony..... 244

CHAPTER XXXI.

Washington at Mount Vernon—Influx of strange Faces—Lawrence Lewis—Miss Nelly Custis—Washington's Counsel in Love Matters—A Romantic Episode—Return of George Washington Lafayette..... 256

CHAPTER XXXII.

Parting Address of the French Directory to Mr. Monroe—The new American Minister ordered to leave the Republic—Congress convened—Measures of Defence recommended—Washington's Concern—Appointment of three Envoys Extraordinary—Doubts their Success—Hears of an old Companion in Arms—The three Ministers and Talleyrand—Their degrading Treatment—Threatened War with France—Washington appointed Commander-in-chief—Arranges for three Major Generals—Knox aggrieved..... 265

CHAPTER XXXIII.

Washington taxed anew with the Cares of Office—Correspondence with Lafayette—A Marriage at Mount Vernon—Appointment of a Minister to the French Republic—Washington's Surprise—His Activity on his Estate—Political Anxieties—Concern about the Army..... 282

CHAPTER XXXIV.

Washington digests a Plan for the Management of his Estate—His Views in regard to a Military Academy—Letter to Hamilton—His last Hours—The Funeral—The Will—Its Provisions in regard to his Slaves—Proceedings of Congress on his Death—Conclusion..... 290

APPENDIX.

I.—Portraits of Washington..... 305
II.—Washington's Farewell Address..... 330
III.—Proceedings of Congress in consequence of the Death of Washington..... 352
IV.—Washington's Will..... 358

LIFE OF WASHINGTON.

CHAPTER I.

THE NEW GOVERNMENT—DOMESTIC AND FOREIGN RELATIONS—WASHINGTON'S ANXIOUS POSITION—ITS DIFFICULTIES—WITHOUT CABINET OR CONSTITUTIONAL ADVISERS—JOHN JAY—HAMILTON—HIS EFFICIENT SUPPORT OF THE CONSTITUTION AND THEORETIC DOUBTS—JAMES MADISON—KNOX—HIS CHARACTERISTICS.

THE eyes of the world were upon Washington at the commencement of his administration. He had won laurels in the field: would they continue to flourish in the cabinet? His position was surrounded by difficulties. Inexperienced in the duties of civil administration, he was to inaugurate a new and untried system of government, composed of States and people, as yet a mere experiment, to which some looked forward with buoyant confidence,—many with doubt and apprehension.

He had moreover a high-spirited people to manage, in whom a jealous passion for freedom and independence had been strengthened by war, and who might bear with impatience even the restraints of self-imposed government. The constitution which he was to inaugurate had met with vehement opposition, when

under discussion in the General and State governments. Only three States, New Jersey, Delaware and Georgia, had accepted it unanimously. Several of the most important States had adopted it by a mere majority; five of them under an expressed expectation of specified amendments or modifications; while two States, Rhode Island and North Carolina, still stood aloof.

It is true, the irritation produced by the conflict of opinions in the general and State conventions, had, in a great measure, subsided; but circumstances might occur to inflame it anew. A diversity of opinions still existed concerning the new government. Some feared that it would have too little control over the individual States; that the political connection would prove too weak to preserve order and prevent civil strife; others, that it would be too strong for their separate independence, and would tend toward consolidation and despotism.

The very extent of the country he was called upon to govern, ten times larger than that of any previous republic, must have pressed with weight upon Washington's mind. It presented to the Atlantic a front of fifteen hundred miles, divided into individual States, differing in the forms of their local governments, differing from each other in interests, in territorial magnitudes, in amount of population, in manners, soils, climates and productions, and the characteristics of their several peoples.

Beyond the Alleghanies extended regions almost boundless, as yet for the most part wild and uncultivated, the asylum of roving Indians and restless, discontented white men. Vast tracts, however, were rapidly being peopled, and would soon be portioned into sections requiring local governments. The great natural outlet for the exportation of the products of this region of

inexhaustible fertility, was the Mississippi; but Spain opposed a barrier to the free navigation of this river. Here was peculiar cause of solicitude. Before leaving Mount Vernon, Washington had heard that the hardy yeomanry of the far West were becoming impatient of this barrier, and indignant at the apparent indifference of Congress to their prayers for its removal. He had heard, moreover, that British emissaries were fostering these discontents, sowing the seeds of disaffection, and offering assistance to the Western people to seize on the city of New Orleans and fortify the mouth of the Mississippi; while, on the other hand, the Spanish authorities at New Orleans were represented as intriguing to effect a separation of the Western territory from the Union, with a view or hope of attaching it to the dominion of Spain.

Great Britain, too, was giving grounds for territorial solicitude in these distant quarters by retaining possession of the Western posts, the surrender of which had been stipulated by treaty. Her plea was, that debts due to British subjects, for which by the same treaty the United States were bound, remained unpaid. This the Americans alleged was a mere pretext; the real object of their retention being the monopoly of the fur trade; and to the mischievous influence exercised by these posts over the Indian tribes, was attributed much of the hostile disposition manifested by the latter along the Western frontier.

While these brooding causes of anxiety existed at home, the foreign commerce of the Union was on a most unsatisfactory footing, and required prompt and thorough attention. It was subject to maraud, even by the corsairs of Algiers, Tunis and Tripoli, who captured American merchant vessels and carried their

crews into slavery; no treaty having yet been made with any of the Barbary powers excepting Morocco.

To complete the perplexities which beset the new government, the finances of the country were in a lamentable state. There was no money in the treasury. The efforts of the former government to pay or fund its debts, had failed; there was a universal state of indebtedness, foreign and domestic, and public credit was prostrate.

Such was the condition of affairs when Washington entered upon his new field of action. He was painfully aware of the difficulties and dangers of an undertaking in which past history and past experience afforded no precedents. "I walk, as it were, on untrodden ground," said he; "so many untoward circumstances may intervene in such a new and critical situation, that I shall feel an insuperable diffidence in my own abilities. I feel, in the execution of my arduous office, how much I shall stand in need of the countenance and aid of every friend to myself, of every friend to the revolution, and of every lover of good government." *

As yet he was without the support of constitutional advisers, the departments under the new government not being organized; he could turn with confidence, however, for counsel in an emergency to John Jay, who still remained at the head of affairs, where he had been placed in 1784. He was sure of sympathy also in his old comrade, General Knox, who continued to officiate as secretary of war; while the affairs of the treasury were managed by a board, consisting of Samuel Osgood, Walter Livingston, and Arthur Lee. Among the personal friends not

* Letter to Edward Rutledge.

in office, to whom Washington felt that he could safely have recourse for aid in initiating the new government, was Alexander Hamilton. It is true, many had their doubts of his sincere adhesion to it. In the convention in Philadelphia, he had held up the British constitution as a model to be approached as nearly as possible, by blending some of the advantages of monarchy with the republican form. The form finally adopted was too low-toned for him; he feared it might prove feeble and inefficient; but he voted for it as the best attainable, advocated it in the State convention in New York, and in a series of essays, collectively known as The Federalist, written conjunctively with Madison and Jay; and it was mainly through his efforts as a speaker and a writer that the constitution was ultimately accepted. Still many considered him at heart a monarchist, and suspected him of being secretly bent upon bringing the existing government to the monarchical form. In this they did him injustice. He still continued, it is true, to doubt whether the republican theory would admit of a vigorous execution of the laws, but was clear that it ought to be adhered to as long as there was any chance for its success. "The idea of a perfect equality of political rights among the citizens, exclusive of all permanent or hereditary distinctions," had not hitherto, he thought, from an imperfect structure of the government, had a fair trial, and "was of a nature to engage the good wishes of every good man, whatever might be his theoretic doubts;" the endeavor, therefore, in his opinion, ought to be to give it "a better chance of success by a government more capable of energy and order."*

Washington, who knew and appreciated Hamilton's charac-

* Hamilton's Writings, iv. 273.

ter, had implicit confidence in his sincerity, and felt assured that he would loyally aid in carrying into effect the constitution as adopted.

It was a great satisfaction to Washington, on looking round for reliable advisers at this moment, to see James Madison among the members of Congress: Madison, who had been with him in the convention, who had labored in The Federalist, and whose talents as a speaker, and calm, dispassionate reasoner; whose extensive information and legislative experience destined him to be a leader in the House. Highly appreciating his intellectual and moral worth, Washington would often turn to him for counsel. "I am troublesome," would he say "but you must excuse me; ascribe it to friendship and confidence."

Knox, of whose sure sympathies we have spoken, was in strong contrast with the cool statesman just mentioned. His mind was ardent and active, his imagination vivid, as was his language. He had abandoned the military garb, but still maintained his soldier-like air. He was large in person, above the middle stature, with a full face, radiant and benignant, bespeaking his open, buoyant, generous nature. He had a sonorous voice, and sometimes talked rather grandly, flourishing his cane to give effect to his periods.* He was cordially appreciated by Washington, who had experienced his prompt and efficient talent in time of war, had considered him one of the ablest officers of the revolution, and now looked to him as an energetic man of business, capable of giving practical advice in time of peace, and cherished for him that strong feeling of ancient companionship in toil and danger, which bound the veterans of the revolution firmly to each other.

* See Sullivan's Letters on Public Characters, p. 84.

CHAPTER II.

WASHINGTON'S PRIVACY BESET WITH VISITS OF COMPLIMENT—QUERIES AS TO THE PROPER LINE OF CONDUCT IN HIS PRESIDENTIAL INTERCOURSE—OPINIONS OF ADAMS AND HAMILTON—JEFFERSON AS TO THE AUTHORS OF THE MINOR FORMS AND CEREMONIES—HIS WHIMSICAL ANECDOTE OF THE FIRST LEVEE—INAUGURAL BALL.

The moment the inauguration was over, Washington was made to perceive that he was no longer master of himself or of his home. "By the time I had done breakfast," writes he, "and thence till dinner, and afterwards till bed-time, I could not get rid of the ceremony of one visit before I had to attend to another. In a word, I had no leisure to read or to answer the despatches that were pouring in upon me from all quarters."

How was he to be protected from these intrusions? In his former capacity as commander-in-chief of the armies, his head-quarters had been guarded by sentinels and military etiquette; but what was to guard the privacy of a popular chief magistrate?

What, too, were to be the forms and ceremonials to be adopted in the presidential mansion, that would maintain the dignity of his station, allow him time for the performance of its

official duties, and yet be in harmony with the temper and feelings of the people, and the prevalent notions of equality and republican simplicity?

The conflict of opinions that had already occurred as to the form and title by which the President was to be addressed, had made him aware that every step at the outset of his career would be subject to scrutiny, perhaps cavil, and might hereafter be cited as a precedent. Looking round, therefore, upon the able men at hand, such as Adams, Hamilton, Jay, Madison, he propounded to them a series of questions as to a line of conduct proper for him to observe.

In regard to visitors, for instance, would not one day in the week be sufficient for visits of compliment, and one hour every morning (at eight o'clock for example) for visits on business?

Might he make social visits to acquaintances and public characters, not as President, but as private individual? And then as to his table—under the preceding form of government, the Presidents of Congress had been accustomed to give dinners twice a week to large parties of both sexes, and invitations had been so indiscriminate, that every one who could get introduced to the President, conceived he had a right to be invited to his board. The table was, therefore, always crowded, and with a mixed company; yet, as it was in the nature of things impracticable to invite everybody, as many offences were given as if no table had been kept.

Washington was resolved not to give general entertainments of this kind, but in his series of questions he asked whether he might not invite, informally or otherwise, six, eight, or ten official characters, including in rotation the members of both Houses of Congress, to dine with him on the days fixed for

receiving company, without exciting clamors in the rest of the community.

Adams in his reply talked of chamberlains, aides-de-camp, masters of ceremony, and evinced a high idea of the presidential office and the state with which it ought to be maintained. "The office," writes he, "by its legal authority defined in the constitution, has no equal in the world excepting those only which are held by crowned heads; nor is the royal authority in all cases to be compared to it. The royal office in Poland is a mere shadow in comparison with it. The Dogeship in Venice, and the Stadtholdership in Holland, are not so much—neither dignity nor authority can be supported in human minds, collected into nations or any great numbers, without a splendor and majesty in some degree proportioned to them. The sending and receiving ambassadors is one of the most splendid and important prerogatives of sovereigns, absolute or limited, and this in our constitution is wholly in the President. If the state and pomp essential to this great department are not in a good degree preserved, it will be in vain for America to hope for consideration with foreign powers." *

According to Mr. Adams, two days in a week would be required for the receipt of visits of compliment. Persons desiring an interview with the President should make application through the minister of state. In every case the name, quality or business of the visitor should be communicated to a chamberlain or gentleman in waiting, who should judge whom to admit, and whom to exclude. The time for receiving visits ought to be limited, as for example, from eight to nine or ten o'clock, lest

* Life and Works of John Adams, vol. viii. p. 493.

the whole morning be taken up. The President might invite what official character, members of Congress, strangers, or citizens of distinction he pleased, in small parties without exciting clamors; but this should always be done without formality. His private life should be at his own discretion, as to giving or receiving informal visits among friends and acquaintances; but in his official character, he should have no intercourse with society but upon public business, or at his levees. Adams, in the conclusion of his reply, ingenuously confessed that his long residence abroad might have impressed him with views of things incompatible with the present temper and feelings of his fellow-citizens; and Jefferson seems to have been heartily of the same opinion, for speaking of Adams in his *anas*, he observes that "the glare of royalty and nobility, during his mission to England, had made him believe their fascination a necessary ingredient in government."* Hamilton, in his reply, while he considered it a primary object for the public good, that the dignity of the presidential office should be supported, advised that care should be taken to avoid so high a tone in the demeanor of the occupant, as to shock the prevalent notions of equality.

The President, he thought, should hold a levee at a fixed time once a week, remain half an hour, converse cursorily on indifferent subjects with such persons as invited his attention, and then retire.

He should accept no invitations, give formal entertainments twice, or at most, four times in the year; if twice, on the anniversaries of the declaration of independence and of his inauguration: if four times, the anniversary of the treaty of alliance with

* Jefferson's Works, ix. 97.

France and that of the definitive treaty with Great Britain to be added.

The President on levee days to give informal invitations to family dinners; not more than six or eight to be asked at a time, and the civility to be confined essentially to members of the legislature, and other official characters:—the President never to remain long at table.

The heads of departments should, of course, have access to the President on business. Foreign ministers of some descriptions should also be entitled to it. "In Europe, I am informed," writes Hamilton, "ambassadors only have direct access to the chief magistrate. Something very near what prevails there would, in my opinion, be right. The distinction of rank between diplomatic characters requires attention, and the door of access ought not to be too wide to that class of persons. I have thought that the members of the Senate should also have a right of *individual* access on matters relative to the *public administration.* In England and France peers of the realm have this right. We have none such in this country, but I believe it will be satisfactory to the people to know that there is some body of men in the state who have a right of continual communication with the President. It will be considered a safeguard against secret combinations to deceive him." *

The reason alleged by Hamilton for giving the Senate this privilege, and not the Representatives, was, that in the constitution "the Senate are coupled with the President in certain executive functions, treaties, and appointments. This makes

* Hamilton's Works, vol. iv., p. 3.

them in a degree his constitutional counsellors, and gives them a peculiar claim to the right of access."

These are the only written replies that we have before us of Washington's advisers on this subject.

Colonel Humphreys, formerly one of Washington's aides-de-camp, and recently secretary of Jefferson's legation at Paris, was at present an inmate in the presidential mansion. General Knox was frequently there; to these Jefferson assures us, on Washington's authority, was assigned the task of considering and prescribing the minor forms and ceremonies, the etiquette, in fact, to be observed on public occasions. Some of the forms proposed by them, he adds, were adopted. Others were so highly strained that Washington absolutely rejected them. Knox was no favorite with Jefferson, who had no sympathies with the veteran soldier, and styles him "a man of parade," and Humphreys, he appears to think captivated by the ceremonials of foreign courts. He gives a whimsical account, which he had at a second or third hand, of the first levee. An ante-chamber and presence room were provided, and, when those who were to pay their court were assembled, the President set out, preceded by Humphreys. After passing through the ante-chamber, the door of the inner room was thrown open, and Humphreys entered first, calling out with a loud voice, "The President of the United States." The President was so much disconcerted with it that he did not recover in the whole time of the levee, and, when the company was gone, he said to Humphreys, "Well, you have taken me in once, but by ——, you shall never take me in a second time."

This anecdote is to be taken with caution, for Jefferson was

disposed to receive any report that placed the forms adopted in a disparaging point of view.

He gives in his Ana a still more whimsical account on the authority of "a Mr. Brown," of the ceremonials at an inauguration ball at which Washington and Mrs. Washington presided in almost regal style. As it has been proved to be entirely incorrect, we have not deemed it worthy an insertion. A splendid ball was in fact given at the Assembly Rooms, and another by the French Minister, the Count de Moustier, at both of which Washington was present and danced; but Mrs. Washington was not at either of them, not being yet arrived, and on neither occasion were any mock regal ceremonials observed. Washington was the last man that would have tolerated any thing of the kind. Our next chapter will show the almost casual manner in which the simple formalities of his republican court originated.

CHAPTER III.

JOURNEY OF MRS. WASHINGTON TO NEW YORK—HONORS PAID HER IN HER PROGRESS—RECEPTIONS AT THE SEAT OF GOVERNMENT—THE PRESIDENT'S EQUIPAGE.

On the 17th of May, Mrs. Washington, accompanied by her grandchildren, Eleanor Custis and George Washington Parke Custis, set out from Mount Vernon in her travelling carriage with a small escort of horse, to join her husband at the seat of government; as she had been accustomed to join him at head-quarters, in the intervals of his revolutionary campaigns.

Throughout the journey she was greeted with public testimonials of respect and affection. As she approached Philadelphia, the President of Pennsylvania and other of the State functionaries, with a number of the principal inhabitants of both sexes, came forth to meet her, and she was attended into the city by a numerous cavalcade, and welcomed with the ringing of bells and firing of cannon.

Similar honors were paid her in her progress through New Jersey. At Elizabethtown she alighted at the residence of Governor Livingston, whither Washington came from New York to meet her. They proceeded thence by water, in the same splendid

barge in which the general had been conveyed for his inauguration. It was manned, as on that occasion, by thirteen master pilots, arrayed in white, and had several persons of note on board. There was a salute of thirteen guns as the barge passed the Battery at New York. The landing took place at Peck Slip, not far from the presidential residence, amid the enthusiastic cheers of an immense multitude.

On the following day, Washington gave a demi-official dinner, of which Mr. Wingate, a senator from New Hampshire, who was present, writes as follows: "The guests consisted of the Vice President, the foreign ministers, the heads of departments, the Speaker of the House of Representatives, and the Senators from New Hampshire and Georgia, the then most Northern and Southern States. It was the least showy dinner that I ever saw at the President's table, and the company was not large. As there was no chaplain present, the President himself said a very short grace as he was sitting down. After dinner and dessert were finished, *one glass* of wine was passed around the table, and *no toast*. The President rose, and all the company retired to the drawing-room, from which the guests departed, as every one chose, without ceremony."

On the evening of the following day, (Friday, May 29th,) Mrs. Washington had a general reception, which was attended by all that was distinguished in official and fashionable society. Henceforward there were similar receptions every Friday evening, from eight to ten o'clock, to which the families of all persons of respectability, native or foreign, had access, without special invitation; and at which the President was always present. These assemblages were as free from ostentation and restraint as the ordinary receptions of polite society; yet the reader will find they

were soon subject to invidious misrepresentation; and cavilled at as "court-like levees" and "queenly drawing-rooms."

Beside these public receptions, the presidential family had its private circle of social intimacy; the President, moreover, was always ready to receive visits by appointment on public or private business.

The sanctity and quiet of Sunday were strictly observed by Washington. He attended church in the morning, and passed the afternoon alone in his closet. No visitors were admitted, excepting perhaps an intimate friend in the evening, which was spent by him in the bosom of his family.

The household establishment was conducted on an ample and dignified scale, but without ostentation, and regulated with characteristic system and exactness. Samuel Fraunces, once landlord of the city tavern in Broad street, where Washington took leave of the officers of the army in 1783, was now Steward of the presidential household. He was required to render a weekly statement of receipts and expenditures, and warned to guard against waste and extravagance. "We are happy to inform our readers," says Fenno's Gazette of the day, "that the President is determined to pursue that system of regularity and economy in his household which has always marked his public and private life."

In regard to the deportment of Washington at this juncture, we have been informed by one who had opportunities of seeing him, that he still retained a military air of command which had become habitual to him. At levees and drawing-rooms he sometimes appeared cold and distant, but this was attributed by those who best knew him to the novelty of his position and his innate diffidence, which seemed to increase with the light which his re-

nown shed about him. Though reserved at times, his reserve had nothing repulsive in it, and in social intercourse, where he was no longer under the eye of critical supervision, soon gave way to soldier-like frankness and cordiality. . At all times his courtesy was genuine and benignant, and totally free from that stately condescension sometimes mistaken for politeness. Nothing we are told could surpass the noble grace with which he presided at a ceremonial dinner; kindly attentive to all his guests, but particularly attentive to put those at their ease and in a favorable light, who appeared to be most diffident.

As to Mrs. Washington, those who really knew her at the time, speak of her as free from pretension or affectation; undazzled by her position, and discharging its duties with the truthful simplicity and real good-breeding of one accustomed to preside over a hospitable mansion in the "Ancient Dominion." She had her husband's predilection for private life. In a letter to an intimate she writes: "It is owing to the kindness of our numerous friends in all quarters that my new and unwished for situation is not indeed a burden to me. When I was much younger, I should probably have enjoyed the innocent gayeties of life as much as most persons of my age; but I had long since placed all the prospects of my future worldly happiness in the still enjoyments of the fireside at Mount Vernon.

"I little thought, when the war was finished, that any circumstances could possibly happen, which would call the General into public life again. I had anticipated that from that moment we should be suffered to grow old together in solitude and tranquillity. That was the first and dearest wish of my heart."*

* Quoted in a note to Sparks, p. 422.

Much has been said of Washington's equipages, when at New York, and of his having four, and sometimes six horses before his carriage, with servants and outriders in rich livery. Such style we would premise was usual at the time both in England and the colonies, and had been occasionally maintained by the continental dignitaries, and by Governors of the several States, prior to the adoption of the new constitution. It was still prevalent, we are told, among the wealthy planters of the South, and sometimes adopted by 'merchant princes' and rich individuals at the North. It does not appear, however, that Washington ever indulged in it through ostentation. When he repaired to the Hall of Congress, at his inauguration, he was drawn by a single pair of horses in a chariot presented for the occasion, on the panels of which were emblazoned the arms of the United States.

Beside this modest equipage there was the ample family carriage which had been brought from Virginia. To this four horses were put when the family drove out into the country, the state of the roads in those days requiring it. For the same reason six horses were put to the same vehicle on journeys, and once on a state occasion. If there was any thing he was likely to take a pride in, it was horses; he was passionately fond of that noble animal, and mention is occasionally made of four white horses of great beauty which he owned while in New York.* His favorite exercise when the weather permitted it was on horseback, accom-

* For some of these particulars concerning Washington we are indebted to the late William A. Duer, president of Columbia College, who in his boyhood was frequently in the President's house, playmate of young Custis, Mrs. Washington's grandson.

Washington's Residences in New York.—The first Presidential residence was at the junction of Pearl and Cherry streets, Franklin square. At the

panied by one or more of the members of his household, and he was noted always for being admirably mounted, and one of the best horsemen of his day.

end of about a year, the President removed to the house on the west side of Broadway, near Rector street, afterwards known as Bunker's Mansion House. Both of these buildings have disappeared, in the course of modern "improvements."

CHAPTER IV.

ALARMING ILLNESS OF THE PRESIDENT—THE SENATE REJECTS ONE OF HIS NOMINATIONS—HIS SENSITIVE VINDICATION OF IT—DEATH OF HIS MOTHER—HER CHARACTER—THE EXECUTIVE DEPARTMENTS INSTITUTED—SELECTION OF OFFICERS FOR THE TREASURY AND WAR DEPARTMENTS—HAMILTON INSTRUCTED TO REPORT A FINANCIAL PLAN AT THE NEXT SESSION OF CONGRESS—ARRANGEMENT OF THE JUDICIARY DEPARTMENT—EDMUND RANDOLPH—ADJOURNMENT OF CONGRESS—ITS CHARACTER, BY FISHER AMES.

As soon as Washington could command sufficient leisure to inspect papers and documents, he called unofficially upon the heads of departments to furnish him with such reports in writing as would aid him in gaining a distinct idea of the state of public affairs. For this purpose also he had recourse to the public archives, and proceeded to make notes of the foreign official correspondence from the close of the war until his inauguration. He was interrupted in his task by a virulent attack of anthrax, which for several days threatened mortification. The knowledge of his perilous condition spread alarm through the community; he, however, remained unagitated. His medical adviser was Dr. Samuel Bard, of New York, an excellent physician and most estimable man, who attended him with unremitting assiduity. Being alone one day with the doctor, Washington regarded him steadily, and

asked his candid opinion as to the probable result of his case. "Do not flatter me with vain hopes," said he, with placid firmness; "I am not afraid to die, and therefore can bear the worst." The doctor expressed hope, but owned that he had apprehensions. "Whether to-night or twenty years hence, makes no difference," observed Washington. "I know that I am in the hands of a good Providence." His sufferings were intense, and his recovery was slow. For six weeks he was obliged to lie on his right side; but after a time he had his carriage so contrived that he could extend himself at full length in it, and take exercise in the open air.

While rendered morbidly sensitive by bodily pain, he suffered deep annoyance from having one of his earliest nominations, that of Benjamin Fishburn, for the place of naval officer of the port of Savannah, rejected by the Senate.

If there was any thing in which Washington was scrupulously conscientious, it was in the exercise of the nominating power; scrutinizing the fitness of candidates; their comparative claims on account of public services and sacrifices, and with regard to the equable distribution of offices among the States; in all which he governed himself solely by considerations for the public good. He was especially scrupulous where his own friends and connections were concerned. "So far as I know my own mind," would he say, "I would not be in the remotest degree influenced in making nominations by motives arising from the ties of family or blood."

He was principally hurt in the present instance by the want of deference on the part of the Senate, in assigning no reason for rejecting his nomination of Mr. Fishburn. He acquiesced, however, in the rejection, and forthwith sent in the name of another

candidate; but at the same time administered a temperate and dignified rebuke. "Whatever may have been the reasons which induced your dissent," writes he to the Senate, "I am persuaded that they were such as you deemed sufficient. Permit me to submit to your consideration, whether, on occasions where the propriety of nominations appears questionable to you, it would not be expedient to communicate that circumstance to me, and thereby avail yourselves of the information which led me to make them, and which I would with pleasure lay before you. Probably my reasons for nominating Mr. Fishburn may tend to show that such a mode of proceeding, in such cases, might be useful. I will therefore detail them."

He then proceeds to state, that Colonel Fishburn had served under his own eye with reputation as an officer and a gentleman; had distinguished himself at the storming of Stony Point; had repeatedly been elected to the Assembly of Georgia as a representative from Chatham County, in which Savannah was situated; had been elected by the officers of the militia of that county Lieutenant Colonel of the militia of the district; had been member of the Executive Council of the State, and president of the same; had been appointed by the council to an office which he actually held, in the port of Savannah, nearly similar to that for which Washington had nominated him.

"It appeared therefore to me," adds Washington, "that Mr. Fishburn must have enjoyed the *confidence* of the militia officers in order to have been elected to a military rank—the *confidence* of the freemen, to have been elected to the Assembly—the *confidence* of the Assembly to have been selected for the Council, and the *confidence* of the Council to have been appointed collector of the port of Savannah."

We give this letter in some detail, as relating to the only instance in which a nomination by Washington was rejected. The reasons of the Senate for rejecting it do not appear. They seem to have felt his rebuke, for the nomination last made by him was instantly confirmed.

While yet in a state of convalescence, Washington received intelligence of the death of his mother. The event, which took place at Fredericksburg in Virginia, on the 25th of August, was not unexpected; she was eighty-two years of age, and had for some time been sinking under an incurable malady, so that when he last parted with her he had apprehended that it was a final separation. Still he was deeply affected by the intelligence; consoling himself, however, with the reflection that "Heaven had spared her to an age beyond which few attain; had favored her with the full enjoyment of her mental faculties, and as much bodily health as usually falls to the lot of fourscore."

Mrs. Mary Washington is represented as a woman of strong plain sense, strict integrity, and an inflexible spirit of command. We have mentioned the exemplary manner in which she, a lone widow, had trained her little flock in their childhood. The deference for her, then instilled into their minds, continued throughout life, and was manifested by Washington when at the height of his power and reputation. Eminently practical, she had thwarted his military aspirings when he was about to seek honor in the British navy. During his early and disastrous campaigns on the frontier, she would often shake her head and exclaim, "Ah, George had better have staid at home and cultivated his farm." Even his ultimate success and renown had never dazzled, however much they may have gratified her. When others congratulated her, and were enthusiastic in his praise, she listened

in silence, and would temperately reply that he had been a good son, and she believed he had done his duty as a man.

Hitherto the new government had not been properly organized, but its several duties had been performed by the officers who had them in charge at the time of Washington's inauguration. It was not until the 10th of September that laws were passed instituting a department of Foreign Affairs (afterwards termed Department of State), a Treasury department, and a department of War, and fixing their respective salaries. On the following day, Washington nominated General Knox to the department of War, the duties of which that officer had hitherto discharged.

The post of Secretary of the Treasury was one of far greater importance at the present moment. It was a time of financial exigency. As yet no statistical account of the country had been attempted; its fiscal resources were wholly unknown; its credit was almost annihilated, for it was obliged to borrow money even to pay the interest of its debts.

We have already quoted the language held by Washington in regard to this state of things before he had assumed the direction of affairs. "My endeavors shall be unremittingly exerted, even at the hazard of former fame, or present popularity, to extricate my country from the embarrassments in which it is entangled through want of credit."

Under all these circumstances, and to carry out these views, he needed an able and zealous coadjutor in the Treasury department; one equally solicitous with himself on the points in question, and more prepared upon them by financial studies and investigations than he could pretend to be. Such a person he considered Alexander Hamilton, whom he nominated as Secretary

of the Treasury, and whose qualifications for the office were so well understood by the Senate that his nomination was confirmed on the same day on which it was made.

Within a few days after Hamilton's appointment, the House of Representatives (Sept. 21), acting upon the policy so ardently desired by Washington, passed a resolution, declaring their opinion of the high importance to the honor and prosperity of the United States, that an adequate provision should be made for the support of public credit; and instructing the Secretary of the Treasury to prepare a plan for the purpose, and report it at their next session.

The arrangement of the Judicial department was one of Washington's earliest cares. On the 27th of September, he wrote unofficially to Edmund Randolph, of Virginia, informing him that he had nominated him Attorney-General of the United States, and would be highly gratified with his acceptance of that office. Some old recollections of the camp and of the early days of the revolution, may have been at the bottom of this good-will, for Randolph had joined the army at Cambridge in 1775, and acted for a time as aide-de-camp to Washington in place of Mifflin. He had since gained experience in legislative business as member of Congress, from 1779 to 1782, Governor of Virginia in 1786, and delegate to the convention in 1787. In the discussions of that celebrated body, he had been opposed to a single executive, professing to discern in the unity of that power the "fœtus of monarchy;" and preferring an executive consisting of three; whereas, in the opinion of others, this plural executive would be "a kind of Cerberus with three heads." Like Madison, he had disapproved of the equality of suffrage in the Senate, and

been, moreover, of opinion, that the President should be ineligible to office after a given number of years.

Dissatisfied with some of the provisions of the constitution as adopted, he had refused to sign it; but had afterwards supported it in the State convention of Virginia. As we recollect him many years afterwards, his appearance and address were dignified and prepossessing; he had an expressive countenance, a beaming eye, and somewhat of the *ore rotundo* in speaking. Randolph promptly accepted the nomination, but did not take his seat in the cabinet until some months after Knox and Hamilton.

By the judicial system established for the Federal Government, the Supreme Court of the United States was to be composed of a chief justice and five associate judges. There were to be district courts with a judge in each State, and circuit courts held by an associate judge and a district judge. John Jay, of New York, received the appointment of Chief Justice, and in a letter enclosing his commission, Washington expressed the singular pleasure he felt in addressing him "as the head of that department which must be considered as the keystone of our political fabric."

Jay's associate judges were, John Rutledge of South Carolina, James Wilson of Pennsylvania, William Cushing of Massachusetts, John Blair of Virginia, and James Iredell of North Carolina. Washington had originally nominated to one of the judgeships his former military secretary, Robert Harrison, familiarly known as *the old Secretary;* but he preferred the office of Chancellor of Maryland, recently conferred upon him.

On the 29th of September, Congress adjourned to the first Monday in January, after an arduous session, in which many important questions had been discussed, and powers organized

and distributed. The actual Congress was inferior in eloquence and shining talent to the first Congress of the revolution; but it possessed men well fitted for the momentous work before them; sober, solid, upright, and well informed. An admirable harmony had prevailed between the legislature and the executive, and the utmost decorum had reigned over the public deliberations.

Fisher Ames, then a young man, who had acquired a brilliant reputation in Massachusetts by the eloquence with which he had championed the new constitution in the convention of that important State, and who had recently been elected to Congress, speaks of it in the following terms: "I have never seen an assembly where so little art was used. If they wish to carry a point, it is directly declared and justified. Its merits and defects are plainly stated, not without sophistry and prejudice, but without management. * * * There is no intrigue, no caucusing, little of clanning together, little asperity in debate, or personal bitterness out of the House."

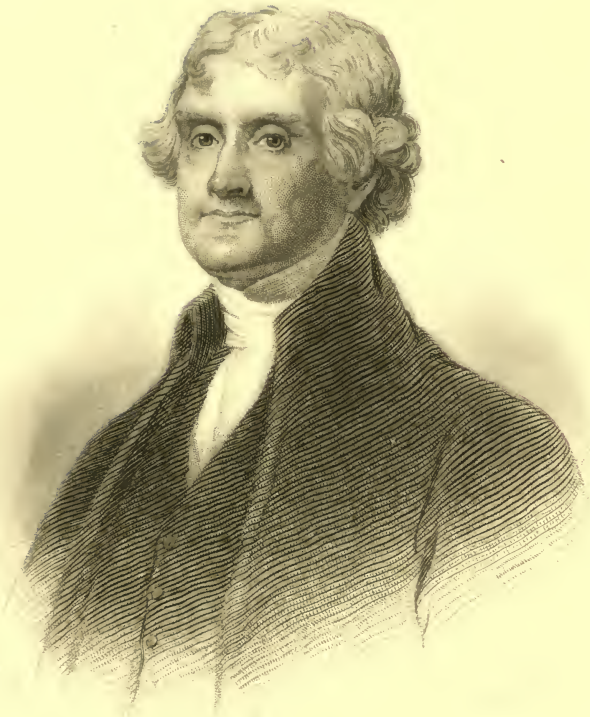
CHAPTER V.

THE DEPARTMENT OF STATE STILL WITHOUT A HEAD—SKETCH OF JEFFERSON'S CHARACTER AND OPINIONS—DEEPLY IMMERSED IN FRENCH POLITICS AT PARIS—GOUVERNEUR MORRIS ABROAD—CONTRAST OF HIS AND JEFFERSON'S VIEWS ON THE FRENCH CRISIS—NEWS OF THE FRENCH REVOLUTION IN AMERICA—POPULAR EXCITEMENT—WASHINGTON'S CAUTIOUS OPINION ON THE SUBJECT—HAMILTON'S APPREHENSIVE VIEW—JEFFERSON OFFERED A PLACE IN THE CABINET AS SECRETARY OF STATE.

The cabinet was still incomplete; the department of foreign affairs, or rather of State, as it was now called, was yet to be supplied with a head. John Jay would have received the nomination had he not preferred the bench. Washington next thought of Thomas Jefferson, who had so long filled the post of Minister Plenipotentiary at the Court of Versailles, but had recently solicited and obtained permission to return, for a few months, to the United States for the purpose of placing his children among their friends in their native country, and of arranging his private affairs, which had suffered from his protracted absence. And here we will venture a few particulars concerning this eminent statesman, introductory to the important influence he was to exercise on national affairs.

His political principles as a democratic republican, had been

UNIV. OF
CALIFORNIA



THOMAS JEFFERSON

Th Jefferson

UNIV. OF
CALIFORNIA

avowed at an early date in his draft of the Declaration of Independence, and subsequently in the successful war which he made upon the old cavalier traditions of his native State; its laws of entails and primogeniture, and its church establishment, a war which broke down the hereditary fortunes and hereditary families, and put an end to the hereditary aristocracy of the Ancient Dominion.

Being sent to Paris as minister plenipotentiary a year or two after the peace, he arrived there, as he says, "when the American revolution seemed to have awakened the thinking part of the French nation from the sleep of despotism in which they had been sunk."

Carrying with him his republican principles and zeal, his house became the resort of Lafayette and others of the French officers who had served in the American revolution. They were mostly, he said, young men little shackled by habits and prejudices, and had come back with new ideas and new impressions which began to be disseminated by the press and in conversation. Politics became the theme of all societies, male and female, and a very extensive and zealous party was formed which acquired the appellation of the Patriot Party, who, sensible of the abuses of the government under which they lived, sighed for occasions of reforming it. This party, writes Jefferson, "comprehended all the honesty of the kingdom sufficiently at leisure to think, the men of letters, the easy bourgeois, the young nobility, partly from reflection, partly from the mode; for these sentiments became matter of mode, and, as such, united most of the young women to the party."

By this party Jefferson was considered high authority from his republican principles and experience, and his advice was con-

tinually sought in the great effort for political reform which was daily growing stronger and stronger. His absence in Europe had prevented his taking part in the debates on the new constitution, but he had exercised his influence through his correspondence. "I expressed freely," writes he, "in letters to my friends, and most particularly to Mr. Madison and General Washington, my approbations and objections."* What those approbations and objections were appears by the following citations, which are important to be kept in mind as illustrating his after conduct:

"I approved, from the first moment, of the great mass of what is in the new constitution, the consolidation of the government, the organization into executive, legislative, and judiciary; the subdivision of the legislature, the happy compromise of the interests between the great and little States, by the different manner of voting in the different Houses, the voting by persons instead of States, the qualified negative on laws given to the executive, which, however, I should have liked better if associated with the judiciary also, as in New York, and the power of taxation: what I disapproved from the first moment, was the want of a Bill of rights to guard liberty against the legislative as well as against the executive branches of the government; that is to say, to secure freedom of religion, freedom of the press, freedom from monopolies, freedom from unlawful imprisonment, freedom from a permanent military, and a trial by jury in all cases determinable by the laws of the land."

What he greatly objected to was the perpetual re-eligibility of the President. "This, I fear," said he, "will make that an

* Autobiography, Works, i. 79.

office for life, first, and then hereditary. I was much an enemy to monarchies before I came to Europe, and am ten thousand times more so since I have seen what they are. There is scarcely an evil known in these countries which may not be traced to their king as its source, nor a good which is not derived from the small fibres of republicanism existing among them. I can further say, with safety, there is not a crowned head in Europe whose talents or merits would entitle him to be elected a vestryman by the people of any parish in America."*

In short, such a horror had he imbibed of kingly rule, that, in a familiar letter to Colonel Humphreys, who had been his Secretary of Legation, he gives it as the duty of our young Republic "to besiege the throne of heaven with eternal prayers to extirpate from creation this class of human lions, tigers, and mammoths, called kings, from whom, let him perish who does not say, 'Good Lord, deliver us!'"

Jefferson's political fervor occasionally tended to exaltation, but it was genuine. In his excited state he regarded with quick suspicion every thing in his own country that appeared to him to have a regal tendency. His sensitiveness had been awakened by the debates in Congress as to the title to be given to the President, whether or not he should be addressed as His Highness; and had been relieved by the decision that he was to have no title but that of office, viz.: President of the United States. "I hope," said Jefferson, "the terms of Excellency, Honor, Worship, Esquire, forever disappear from among us from that moment. I wish that of Mr. would follow them."†

* Letter to Washington May 2, 1788. Works ii. 375.

† Letter to Mr. Carmichael, Works iii. 88.

With regard to the re-eligibility of the President, his anxiety was quieted for the present, by the elevation of Washington to the Presidential chair. "Since the thing [re-eligibility] is established," writes he, "I would wish it not to be altered during the life-time of our great leader, whose executive talents are superior to those, I believe, of any man in the world, and who, alone, by the authority of his name, and the confidence reposed in his perfect integrity, is fully qualified to put the new government so under way as to secure it against the efforts of opposition. But, having derived from our error all the good there was in it, I hope we shall correct it the moment we can no longer have the same name at the helm." *

Jefferson, at the time of which we are speaking, was, as we have shown, deeply immersed in French politics and interested in the success of the "Patriot Party," in its efforts to reform the country. His despatches to government all proved how strongly he was on the side of the people. "He considered a successful reformation in France as insuring a general reformation throughout Europe, and the resurrection to a new life of their people now ground to dust by the abuses of the governing powers."

Gouverneur Morris, who was at that time in Paris on private business, gives a different view of the state of things produced by the Patriot party. Morris had arrived in Paris on the 3d of February, 1789, furnished by Washington with letters of introduction to persons in England, France, and Holland. His brilliant talents, ready conversational powers, easy confidence in society, and striking aristocratical appearance, had given him great currency, especially in the court party and among the

* Letter to F. Hopkinson, Works ii. 587.

ancient nobility; in which direction his tastes most inclined. He had renewed his intimacy with Lafayette, whom he found "full of politics," but "too republican for the genius of his country."

In a letter to the French Minister, residing in New York, Morris writes on the 23d of February, 1789: "Your nation is now in a most important crisis, and the great question—shall we hereafter have a constitution, or shall will continue to be law—employs every mind and agitates every heart in France. Even voluptuousness itself rises from its couch of roses and looks anxiously abroad at the busy scene to which nothing can now be indifferent.

"Your nobles, your clergy, your people, are all in motion for the elections. A spirit which has been dormant for generations starts up and stares about, ignorant of the means of obtaining, but ardently desirous to possess its object—consequently active, energetic, easily led, but also easily, too easily, misled. Such is the instinctive love of freedom which now grows warm in the bosom of your country."

When the king was constrained by the popular voice to convene the States General at Versailles for the purpose of discussing measures of reform, Jefferson was a constant attendant upon the debates of that body. "I was much acquainted with the leading patriots of the Assembly," writes he, "being from a country which had successfully passed through similar reform; they were disposed to my acquaintance and had some confidence in me. I urged most strenuously an immediate compromise to secure what the government was now ready to yield, and trust to future occasions for what might still be wanting."

The "leading patriots" here spoken of, were chiefly the

deputies from Brittany, who, with others, formed an association called the Breton Club, to watch the matters debated in Parliament and shape the course of affairs.

Morris, speaking of Jefferson at this juncture, observes, "He and I differ in our system of politics. He, with all the leaders of liberty here, is desirous of annihilating distinctions of order. How far such views may be right, respecting mankind in general, is, I think, extremely problematical. But, with respect to this nation, I am sure it is wrong and cannot eventuate well." *

Jefferson, in a letter to Thomas Paine (July 11), giving some account of the proceedings of the States General, observes, "The National Assembly (for that is the name they take) having shown, through every stage of these transactions, a coolness, wisdom, and resolution to set fire to the four corners of the kingdom, and to perish with it themselves rather than to relinquish an iota from their plan of a total change of government, are now in complete and undisputed possession of the Sovereignty. The executive and aristocracy are at their feet; the mass of the nation, the mass of the clergy, and the army are with them; they have prostrated the old government and are now beginning to build one from the foundation."

It was but three days after the date of this letter that the people of Paris rose in their might, plundered the arsenal of the Invalides, furnished themselves with arms, stormed the Bastille; and a national guard, formed of the Bourgeoisie, with the tricolored cockade for an emblem and Lafayette as commander, took Paris under its protection.

Information of these events was given at midnight to the king

* Life of G. Morris, i. 313.

at Versailles by Rochefoucauld-Liancourt. "It is a revolt," exclaimed the king. "Sire," replied Liancourt, "*it is a revolution!*"

Jefferson, in his dispatches to government, spoke with admiration of the conduct of the people throughout the violent scenes which accompanied this popular convulsion. "There was a severity of honesty observed, of which no example has been known. Bags of money, offered on various occasions through fear or guilt, have been uniformly refused by the mobs. The churches are now occupied in singing '*De Profundis*' and '*Requiems*' for the repose of the souls of the brave and valiant citizens who have sealed, with their blood, the liberty of the nation. * * * We cannot suppose this paroxysm confined to Paris alone; the whole country must pass successively through it, and happy if they get through as soon and as well as Paris has done."*

Gouverneur Morris, writing on the same subject to Washington, on the 31st of July, observes: "You may consider the revolution as complete. The authority of the king and of the nobility is completely subdued; yet I tremble for the constitution. They have all the romantic spirit and all the romantic ideas of government, which, happily for America, we were cured of before it was too late."

The foregoing brief notices of affairs in revolutionary France, and of the feelings with which they were viewed by American statesmen resident there, will be found of service in illustrating subsequent events in the United States.

The first news of the revolution reached America in October,

* Letter to John Jay. Jefferson's Works, iii. 80.

and was hailed by the great mass of the people with enthusiasm. Washington, in reply to his old comrade in arms, the Count de Rochambeau, observes: "I am persuaded I express the sentiments of my fellow-citizens, when I offer an earnest prayer that it may terminate in the permanent honor and happiness of your government and people."

But, in a reply of the same date (13th Oct.) to Gouverneur Morris, he shows that his circumspect and cautious spirit was not to be hurried away by popular excitement. "The revolution which has been effected in France," writes he, "is of so wonderful a nature, that the mind can hardly realize the fact. If it ends as our last accounts to the 1st of August predict, that nation will be the most powerful and happy in Europe; but I fear, though it has gone triumphantly through the first paroxysm, it is not the last it has to encounter before matters are finally settled. In a word, the revolution is of too great a magnitude to be effected in so short a space, and with the loss of so little blood. The mortification of the king, the intrigues of the queen, and the discontent of the princes and noblesse, will foment divisions, if possible, in the National Assembly; and they will, unquestionably, avail themselves of every *faux pas* in the formation of the constitution, if they do not give a more open, active opposition. In addition to these, the licentiousness of the people on one hand, and sanguinary punishments on the other, will alarm the best disposed friends to the measure, and contribute not a little to the overthrow of their object. Great temperance, firmness, and foresight are necessary in the movements of that body. To forbear running from one extreme to another, is no easy matter: and should this be the case, rocks and shelves, not visible at present, may

wreck the vessel and give a higher-toned despotism than the one which existed before."*

Hamilton, too, regarded the recent events in France with a mixture of pleasure and apprehension. In a letter to Lafayette he writes: "As a friend to mankind and to liberty, I rejoice in the efforts which you are making to establish it, while I fear much for the final success of the attempts, for the fate of those who are engaged in it, and for the danger, in case of success, of innovations greater than will consist with the real felicity of your nation. * * * I dread disagreements among those who are now united, about the nature of your constitution; I dread the vehement character of your people, whom, I fear, you may find it more easy to bring on, than to keep within proper bounds after you have put them in motion. I dread the interested refractoriness of your nobles, who cannot all be gratified, and who may be unwilling to submit to the requisite sacrifices. And I dread the reveries of your philosophic politicians, who appear in the moment to have great influence, and who, being mere speculatists, may aim at more refinement than suits either with human nature or the composition of your nation."†

The opposite views and feelings of Hamilton and Jefferson, with regard to the French revolution, are the more interesting, as these eminent statesmen were soon to be brought face to face in the cabinet, the policy of which would be greatly influenced by French affairs; for it was at this time that Washington wrote to Jefferson, offering him the situation of Secretary of State, but forbearing to nominate a successor to his post at the Court of Versailles, until he should be informed of his determination.

* Writings of Washington, x. 39.
† Hamilton's Works, v. 440.

CHAPTER VI.

WASHINGTON'S JOURNEY THROUGH THE EASTERN STATES—JOHN HANCOCK—CLASHING BETWEEN THE CIVIL AND MUNICIPAL AUTHORITIES ON THE PRESIDENT'S ENTRY INTO BOSTON—A CONTEST OF ETIQUETTE—WASHINGTON'S ACCOUNT OF HIS ENTRY—HIS RECEPTION—A NEW PUNCTILIO—ADDRESS OF THE CINCINNATI SOCIETY—RETURN TO NEW YORK.

At the time of writing the letter to Jefferson, offering him the department of State, Washington was on the eve of a journey through the Eastern States, with a view, as he said, to observe the situation of the country, and with a hope of perfectly reëstablishing his health, which a series of indispositions had much impaired. Having made all his arrangements, and left the papers appertaining to the office of Foreign Affairs under the temporary superintendence of Mr. Jay, he set out from New York on the 15th of October, travelling in his carriage with four horses, and accompanied by his official secretary, Major Jackson, and his private secretary, Mr. Lear. Though averse from public parade, he could not but be deeply affected and gratified at every step by the manifestations of a people's love. Wherever he came, all labor was suspended; business neglected. The bells were rung, the guns were fired; there were civic processions and military

parades and triumphal arches, and all classes poured forth to testify, in every possible manner, their gratitude and affection for the man whom they hailed as the Father of his country; and well did his noble stature, his dignified demeanor, his matured years, and his benevolent aspect, suit that venerable appellation.

On the 22d, just after entering Massachusetts, he was met by an express from the Governor of the State (the Hon. John Hancock), inviting him to make his quarters at his house while he should remain in Boston, and announcing to him that he had issued orders for proper escorts to attend him, and that the troops with the gentlemen of the Council would receive him at Cambridge and wait on him to town.

Washington, in a courteous reply, declined the Governor's invitation to his residence, having resolved, he said, on leaving New York, to accept of no invitations of the kind while on his journey, through an unwillingness to give trouble to private families. He had accordingly instructed a friend to engage lodgings for him during his stay in Boston. He was highly sensible, he observed, of the honors intended him; but, could his wishes prevail, he would desire to visit the metropolis without any parade or extraordinary ceremony. It was never Washington's good fortune, on occasions of the kind, to have his modest inclinations consulted; in the present instance they were little in accord with the habits and notions of the Governor, who, accustomed to fill public stations and preside at public assemblies, which he did with the punctilio of the old school, was strictly observant of every thing appertaining to official rank and dignity. Governor Hancock was now about fifty-two years of age, tall and thin, of a commanding deportment and graceful manner, though stooping a little and much afflicted with the gout. He was really hospitable,

which his ample wealth enabled him to be, and was no doubt desirous of having Washington as a guest under his roof, but resolved, at all events, to give him a signal reception as the guest of the State over which he presided. Now it so happened that the "select men," or municipal authorities of Boston, had also made arrangements for receiving the President in their civic domain, and in so doing had proceeded without consulting the Governor; as might have been expected, some clashing of rival plans was the result.

In pursuance of the Governor's arrangement, the militia, with General Brooks at their head, and Mr. Samuel Adams, the Lieutenant Governor, at the head of the Executive Council, met Washington at Cambridge, and escorted him with great ceremony to town. Being arrived at the grand entrance, which is over what is called "The Neck," the Lieutenant Governor and the Executive Council were brought to a sudden halt by observing the municipal authorities drawn up in their carriages, in formal array, to pay civic honors to the city's guest. Here ensued a great question of etiquette. The Executive Council insisted on the right of the Governor, as chief of the State, to receive and welcome its guest, at the entrance of its capital. "He should have met him at the boundary of the State over which he presides," replied the others; "and there have welcomed him to the hospitalities of the commonwealth. When the President is about to enter the *town*, it is the delegated right of the *municipal authorities* thereof to receive and bid him welcome."

The contending parties remained drawn up resolutely in their carriages, while aides-de-camp and marshals were posting to and fro between them, carrying on a kind of diplomatic parley.

In the mean time the President, and Major Jackson, his sec-

retary, had mounted on horseback, and were waiting on the Neck to be conducted into the town. The day was unusually cold and murky. Washington became chilled and impatient, and when informed of the cause of the detention, "Is there no other avenue into the town?" demanded he of Major Jackson. He was, in fact, on the point of wheeling about, when word was brought that the controversy was over, and that he would be received by the municipal authorities.

We give his own account of the succeeding part of the ceremony. "At the entrance, I was welcomed by the select men in a body. Then following the Lieutenant Governor and Council in the order we came from Cambridge (preceded by the town corps, very handsomely dressed), we passed through the citizens, classed in their different professions, and under their own banners, till we came to the State House."

The streets, the doors, the windows, the housetops, were crowded with well-dressed people of both sexes. "He was on horseback," says an observer, "dressed in his old continental uniform, with his hat off. He did not bow to the spectators as he passed, but sat on his horse with a calm, dignified air. He dismounted at the old State House, now City Hall,* and came out on a temporary balcony at the west end; a long procession passed before him, whose salutations he occasionally returned. These and other ceremonials being over, the Lieutenant Governor and Council, accompanied by the Vice President, conducted Washington to his lodgings, where they took leave of him." And now he is doomed to the annoyance of a new question of etiquette. He had previously accepted the invitation of Governor Hancock to

* This was written some years ago.

an informal dinner, but had expected that that functionary would wait upon him as soon as he should arrive; instead of which he received a message from him, pleading that he was too much indisposed to do so. Washington distrusted the sincerity of the apology. He had been given to understand that the Governor wished to evade paying the first visit, conceiving that, as Governor of a State, and within the bounds of that State, the point of etiquette made it proper that he should receive the first visit, even from the President of the United States. Washington determined to resist this pretension; he therefore excused himself from the informal dinner, and dined at his lodgings, where the Vice President favored him with his company.

The next day the Governor, on consultation with his friends, was persuaded to waive the point of etiquette, and sent "his best respects to the President," informing him that, if at home and at leisure, he would do himself the honor to visit him in half an hour, intimating that he would have done it sooner had his health permitted, and that it was not without hazard to his health that he did it now.

The following was Washington's reply, the last sentence of which almost savors of irony:

"Sunday, 26th October, 1 o'clock.

"The President of the United States presents his best respects to the Governor, and has the honor to inform him that he shall be home till two o'clock.

"The President need not express the pleasure it will give him to see the Governor; but at the same time, he most earnestly begs that the Governor will not hazard his health on the occasion."

From Washington's diary we find that the Governor found strength to pay the litigated visit within the specified time—though, according to one authority, he went enveloped in red baize and was borne, in the arms of servants, into the house.*

It does not appear that any harm resulted from the hazard to which the Governor exposed himself. At all events, the hydra etiquette was silenced and every thing went on pleasantly and decorously throughout the remainder of Washington's sojourn in Boston.

Various addresses were made to him in the course of his visit, but none that reached his heart more directly than that of his old companions in arms, the Cincinnati Society of Massachusetts, who hailed him as "their glorious leader in war, their illustrious example in peace."

"Dear, indeed," said he, in reply, "is the occasion which restores an intercourse with my associates in prosperous and adverse fortune; and enhanced are the triumphs of peace participated with those whose virtue and valor so largely contributed to procure them. To that virtue and valor your country has confessed her obligations. Be mine the grateful task to add to the testimony of a connection which it was my pride to own in the field, and is now my happiness to acknowledge in the enjoyments of peace and freedom."

After remaining in Boston for a week, fêted in the most hospitable manner, he appointed eight o'clock, on Thursday the 29th, for his departure. The appointed time arrived, but not the escort; whereupon, punctual himself, and fearing, perhaps, to be

* Sullivan's Letters on Public Characters, p. 15.

detained by some new question of etiquette, he departed without them, and was overtaken by them on the road.

His journey eastward terminated at Portsmouth, whence he turned his face homeward by a middle route through the interior of the country to Hartford, and thence to New York, where he arrived between two and three o'clock on the 13th of November.

CHAPTER VII.

COL. JOHN TRUMBULL—MESSAGE TO WASHINGTON FROM LAFAYETTE—JEFFERSON'S EMBARKATION FOR AMERICA—WASHINGTON FORWARDS HIS COMMISSION AS SECRETARY OF STATE—HIS ACCEPTANCE.

Not long after Washington's return from his eastern tour, Colonel John Trumbull, his aide-de-camp in former days, now an historical painter of eminence, arrived from Europe, where he had been successfully prosecuting his art and preparing for his grand pictures, illustrative of our revolutionary history. At Mr. Jefferson's house in Paris, he had been enabled to sketch from the life the portraits of several of the French officers who had been present at the capture of Cornwallis, and were now among the popular agitators of France. He had renewed his military acquaintance with Lafayette; witnessed the outbreak of the revolution; the storming of the Bastille; and attended the Marquis on one occasion, when the latter succeeded in calming the riotous excesses of a mob, principally workmen, in the Faubourg St. Antoine.

Trumbull brought an especial message from Lafayette. The Marquis had been anxious that Washington should know the state of affairs in France, and the progress and prospects of the

momentous cause in which he was engaged, but, in the hurry of occupation, had not time to write with the necessary detail; finding, however, that Trumbull was soon to depart for the United States, he invited him to breakfast with him at an early hour and alone, for the express purpose of explaining matters to him frankly and fully, to be communicated by him to Washington, immediately on his arrival in America.

We give the Colonel's report of Lafayette's conversation, as he has recorded it in his autobiography.

"You have witnessed the surface of things," said the Marquis; "it is for me to explain the interior. The object which is aimed at by the Duke de Rochefoucauld, M. Condorcet, myself, and some others, who consider ourselves leaders, is to obtain from France a constitution nearly resembling that of England, which we regard as the most perfect model of government hitherto known. To accomplish this, it is necessary to diminish, very essentially, the power of the king; but our object is to retain the throne, in great majesty, as the first branch of the legislative power, but retrenching its executive power in one point, which, though very important in the British crown, we think is needless here. The peerage of France is already so numerous, that we would take from our king the right of creating new peers, except in cases where old families may become extinct. To all this, the king (who is one of the best of men, and sincerely desirous of the happiness of his people) most freely and cordially consents.

"We wish a House of Peers with powers of legislation similar to that of England, restricted in number to one hundred members, to be elected by the whole body from among themselves, in the same manner as the Scotch peers are in the British Parliament. * * * We wish, as the third branch of the legislative body,

a House of Representatives, chosen by the great body of the people from among themselves, by such a ratio as shall not make the House too numerous; and this branch of our project meets unanimous applause. * * * Unhappily, there is one powerful and wicked man, who, I fear, will destroy this beautiful fabric of human happiness—the Duke of Orleans. He does not, indeed, possess talent to carry into execution a great project, but he possesses immense wealth, and France abounds in marketable talents. Every city and town has young men eminent for abilities, particularly in the law—ardent in character, eloquent, ambitious of distinction, but poor. These are the instruments which the Duke may command by money, and they will do his bidding. His hatred of the royal family can be satiated only by their ruin; his ambition, probably, leads him to aspire to the throne.

"You saw the other day, in the mob, men who were called *les Marseillois, les patriots par excellence.* You saw them particularly active and audacious in stimulating the discontented artisans and laborers, who composed the great mass of the mob, to acts of violence and ferocity; these men are, in truth, desperadoes, assassins from the south of France, familiar with murder, robbery, and every atrocious crime, who have been brought up to Paris by the money of the Duke, for the very purpose in which you saw them employed, of mingling in all mobs, and exciting the passions of the people to frenzy.

"This is the first act of the drama. The second will be to influence the elections, to fill the approaching Assembly with ardent, inexperienced, desperate, ambitious young men, who, instead of proceeding to discuss calmly the details of the plan of which I have given you the general outline, and to carry it quietly into operation, will, under disguise of zeal for the people, and ab-

horrence of the aristocrats, drive every measure to extremity, for the purpose of throwing the affairs of the nation into utter confusion, when the master spirit may accomplish his ultimate purpose."*

Such was the report of affairs in France which Lafayette transmitted by Trumbull to Washington. It was not long after this conversation of the Colonel with the Marquis that, the sittings of the National Assembly being transferred from Versailles to Paris, the Breton club fixed itself on the site of the convent of Jacobins; threw open its doors to the public and soon, under the appellation of the JACOBIN CLUB, exercised the baleful influence in public affairs, which Lafayette apprehended.

Washington had listened with profound attention to the report rendered by Trumbull. In the course of a subsequent conversation the latter informed him that Mr. Jefferson had embarked for America, and, it was probable, had already landed at Norfolk in Virginia. Washington immediately forwarded to him his commission as Secretary of State, requesting to know his determination on the subject.

Jefferson, in reply, expressed himself flattered by the nomination, but dubious of his being equal to its extensive and various duties, while, on the other hand, he felt familiar with the duties of his present office. "But it is not for an individual to choose his path," said he. "You are to marshal us as may best be for the public good. * * * Signify to me, by another line, your ultimate wish, and I shall conform to it cordially. If it should be to remain in New York, my chief comfort will be to work under your eye; my only shelter the authority of your name and

* Trumbull's Autobiography, 151.

the wisdom of measures to be dictated by you and implicitly executed by me."*

Washington, in answer, informed him that he considered the successful administration of the general government an object of almost infinite consequence to the present and future happiness of the citizens of the United States; that he regarded the office of Secretary for the department of State very important, and that he knew of no person who, in his judgment, could better execute the duties of it than himself.†

Jefferson accordingly accepted the nomination, but observed that the matters which had called him home, would probably prevent his setting out for New York before the month of March.

* Jefferson's Works, vol. iii. p. 125. † Washington's Writings, x. 77.

CHAPTER VIII.

REASSEMBLING OF CONGRESS—FINANCIAL CONDITION OF THE COUNTRY—ITS DEBT AT HOME AND ABROAD—DEBTS OF THE STATES—HAMILTON'S REPORT—OPPOSITION TO IT—DR. STUART'S WARNING LETTER TO WASHINGTON—HIS REPLY—JEFFERSON'S ARRIVAL AT THE SEAT OF GOVERNMENT—NEW YORK AT THAT PERIOD—JEFFERSON APPREHENDS MONARCHICAL DESIGNS.

Congress reassembled on the 4th of January (1790), but a quorum of the two Houses was not present until the 8th, when the session was opened by Washington in form, with an address delivered before them in the Senate chamber.*

* As the degree of state with which the session was opened was subsequently a matter of comment, we extract from Washington's diary his own account of it, premising that the regulations were devised by General Knox and Colonel Humphreys.

"Friday 8th, according to appointment, at 11 o'clock, I set out for the City Hall in my coach, preceded by Colonel Humphreys and Major Jackson in uniform (on my two white horses), and followed by Messrs. Lear and Nelson in my chariot, and Mr. Lewis, on horseback, following them. In their rear was the Chief Justice of the United States and Secretaries of the Treasury and War Departments in their respective carriages, and in the order they are named. At the outer door of the Hall, I was met by the doorkeepers of the Senate and House and conducted to the door of the Senate chamber, and passing from thence to the chair through the Senate on the right and House of Representatives on the left, I took my seat. The gen-

Among the most important objects suggested in the address for the deliberation of Congress, were provisions for national defence; provisions for facilitating intercourse with foreign nations, and defraying the expenses of diplomatic agents; laws for the naturalization of foreigners; uniformity in the currency, weights, and measures of the United States; facilities for the advancement of commerce, agriculture, and manufactures; attention to the post-office and post-roads; measures for the promotion of science and literature, and for the support of public credit.

This last object was the one which Washington had more immediately at heart. The government was now organized, apparently, to the satisfaction of all parties; but its efficiency would essentially depend on the success of a measure which Washington had pledged himself to institute, and which was yet to be tried; namely, a system of finance adapted to revive the national credit, and place the public debt in a condition to be paid off. The credit of the country was at a low ebb. The confederacy, by its articles, had the power of contracting debts for a national object, but no control over the means of payment. Thirteen independent legislatures could grant or withhold the means. The government was then a government under governments—the States had more power than Congress. At the close of the war the debt amounted to forty-two millions of dollars;

tlemen who attended me followed and took their stands behind the senators; the whole rising as I entered. After being seated, at which time the members of both Houses also sat, I rose (as they also did), and made my speech, delivering one copy to the President of the Senate and another to the Speaker of the House of Representatives—after which, and being a few moments seated, I retired, bowing on each side to the assembly (who stood) as I passed, and descending to the lower hall attended as before, I returned with them to my house."

but so little had the country been able to fulfil its engagements, owing to the want of a sovereign legislature having the sole and exclusive power of laying duties upon imports, and thus providing adequate resources, that the debt had swollen, through arrears of interest, to upwards of fifty-four millions. Of this amount nearly eight millions were due to France, between three and four millions to private lenders in Holland, and about two hundred and fifty thousand in Spain; making, altogether, nearly twelve millions due abroad. The debt contracted at home amounted to upwards of forty-two millions, and was due, originally, to officers and soldiers of the revolutionary war, who had risked their lives for the cause; farmers who had furnished supplies for the public service, or whose property had been assumed for it; capitalists who, in critical periods of the war, had adventured their fortunes in support of their country's independence. The domestic debt, therefore, could not have had a more sacred and patriotic origin; but, in the long delay of national justice, the paper which represented these outstanding claims, had sunk to less than a sixth of its nominal value, and the larger portion of it had been parted with at that depreciated rate, either in the course of trade, or to speculative purchasers, who were willing to take the risk of eventual payment, however little their confidence seemed to be warranted, at the time, by the pecuniary condition and prospects of the country,

The debt, when thus transferred, lost its commanding appeal to patriotic sympathy; but remained as obligatory in the eye of justice. In public newspapers, however, and in private circles, the propriety of a discrimination between the assignees and the original holders of the public securities, was freely discussed. Beside the foreign and domestic debt of the federal government,

the States, individually, were involved in liabilities contracted for the common cause, to an aggregate amount of about twenty-five millions of dollars; of which, more than one-half was due from three of them; Massachusetts and South Carolina each owing more than five millions, and Virginia more than three and a half. The reputation and the well-being of the government were, therefore, at stake upon the issue of some plan to retrieve the national credit, and establish it upon a firm and secure foundation.

The Secretary of the Treasury (Mr. Hamilton), it will be remembered, had been directed by Congress to prepare such a plan during its recess. In the one thus prepared, he asserted, what none were disposed to question, the propriety of paying the foreign debt according to its terms. He asserted, also, the equal validity of the original claims of the American creditors of the government; whether those creditors were the original holders of its certificates or subsequent purchasers of them at a depreciated value. The idea of any distinction between them, which some were inclined to advance, he repudiated as alike unjust, impolitic, and impracticable. He urged, moreover, the assumption, by the general government, of the separate debts of the States, contracted for the common cause, and that a like provision should be made for their payment as for the payment of those of the Union. They were all contracted in the struggle for national independence, not for the independence of any particular part. No more money would be required for their discharge as federal, than as State debts. Money could be raised more readily by the federal government than by the States, and all clashing and jealousy between State and federal debtors would thus be prevented. A reason, also, which, no doubt, had great weight with him, though he did not bring it under consideration in his report, for fear,

probably, of offending the jealousy of State sovereignty, dormant, but not extinct, was, that it would tend to unite the States financially, as they were united politically, and strengthen the central government by rallying capitalists around it; subjecting them to its influence, and rendering them agents of its will. He recommended, therefore, that the entire mass of debt be funded; the Union made responsible for it, and taxes imposed for its liquidation. He suggested, moreover, the expediency, for the greater security of the debt and punctuality in the payment of interest, that the domestic creditors submit to an abatement of accruing interest.

The plan was reported to the House by Mr. Hamilton, the 14th of January, but did not undergo consideration until the 8th of February, when it was opposed with great earnestness, especially the point of assuming the State debts, as tending to consolidation, as giving an undue influence to the general government, and as being of doubtful constitutionality. This financial union of the States was reprobated, not only on the floor of Congress, but in different parts of the Union, as fraught with political evil. The Northern and Eastern States generally favored the plan, as did also South Carolina, but Virginia manifested a determined opposition. The measure, however, passed, in Committee of the Whole, on the 9th of March, by a vote of 31 to 26.

The funding of the State debts was supposed to benefit, materially, the Northern States, in which was the entire capital of the country; yet, South Carolina voted for the assumption. The fact is, opinions were honestly divided on the subject. The great majority were aiming to do their duty—to do what was right; but their disagreement was the result of real difficulties incident

to the intricate and complicated problem with which they had to deal.

A letter from Washington's monitory friend, Dr. Stuart of Virginia (dated March 15th), spoke with alarm of the jealous belief growing up in that quarter, that the Northern and Eastern States were combining to pursue their own exclusive interests. Many, he observed, who had heretofore been warm supporters of the government, were changing their sentiments, from a conviction of the impracticability of union with States whose interests were so dissimilar.

Washington had little sympathy with these sectional jealousies; and the noble language in which he rebukes them, cannot be too largely cited. "I am sorry," observes he, "such jealousies as you speak of, should be gaining ground and poisoning the minds of the southern people; but, admit the fact which is alleged as the cause of them, and give it full scope, does it amount to more than was known to every man of information before, at, and since the adoption of the Constitution? Was it not always believed that there are some points which peculiarly interest the Eastern States? And did any one who reads human nature, and more especially the character of the eastern people, conceive that they would not pursue them steadily, by a combination of their force? Are there not other points which equally concern the Southern States? If these States are less tenacious of their interest, or if, while the Eastern move in a solid phalanx to effect their views, the Southern are always divided, which of the two is most to be blamed? That there is a diversity of interests in the Union, none has denied. That this is the case, also, in every State, is equally certain; and that it even extends to the counties of individual States, can be as readily proved. Instance the southern

and northern parts of Virginia, the upper and lower parts of South Carolina. Have not the interests of these always been at variance? Witness the county of Fairfax. Have not the interests of the people of that county varied, or the inhabitants been taught to believe so? These are well-known truths, and yet it did not follow that separation was to result from the disagreement.

"To constitute a dispute, there must be two parties. To understand it well, both parties, and all the circumstances must be fully heard; and, to accommodate differences, temper and mutual forbearance are requisite. Common danger brought the States into confederacy, and on their union our safety and importance depend. A spirit of accommodation was the basis of the present Constitution. Can it be expected, then, that the southern or eastern parts of the empire will succeed in all their measures? Certainly not. But I will readily grant that more points will be carried by the latter than the former, and for the reason which has been mentioned; namely, that in all great national questions, they move in unison, whilst the others are divided. But I ask again, which is most blameworthy, those who see and will steadily pursue their interest, or those who cannot see, or seeing, will not act wisely? And I will ask another question, of the highest magnitude in my mind, to wit, if the Eastern and Northern States are dangerous in *union*, will they be less so in *separation*? If self-interest is their governing principle, will it forsake them, or be restrained by such an event? I hardly think it would. Then, independently of other considerations, what would Virginia, and such other States as might be inclined to join her, gain by a separation? Would they not, most unquestionably, be the weaker party?"

At this juncture (March 21st), when Virginian discontents were daily gaining strength, Mr. Jefferson arrived in New York to undertake the duties of the Department of State. We have shown his strong antipathies, while in Paris, to every thing of a monarchical or aristocratical tendency; he had just been in Virginia, where the forms and ceremonials adopted at the seat of our government, were subjects of cavil and sneer; where it was reported that Washington affected a monarchical style in his official intercourse, that he held court-like levees, and Mrs. Washington "queenly drawing-rooms," at which none but the aristocracy were admitted, that the manners of both were haughty, and their personal habits reserved and exclusive.

The impressions thus made on Jefferson's mind, received a deeper stamp on his arrival in New York, from conversations with his friend Madison, in the course of which the latter observed, that "the satellites and sycophants which surrounded Washington, had wound up the ceremonials of the government to a pitch of stateliness which nothing but his personal character could have supported, and which no character after him could ever maintain."

Thus prepossessed and premonished, Jefferson looked round him with an apprehensive eye, and appears to have seen something to startle him at every turn. We give, from his private correspondence, his own account of his impressions. "Being fresh from the French revolution, while in its first and pure stage, and, consequently, somewhat whetted up in my own republican principles, I found a state of things in the general society of the place, which I could not have supposed possible. The revolution I had left, and that we had just gone through in the recent change of our own government, being the common topics

of conversation, I was astonished to find the general prevalence of monarchical sentiments, insomuch, that in maintaining those of republicanism, I had always the whole company on my hands, never scarcely finding among them a single co-advocate in that argument, unless some old member of Congress happened to be present. The furthest that any one would go in support of the republican features of our new government, would be to say, 'the present constitution is well as a beginning, and may be allowed a fair trial, but it is, in fact, only a stepping stone to something better.' "

This picture, given under excitement and with preconceived notions, is probably over-charged; but, allowing it to be true, we can hardly wonder at it, viewed in connection with the place and times. New York, during the session of Congress, was the gathering place of politicians of every party. The revolution of France had made the forms of government once more the universal topics of conversation, and revived the conflict of opinions on the subject. As yet, the history of the world had furnished no favorable examples of popular government; speculative writers in England had contended that no government more popular than their own, was consistent with either internal tranquillity, the supremacy of the laws, or a great extent of empire. Our republic was ten times larger than any that had yet existed. Jay, one of the calmest thinkers of the Union, expressed himself dubiously on the subject.

"Whether any people could long govern themselves in an equal, uniform, and orderly manner, was a question of vital importance to the cause of liberty, but a question which, like others, whose solution depends on facts, could only be determined by ex-

perience—now, as yet, there had been very few opportunities of making the experiment."

Alexander Hamilton, though pledged and sincerely disposed to support the republican form, with regard to our country, preferred, *theoretically*, a monarchical form; and, being frank of speech, and, as Gouverneur Morris writes, "prone to mount his hobby," may have spoken openly in favor of that form as suitable to France; and as his admirers took their creed from him, opinions of the kind may have been uttered pretty freely at dinner-tables. These, however, which so much surprised and shocked Mr. Jefferson, were probably merely speculative opinions, broached in unguarded hours, with no sinister design, by men who had no thought of paving the way for a monarchy. They made, however, a deep impression on his apprehensive mind, which sank deeper and deeper until it became a fixed opinion with him, that there was the desire and aim of a large party, of which Hamilton was the leader, to give a regal form to the government.

CHAPTER IX.

THE ASSUMPTION OF THE STATE DEBTS DISCUSSED—WASHINGTON IN FAVOR—A MAJORITY OF TWO AGAINST IT—HAMILTON'S APPEAL TO JEFFERSON ON THE SUBJECT—THE LATTER ARRANGES FOR A COMPROMISE—HIS ACCOUNT OF IT—ADJUSTMENT ABOUT THE SEAT OF GOVERNMENT—ASSUMPTION CARRIED—TREATY OF PEACE WITH THE CREEKS—CAVILLINGS ABOUT PRESIDENTIAL ETIQUETTE—WASHINGTON'S DEFENCE—ADJOURNMENT OF CONGRESS—FANCIED HARMONY OF THE CABINET—JEFFERSON SUSPECTS HAMILTON OF FINESSE IN PROCURING HIS AGENCY IN THE ASSUMPTION.

The question of the assumption of the State debts was resumed in Congress on the 29th of March, on a motion to commit, which was carried by a majority of two; the five members from North Carolina (now a State of the Union) who were strongly opposed to assumption, having taken their seats and reversed the position of parties on the question. An angry and intemperate discussion was revived, much to the chagrin of Washington, who was concerned for the dignity of Congress; and who considered the assumption of the State debts, under proper restrictions and scrutiny into accounts, to be just and reasonable.* On the 12th of April, when the question to commit was taken, there was a majority of two against the assumption.

* See letter to David Stuart, Writings, x. p. 98.

On the 26th the House was discharged, for the present, from proceeding on so much of the report as related to the assumption. Jefferson, who had arrived in New York in the midst of what he terms "this bitter and angry contest," had taken no concern in it; being, as he says, "a stranger to the ground, a stranger to the actors in it, so long absent as to have lost all familiarity with the subject, and to be unaware of its object." We give his own account of an earnest effort made by Hamilton, who, he says, was "in despair," to resuscitate, through his influence, his almost hopeless project. "As I was going to the President's one day, I met him [Hamilton] in the street. He walked me backwards and forwards before the President's door for half an hour. He painted pathetically the temper into which the legislature had been wrought; the disgust of those who were called the creditor States; the danger of the *secession* of their members, and the separation of the States. He observed that the members of the administration ought to act in concert; that though this question was not of my department, yet a common duty should make it a common concern; that the President was the centre on which all administrative questions ultimately rested, and that all of us should rally around him, and support, with joint efforts, measures approved by him; and that the question having been lost by a small majority only, it was probable that an appeal from me to the judgment and discretion of some of my friends, might effect a change in the vote, and the machine of government, now suspended, might be again set into motion. I told him that I was really a stranger to the whole subject; that not having yet informed myself of the system of finance adopted, I knew not how far this was a necessary sequence; that undoubtedly, if its rejection endangered a dissolution of our Union at this incipient stage,

I should deem that the most unfortunate of all consequences, to avert which all partial and temporary evils should be yielded. I proposed to him, however, to dine with me the next day, and I would invite another friend or two, bring them into conference together, and I thought it impossible that reasonable men, consulting together coolly, could fail, by some mutual sacrifices of opinion, to form a compromise which was to save the Union. The discussion took place. I could take no part in it but an exhortatory one, because I was a stranger to the circumstances which should govern it. But it was finally agreed, that whatever importance had been attached to the rejection of this proposition, the preservation of the Union and of concord among the States, was more important, and that, therefore, it would be better that the vote of rejection should be rescinded, to effect which some members should change their votes. But it was observed that this pill would be peculiarly bitter to the Southern States, and that some concomitant measure should be adopted to sweeten it a little to them. There had before been projects to fix the seat of government either at Philadelphia or at Georgetown on the Potomac; and it was thought that, by giving it to Philadelphia for ten years, and to Georgetown permanently afterwards, this might, as an anodyne, calm in some degree the ferment which might be excited by the other measure alone. So two of the Potomac members (White and Lee, but White with a revulsion of stomach almost convulsive) agreed to change their votes, and Hamilton undertook to carry the other point. In doing this, the influence he had established over the eastern members, with the agency of Robert Morris with those of the Middle States, effected his side of the engagement." *

* Jefferson's Works, ix. 93, The Anas.

The decision of Congress was ultimately in favor of assumption, though the form in which it finally passed differed somewhat from the proposition of Hamilton. A specific sum was assumed ($21,500,000), and this was distributed among the States in specific portions. Thus modified, it passed the Senate, July 22d, by the close vote of fourteen to twelve; and the House, July 24th, by thirty-four to twenty-eight, "after having," says Washington, "been agitated with a warmth and intemperance, with prolixity and threats which, it is to be feared, have lessened the dignity of Congress and decreased the respect once entertained for it."

The question about the permanent seat of government, which, from the variety of contending interests, had been equally a subject of violent contest, was now compromised. It was agreed that Congress should continue for ten years to hold its sessions at Philadelphia; during which time the public buildings should be erected at some place on the Potomac, to which the government should remove at the expiration of the above term. A territory, ten miles square, selected for the purpose on the confines of Maryland and Virginia, was ceded by those States to the United States, and subsequently designated as the District of Columbia.

One of the last acts of the Executive during this session was the conclusion of a treaty of peace and friendship with the Creek nation of Indians, represented at New York by Mr. M'Gillivray, and thirty of the chiefs and head men. By this treaty (signed August 7th), an extensive territory, claimed by Georgia, was relinquished greatly to the discontent of that State; being considered by it an unjustifiable abandonment of its rights and interests. Jefferson, however, lauded the treaty as important,

"drawing a line," said he, "between the Creeks and Georgia, and enabling the government to do, as it will do, justice against either party offending."

In familiar conversations with the President, Jefferson remonstrated frequently and earnestly against the forms and ceremonies prevailing at the seat of government. Washington, in reply, gave the explanation which we have stated in a preceding chapter; that they had been adopted at the advice of others, and that for himself he was indifferent to all forms. He soon, however, became painfully aware of the exaggerated notions on the subject prevalent in Virginia. A letter from his friend, Dr. Stuart, informed him that Patrick Henry had scouted the idea of being elected to the Senate; he was too old, he said, to fall into the awkward imitations which were now become fashionable. "From this expression," adds Mr. Stuart, "I suspect the old patriot has heard some extraordinary representations of the etiquette established at your levees." Another person whom Dr. Stuart designates as Col. B——, had affirmed "that there was more pomp used there than at St. James's where he had been, and that Washington's bows were more distant and stiff."

These misapprehensions and exaggerations, prevalent in his native State, touched Washington to the quick, and called forth a more sensitive reply than, on such subjects, he was accustomed to make. "That I have not been able," writes he, "to make bows to the taste of poor Colonel B—— (who, by the by, I believe, never saw one of them), is to be regretted, especially, too, as, upon those occasions, they were indiscriminately bestowed, and the best I was master of. Would it not have been better to throw the veil of charity over them, ascribing their stiffness to the effects of age, or to the unskilfulness of my teacher, rather

than to pride and the dignity of office, which, God knows, has no charms for me? For I can truly say, I had rather be at Mount Vernon with a friend or two about me, than to be attended at the seat of government by the officers of State and the representatives of every power in Europe."

He then goes on to give a sketch of his levees, and the little ceremony that prevailed there. As to the visits made on those occasions to the presidential mansion, they were optional, and made without invitation. "Between the hours of three and four, every Tuesday, I am prepared to receive them. Gentlemen, often in great numbers, come and go, chat with each other, and act as they please; a porter shows them into the room, and they retire from it when they please, and without ceremony. At their first entrance they salute me, and I them, and as many as I can talk to, I do. What pomp there is in all this, I am unable to discover. Perhaps it consists in not sitting. To this, two reasons are opposed: first, it is unusual; secondly, which is a more substantial one, because I have no room large enough to contain a third of the chairs which would be sufficient to admit it.

"Similar to the above, but of a more sociable kind, are the visits every Friday afternoon to Mrs. Washington, where I always am. These public meetings, and a dinner once a week, to as many as my table will hold, with the references to and from the different departments of State, and other communications with all parts of the Union, are as much, if not more, than I am able to undergo; for I have already had, within less than a year, two severe attacks—the last worse than the first. A third, more than probably, will put me to sleep with my fathers."

Congress adjourned on the 12th of August. Jefferson, commenting on the discord that had prevailed for a time among the

members, observes, that in the latter part of the session, they had reacquired the harmony which had always distinguished their proceedings before the introduction of the two disagreeable subjects of the Assumption and the Residence: "these," said he, "really threatened, at one time, a separation of the legislature *sine die*."

"It is not foreseen," adds he, sanguinely, "that any thing so generative of dissension can arise again; and, therefore, the friends of government hope that, that difficulty surmounted in the States, every thing will work well." *

Washington, too, however grieved and disappointed he may have been by the dissensions which had prevailed in Congress, consoled himself by the fancied harmony of his cabinet. Singularly free himself from all jealousy of the talents and popularity of others, and solely actuated by zeal for the public good, he had sought the ablest men to assist him in his arduous task, and supposed them influenced by the same unselfish spirit. In a letter to Lafayette, he writes, "Many of your old acquaintances and friends are concerned with me in the administration of this government. By having Mr. Jefferson at the head of the department of State, Mr. Jay of the judiciary, Hamilton of the treasury, and Knox of war, I feel myself supported by able coadjutors who harmonize extremely well together."

Yet, at this very moment, a lurking spirit of rivalry between Jefferson and Hamilton was already existing and daily gaining strength. Jefferson, who, as we have intimated, already considered Hamilton a monarchist in his principles, regarded all his financial schemes with suspicion, as intended to strengthen the

* Jefferson's Works, iii. 184.

influence of the treasury and make its chief the master of every vote in the legislature, "which might give to the government the direction suited to his political views."

Under these impressions, Jefferson looked back with an angry and resentful eye, to the manner in which Hamilton had procured his aid in effecting the measure of assumption. He now regarded it as a finesse by which he had been entrapped, and stigmatized the measure itself as a "fiscal manœuvre, to which he had most ignorantly and innocently been made to hold the candle."*

* Jefferson's Works, ix. 92.

CHAPTER X.

LAFAYETTE AT THE HEAD OF THE REVOLUTION IN FRANCE—HIS LETTER TO WASHINGTON—GOUVERNEUR MORRIS'S OPINION OF HIS POSITION—WASHINGTON'S DUBIOUS AND ANXIOUS VIEWS—PRESENTED BY LAFAYETTE WITH THE KEY OF THE BASTILLE—VISITS RHODE ISLAND AND MOUNT VERNON.

During these early stages of his administration the attention of Washington was often called off from affairs at home to affairs in France; and to the conspicuous and perilous part which his friend and disciple Lafayette, was playing in the great revolutionary drama.

"Your friend, the Marquis de Lafayette," writes the Marquis de la Luzerne, "finds himself at the head of the revolution; and, indeed, it is a very fortunate circumstance for the State that he is, but very little so for himself. Never has any man been placed in a more critical situation. A good citizen, a faithful subject, he is embarrassed by a thousand difficulties in making many people sensible of what is proper, who very often feel it not, and who sometimes do not understand what it is."

Lafayette, too, amid the perplexities of conducting a revolution, looked back to the time when, in his early campaigns in America, he had shared Washington's councils, bivouacked with

him on the field of battle, and been benefited by his guardian wisdom in every emergency.

"How often, my well-beloved general," writes he (January, 1790), "have I regretted your sage councils and friendly support. We have advanced in the career of the revolution without the vessel of State being wrecked against the rocks of aristocracy or faction. In the midst of efforts, always renewing, of the partisans of the past and of the ambitious, we advance towards a tolerable conclusion. At present, that which existed has been destroyed; a new political edifice is forming; without being perfect, it is sufficient to assure liberty. Thus prepared, the nation will be in a state to elect, in two years, a convention which can correct the faults of the constitution. * * * The result will, I hope, be happy for my country and for humanity. One perceives the germs of liberty in other parts of Europe. I will encourage their development by all the means in my power."

Gouverneur Morris, who is no enthusiast of the revolution, regards its progress with a dubious eye. Lafayette, in the previous month of November, had asked his opinion of his situation. "I give it to him," writes Morris, "*sans menagement*. I tell him that the time approaches when all good men must cling to the throne. That the present king is very valuable on account of his moderation; and if he should possess too great authority, might be persuaded to grant a proper constitution. That the thing called a constitution, which the Assembly have framed, is good for nothing. That, as to himself, his personal situation is very delicate. That he nominally, but not really, commands his troops. That I really cannot understand how he is to establish discipline among them, but, unless he can accomplish that object, he must be ruined sooner or later."

On the 22d of January, 1790, Morris writes to Washington, "Our friend, Lafayette, burns with desire to be at the head of an army in Flanders, and drive the Stadtholder into a ditch. He acts now a splendid, but dangerous part. Unluckily, he has given in to measures, as to the constitution, which he does not heartily approve, and heartily approves many things which experience will demonstrate to be injurious."*

Far removed as Washington was from the theatre of political action, and but little acquainted with many of the minute circumstances which might influence important decisions, he was cautious in hazarding opinions in his replies to his French correspondents. Indeed, the whole revolutionary movement appeared to him so extraordinary in its commencement, so wonderful in its progress, and so stupendous in its possible consequences, that he declared himself almost lost in the contemplation of it. "Of one thing you may rest perfectly assured," writes he to the Marquis de la Luzerne, "that nobody is more anxious for the happy issue of that business than I am; as no one can wish more sincerely for the prosperity of the French nation than I do. Nor is it without the most sensible pleasure that I learn that our friend, the Marquis de Lafayette, has, in acting the arduous part which has fallen to his share, conducted himself with so much wisdom and apparently with such general satisfaction."

A letter subsequently received from Lafayette gives him two months' later tidings, extending to the middle of March. "Our revolution pursues its march as happily as is possible, with a nation which, receiving at once all its liberties, is yet subject to confound them with licentiousness. The Assembly has more of hatred

* Sparks' Life of Morris, ii. 86.

against the ancient system, than of experience to organize the new constitutional government; the ministers regret their ancient power, and do not dare to make use of that which they have; in short, as all which existed has been destroyed, and replaced by institutions very incomplete, there is ample matter for critiques and calumnies. Add to this, we are attacked by two sorts of enemies; the aristocrats who aim at a counter-revolution, and the factious who would annihilate all authority, perhaps even attempt the life of the members of the reigning branch. These two parties foment all the troubles.

"After having avowed all this, my dear general, I will tell you, with the same frankness, that we have made an admirable and almost incredible destruction of all the abuses, of all the prejudices; that all which was not useful to the people; all which did not come from them, has been retrenched; that, in considering the situation, topographical, moral, and political of France, we have effected more changes in ten months, than the most presumptuous patriots could have hoped, and that the reports about our anarchy, our internal troubles, are greatly exaggerated."

In concluding his letter, he writes: "Permit me, my dear general, to offer you a picture representing the Bastille, such as it was some days after I had given orders for its demolition. I make you homage, also, of the principal key of this fortress of despotism. It is a tribute which I owe you, as son to my adopted father, as aide-de-camp to my general, as missionary of liberty to its patriarch." *

Thomas Paine was to have been the bearer of the key, but he forwarded it to Washington from London. "I feel myself

* Mem. de Lafayette, T. ii. 446.

happy," writes he, "in being the person through whom the Marquis has conveyed this early trophy of the spoils of despotism, and the first ripe fruits of American principles, transplanted into Europe, to his great master and patron. That the principles of America opened the Bastille is not to be doubted, and, therefore, the key comes to the right place."

Washington received the key with reverence, as "a token of the victory gained by liberty over despotism;" and it is still preserved at Mount Vernon, as a precious historical relic.

His affectionate solicitude for the well-being of Lafayette, was somewhat relieved by the contents of his letter; but, while his regard for the French nation made him rejoice in the progress of the political reform which he considered essential to its welfare, he felt a generous solicitude for the personal safety of the youthful monarch, who had befriended America in its time of need.

"Happy am I, my good friend," writes he to the Marquis, "that, amidst all the tremendous tempests which have assailed your political ship, you have had address and fortitude enough to steer her hitherto safely through the quicksands and rocks which threatened instant destruction on every side; and that your young king, in all things, seems so well disposed to conform to the wishes of the nation. In such an important, such a hazardous voyage, when every thing dear and sacred is embarked, you know full well, my best wishes have never left you for a moment. Yet I will avow, that the accounts we received through the English papers, which were sometimes our only channels of information, caused our fears of failure almost to exceed our expectations of success."

Those fears were not chimerical; for, at the very time he penned this letter, the Jacobin club of Paris had already sent

forth ramifications throughout France; corresponding clubs were springing up by hundreds in the provinces, and every thing was hurrying forward to a violent catastrophe.

Three days after the despatch of the last-cited letter, and two days after the adjournment of Congress, Washington, accompanied by Mr. Jefferson, departed by water on a visit to Rhode Island, which State had recently acceded to the Union. He was cordially welcomed by the inhabitants, and returned to New York, after an absence of ten days, whence he again departed for his beloved Mount Vernon, there to cast off public cares as much as possible, and enjoy the pleasures of the country during the residue of the recess of Congress.

CHAPTER XI.

FRONTIER DIFFICULTIES WITH THE INDIANS—GENERAL HARMER'S EXPEDITION AGAINST THEM—AMBUSCADE OF COL. HARDIN'S DETACHMENT—ESCAPE OF CAPT. ARMSTRONG—A SECOND DETACHMENT OF COL. HARDIN COMPELLED TO RETREAT—WASHINGTON'S LONG ANXIETY AS TO THE RESULT OF THE ENTERPRISE—FINAL TIDINGS.

FREQUENT depredations had of late been made on our frontier settlements by what Washington termed "certain banditti of Indians" from the north-west side of the Ohio. Some of our people had been massacred and others carried into deplorable captivity.

Strict justice and equity had always formed the basis of Washington's dealings with the Indian tribes, and he had endeavored to convince them that such was the general policy of our government; but his efforts were often thwarted by the conduct of our own people; the encroachments of land speculators and the lawless conduct of our frontiersmen; and jealousies thus excited were fomented by the intrigues of foreign agents.

The Indians of the Wabash and the Miami rivers, who were the present aggressors, were numerous, warlike, and not deficient in discipline. They were well armed also, obtaining weapons

and ammunition from the posts which the British still retained within the territories of the United States, contrary to the treaty of peace.

Washington had deprecated a war with these savages, whom he considered acting under delusion; but finding all pacific overtures unavailing, and rather productive of more daring atrocities, he felt compelled to resort to it, alike by motives of policy, humanity, and justice. An act had been provided for emergencies, by which the President was empowered to call out the militia for the protection of the frontier; this act he put in force in the interval of Congress; and under it an expedition was set on foot, which began its march on the 30th of September from Fort Washington (which stood on the site of the present city of Cincinnati). Brigadier General Harmer, a veteran of the revolution, led the expedition, having under him three hundred and twenty regulars, with militia detachments from Pennsylvania and Virginia (or Kentucky), making in all fourteen hundred and fifty-three men. After a march of seventeen days, they approached the principal village of the Miamis. The Indians did not await an attack, but set fire to the village and fled to the woods. The destruction of the place, with that of large quantities of provisions, was completed.

An Indian trail being discovered, Colonel Hardin, a continental officer who commanded the Kentucky militia, was detached to follow it, at the head of one hundred and fifty of his men, and about thirty regulars, under Captain Armstrong and Ensign Hartshorn. They followed the trail for about six miles, and were crossing a plain covered by thickets, when suddenly there were volleys of rifles on each side, from unseen marksmen, accompanied by the horrid war-whoop. The trail had, in fact,

decoyed them into an ambush of seven hundred savages, under the famous warrior Little Turtle. The militia fled, without firing a musket. The savages now turned upon the little handful of regulars, who stood their ground, and made a brave resistance with the bayonet until all were slain, excepting Captain Armstrong, Ensign Hartshorn, and five privates. The ensign was saved by falling behind a log, which screened him from his pursuers. Armstrong plunged into a swamp, where he sank up to his neck, and remained for several hours of the night within two hundred yards of the field of action, a spectator of the war-dance of the savages over the slain. The two officers who escaped thus narrowly, found their way back to the camp about six miles distant.*

The army, notwithstanding, effected the main purpose of the expedition in laying waste the Indian villages and destroying their winter's stock of provisions, after which it commenced its march back to Fort Washington. On the 21st of October, when it was halted about ten miles to the west of Chillicothe, an opportunity was given Colonel Hardin to wipe out the late disgrace of his arms. He was detached with a larger body of militia than before, and sixty regulars, under Major Willys, to seek and bring the savages to action. The accounts of these Indian wars are very confused. It appears, however, that he had another encounter with Little Turtle and his braves. It was a bloody battle, fought well on both sides. The militia behaved bravely, and lost many men and officers, as did the regulars; Major Willys fell at the commencement of the action. Colonel Hardin was at length compelled to retreat, leaving the dead and wounded in

* Butler's Hist. of Kentucky, 192.

the hands of the enemy. After he had rejoined the main force, the whole expedition made its way back to Fort Washington, on the banks of the Ohio.

During all this time, Washington had been rusticating at Mount Vernon, in utter ignorance of the events of this expedition. Week after week elapsed, without any tidings of its issue, progress, or even commencement. On the 2d of November he wrote to the Secretary of War (General Knox), expressing his surprise at this lack of information, and his anxiety as to the result of the enterprise, and requesting him to forward any official or other accounts that he might have relating to it.

"This matter," observed he, "favorable or otherwise in the issue, will require to be laid before Congress, that the motives which induced the expedition may appear." Nearly another month elapsed; the time for the reassembling of Congress was at hand, yet Washington was still without the desired information. It was not until the last of November, that he received a letter from Governor George Clinton, of New York, communicating particulars of the affair related to him by Brant, the celebrated Indian chief.

"If the information of Captain Brant be true," wrote Washington, in reply, "the issue of the expedition against the Indians will indeed prove unfortunate and disgraceful to the troops who suffered themselves to be ambuscaded."

CHAPTER XII.

CONGRESS REASSEMBLES AT PHILADELPHIA—RESIDENCE OF WASHINGTON AT THE NEW SEAT OF GOVERNMENT—THE STATE CARRIAGE—HAMILTON'S FINANCIAL ARRANGEMENTS—IMPOST AND EXCISE BILL—PASSAGE OF A BILL FOR A NATIONAL BANK—JEFFERSON'S OBJECTIONS—FORMATION OF TWO POLITICAL PARTIES UNDER HAMILTON AND JEFFERSON—THEIR DIFFERENT VIEWS—DISSATISFACTION OF CONGRESS AT THE REPORT OF HARMER'S EXPEDITION—WASHINGTON'S ADDRESS TO THE SENECA CHIEFS—HIS DESIRE TO CIVILIZE THE SAVAGES—KENTUCKY AND VERMONT ADMITTED INTO THE UNION—FIRST CONGRESS EXPIRES—A NEW EXPEDITION PROJECTED AGAINST THE HOSTILE TRIBES UNDER GENERAL ST. CLAIR—WASHINGTON'S SOLEMN WARNING ON TAKING LEAVE OF HIM.

Congress reassembled, according to adjournment, on the first Monday in December, at Philadelphia, which was now, for a time, the seat of government. A house belonging to Mr. Robert Morris, the financier, had been hired by Washington for his residence, and at his request, had undergone additions and alterations "in a plain and neat, and not by any means in an extravagant style."

His secretary, Mr. Lear, had made every preparation for his arrival and accommodation, and, among other things, had spoken of the rich and elegant style in which the state carriage was fitted up. "I had rather have heard," replied Washington,

"that my repaired coach was plain and elegant than rich and elegant."

Congress, at its opening, was chiefly occupied in financial arrangements, intended to establish the public credit and provide for the expenses of government. According to the statement of the Secretary of the Treasury, an additional annual revenue of eight hundred and twenty-six thousand dollars would be required, principally to meet the additional charges arising from the assumption of the State debts. He proposed to raise it by an increase of the impost on foreign distilled spirits, and a tax by way of excise on spirits distilled at home. An Impost and Excise bill was accordingly introduced into Congress, and met with violent opposition. An attempt was made to strike out the excise, but failed, and the whole bill was finally carried through the House.

Mr. Hamilton, in his former Treasury report, had recommended the establishment of a National Bank; he now, in a special report, urged the policy of the measure. A bill, introduced in conformity with his views, was passed in the Senate, but vehemently opposed in the House; partly on considerations of policy; but chiefly on the ground of constitutionality. On one side it was denied that the constitution had given to Congress the power of incorporation; on the other side it was insisted that such power was incident to the power vested in Congress for raising money.

The question was argued at length, and with great ardor, and after passing the House of Representatives by a majority of nineteen votes, came before the executive for his approval. Washington was fully alive to the magnitude of the question and the interest felt in it by the opposing parties. The cabinet was divided

on it. Jefferson and Randolph denied its constitutionality; Hamilton and Knox maintained it. Washington required of each minister the reasons of his opinion in writing; and, after maturely weighing them, gave his sanction to the act, and the bill was carried into effect.

The objection of Jefferson to a bank was not merely on constitutional grounds. In his subsequent writings he avows himself opposed to banks, as introducing a paper instead of a cash system—raising up a moneyed aristocracy, and abandoning the public to the discretion of avarice and swindlers. Paper money might have some advantages, but its abuses were inevitable, and by breaking up the measure of value, it made a lottery of all private property. These objections he maintained to his dying day; but he had others, which may have been more cogent with him in the present instance. He considered the bank as a powerful engine intended by Hamilton to complete the machinery by which the whole action of the legislature was to be placed under the direction of the Treasury, and shaped to further a monarchical system of government. Washington, he affirmed, was not aware of the drift or effect of Hamilton's schemes. "Unversed in financial projects and calculations and budgets, his approbation of them was bottomed on his confidence in the man."

Washington, however, was not prone to be swayed in his judgments by blind partiality. When he distrusted his own knowledge in regard to any important measure, he asked the written opinions of those of his council who he thought were better informed, and examined and weighed them, and put them to the test of his almost unfailing sagacity. This was the way he had acted as a general, in his military councils, and he found the same plan efficacious in his cabinet. His confidence in Ham-

ilton's talents, information, and integrity had led him to seek his counsels; but his approbation of those counsels was bottomed on a careful investigation of them. It was the same in regard to the counsels of Jefferson; they were received with great deference, but always deliberately and scrupulously weighed. The opposite policy of these rival statesmen brought them into incessant collision. "Hamilton and myself," writes Jefferson, "were daily pitted in the cabinet like two cocks." The warm-hearted Knox always sided with his old companion in arms; whose talents he revered. He is often noticed with a disparaging sneer by Jefferson, in consequence. Randolph commonly adhered to the latter. Washington's calm and massive intellect overruled any occasional discord. His policy with regard to his constitutional advisers has been happily estimated by a modern statesman: "He sought no unit cabinet, according to the set phrase of succeeding times. He asked no suppression of sentiment, no concealment of opinion; he exhibited no mean jealousy of high talent in others. He gathered around him the greatest public men of that day, and some of them to be ranked with the greatest of any day. He did not leave Jefferson and Hamilton without the cabinet, to shake, perhaps, the whole fabric of government in their fierce wars and rivalries, but he took them within, where he himself might arbitrate their disputes as they arose, and turn to the best account for the country their suggestions as they were made."*

In the mean time two political parties were forming throughout the Union, under the adverse standards of these statesmen. Both had the good of the country at heart, but differed as to the

* Speech of R. M. T. Hunter, of Virginia.

policy by which it was to be secured. The Federalists, who looked up to Hamilton as their model, were in favor of strengthening the general government so as to give it weight and dignity abroad and efficiency at home; to guard it against the encroachments of the individual States and a general tendency to anarchy. The other party, known as republicans or democrats, and taking Mr. Jefferson's view of affairs, saw in all the measures advocated by the Federalists, an intention to convert the Federal into a great central or consolidated government, preparatory to a change from a republic to a monarchy.

The particulars of General Harmer's expedition against the Indians, when reported to Congress, gave great dissatisfaction. The conduct of the troops, in suffering themselves to be surprised, was for some time stigmatized as disgraceful. Further troubles in that quarter were apprehended, for the Miamis were said to be less disheartened by the ravage of their villages than exultant at the successful ambuscades of Little Turtle.

Three Seneca chiefs, Cornplanter, Half Town, and Great Tree, being at the seat of government on business of their own nation, offered to visit these belligerent tribes, and persuade them to bury the hatchet. Washington, in a set speech, encouraged them in the undertaking. "By this humane measure," said he, "you will render these mistaken people a great service, and probably prevent their being swept off of the face of the earth. The United States require only that these people should demean themselves peaceably. But they may be assured that the United States are able, and will most certainly punish them severely for all their robberies and murders."

Washington had always been earnest in his desire to civilize the savages, but had little faith in the expedient which had been

pursued, of sending their young men to our colleges; the true means, he thought, was to introduce the arts and habits of husbandry among them. In concluding his speech to the Seneca chiefs, he observed, "When you return to your country, tell your nation that it is my desire to promote their prosperity by teaching them the use of domestic animals, and the manner that the white people plough and raise so much corn; and if, upon consideration, it would be agreeable to the nation at large to learn those arts, I will find some means of teaching them at some places within their country as shall be agreed upon."

In the course of the present session, Congress received and granted the applications of Kentucky and Vermont for admission into the Union, the former after August, 1792; the latter immediately.

On the 3d of March the term of this first Congress expired. Washington, after reciting the various important measures that had been effected, testified to the great harmony and cordiality which had prevailed. In some few instances, he admitted, particularly in passing the law for higher duties on spirituous liquors, and more especially on the subject of the bank, "the line between the southern and eastern interests had appeared more strongly marked than could be wished," the former against and the latter in favor of those measures, "but the debates," adds he, "were conducted with temper and candor."

As the Indians on the north-west side of the Ohio still continued their hostilities, one of the last measures of Congress had been an act to augment the military establishments, and to place in the hands of the executive more ample means for the protection of the frontiers. A new expedition against the belligerent tribes had, in consequence, been projected. General St. Clair,

actually governor of the territory west of the Ohio, was appointed commander-in-chief of the forces to be employed.

Washington had been deeply chagrined by the mortifying disasters of General Harmer's expedition to the Wabash, resulting from Indian ambushes. In taking leave of his old military comrade, St. Clair, he wished him success and honor, but gave him a solemn warning. "You have your instructions from the Secretary of War. I had a strict eye to them, and will add but one word—Beware of a surprise! You know how the Indians fight. I repeat it—*Beware of a surprise!*" With these warning words sounding in his ear, St. Clair departed.*

* Rush's Washington in Domestic Life, p. 67.

CHAPTER XIII.

WASHINGTON'S TOUR THROUGH THE SOUTHERN STATES—LETTER TO LAFAYETTE —GLOOMY PICTURE OF FRENCH AFFAIRS BY GOUVERNEUR MORRIS—HIS ALLUSION TO LAFAYETTE—LAFAYETTE DEPICTS THE TROUBLES OF A PATRIOT LEADER—WASHINGTON'S REPLY—JEFFERSON'S ARDENT VIEWS OF THE FRENCH REVOLUTION—DISTRUST OF JOHN ADAMS—HIS CONTRIBUTIONS TO FENNO'S GAZETTE—REPRINT OF PAINE'S RIGHTS OF MAN—FLIGHT AND RECAPTURE OF LOUIS XVI.—JEFFERSON COMMUNICATES THE NEWS TO WASHINGTON—HIS SATISFACTION WHEN THE KING ACCEPTS THE CONSTITUTION.

In the month of March Washington set out on a tour through the Southern States; travelling with one set of horses and making occasional halts. The route projected, and of which he had marked off the halting places, was by Fredericksburg, Richmond, Wilmington (N. C.), and Charleston to Savannah; thence to Augusta, Columbia, and the interior towns of North Carolina and Virginia, comprising a journey of eighteen hundred and eighty-seven miles; all which he accomplished without any interruption from sickness, bad weather, or any untoward accident. "Indeed," writes he, "so highly were we favored that we arrived at each place where I proposed to make any halt, on the very day I fixed upon before we set out. The same horses performed the whole tour; and, although much reduced in flesh, kept up their full spirits to the last day."

He returned to Philadelphia on the 6th of July, much pleased with his tour. It had enabled him, he said, to see, with his own eyes, the situation of the country, and to learn more accurately the disposition of the people, than he could have done from any verbal information. He had looked around him, in fact, with a paternal eye, been cheered as usual by continual demonstrations of a nation's love, and his heart had warmed with the reflection how much of this national happiness had been won by his own patriotic exertions.

"Every day's experience of the government of the United States," writes he to David Humphreys, "seems to confirm its establishment, and to render it more popular. A ready acquiescence in the laws made under it shows, in a strong light, the confidence which the people have in their representatives, and in the upright views of those who administer the government. At the time of passing a law imposing a duty on home-made spirits, it was vehemently affirmed by many that such a law could never be executed in the Southern States, particularly in Virginia and South Carolina. * * * But from the best information I could get on my journey respecting its operations on the minds of the people—and I took some pains to obtain information on this point—there remains not a doubt but it will be carried into effect, not only without opposition, but with very general approbation, in those very parts where it was foretold that it never would be submitted to by any one."

"Our public credit," adds he, "stands on that ground, which, three years ago, it would have been madness to have foretold. The astonishing rapidity with which the newly instituted bank was filled, gives an unexampled proof of the resources of our countrymen and their confidence in public measures. On the first day

of opening the subscription the whole number of shares (twenty thousand) were taken up in one hour, and application made for upwards of four thousand shares more than were granted by the institution, besides many others that were coming in from various quarters."*

To his comrade in arms, Lafayette, he also writes exultingly of the flourishing state of the country and the attachment of all classes to the government:

"While in Europe, wars or commotions seem to agitate almost every nation, peace and tranquillity prevail among us, except in some parts of our Western frontiers, where the Indians have been troublesome, to reclaim or chastise whom, proper measures are now pursuing. This contrast between the situation of the people of the United States and those of Europe, is too striking to be passed over, even by the most superficial observer, and may, I believe, be considered as one great cause of leading the people here to reflect more attentively on their own prosperous state, and to examine, more minutely, and consequently approve more fully, of the government under which they live, than they otherwise would have done. But we do not wish to be the only people who may taste the sweets of an equal and good government. We look with an anxious eye to the time when happiness and tranquillity shall prevail in your country, and when all Europe shall be freed from commotion, tumults, and alarms."

Letters from Gouverneur Morris had given him a gloomy picture of French affairs. "This unhappy country," writes he, "bewildered in pursuit of metaphysical whimsies, presents to our moral view a mighty ruin. Like the remnants of ancient mag-

* Writings, x. 171.

nificence, we admire the architecture of the temple, while we detest the false god to whom it was dedicated. Daws and ravens, and the birds of night, now build their nests in its niches. The sovereign, humbled to the level of a beggar's pity, without resources, without authority, without a friend. The Assembly at once a master and a slave, new in power, wild in theory, raw in practice. It engrosses all functions, though incapable of exercising any, and has taken from this fierce, ferocious people, every restraint of religion and of respect. * * * Lafayette has hitherto acted a splendid part. The king obeys but detests him. He obeys because he fears. Whoever possesses the royal person may do whatever he pleases with the royal character and authority. Hence, it happens that the ministers are of Lafayette's appointment."*

Lafayette's own letters depict the troubles of a patriot leader in the stormy time of a revolution: a leader warm, generous, honest, impulsive, but not far-seeing. "I continue to be forever tossed about on an ocean of factions and commotions of every kind; for it is my fate to be attacked with equal animosity; on one side, by all that is aristocratic, servile, parliamentary, in a word, by all the adversaries of my free and levelling doctrine; on the other, by the Orleans and anti-monarchical factions, and all the workers of disorder and pillage. If it is doubtful whether I may escape personally from so many enemies, the success of our grand and good revolution is, at least, thank heaven, assured in France, and soon it will propagate itself in the rest of the world, if we succeed in establishing public order in this country. Unfortunately, the people have much better learnt how to overturn

* Sparks' Life of G. Morris, ii. 117–119.

despotism, than to comprehend the duty of submission to law. It is to you, my dear General, the patriarch and generalissimo of the promoters of universal liberty, that I ought always to render a faithful account of the conduct of your aide-de-camp in the service of this grand cause."

And in a subsequent letter: "I would that I could give you the assurance that our troubles were terminated and our constitution established. Nevertheless, though our horizon is still very dark, we commence to foresee the moment when a new legislative body will replace this Assembly; and, unless there come an intervention of foreign powers, I hope that four months from this your friend will have resumed the life of a peaceful and simple citizen.

"The rage of party, even between the different shades of patriots, has gone as far as possible without the effusion of blood; but if animosities are far from subsiding, present circumstances are somewhat less menacing of a collision between the different supporters of the popular cause. As to myself, I am always the butt for attacks of all parties, because they see in my person an insurmountable obstacle to their evil designs. In the mean time, what appears to me a species of phenomenon, my popularity hitherto has not been shaken."

And in another letter, he speaks of the multiplying dangers which menaced the progress of reform in France: "The refugees hovering about the frontiers, intrigues in most of the despotic and aristocratic cabinets, our regular army divided into Tory officers and undisciplined soldiers, licentiousness among the people not easily repressed, the capital, that gives the tone to the empire, tossed about by anti-revolutionary or factious parties, the

Assembly fatigued by hard labor, and very unmanageable. However, according to the popular motto, *ça ira*, it will do."

When Lafayette thus wrote, faction was predominant at Paris. Liberty and equality began to be the watch-words, and the Jacobin club had set up a journal which was spreading the spirit of revolt and preparing the fate of royalty.

"I assure you," writes Washington, "I have often contemplated, with great anxiety, the danger to which you are personally exposed by your peculiar and delicate situation in the tumult of the time, and your letters are far from quieting that friendly concern. But to one who engages in hazardous enterprises for the good of his country, and who is guided by pure and upright views, as I am sure is the case with you, life is but a secondary consideration.

"The tumultuous populace of large cities are ever to be dreaded. Their indiscriminate violence prostrates, for the time, all public authority, and its consequences are sometimes extensive and terrible. In Paris, we may suppose these tumults are peculiarly disastrous at this time, when the public mind is in a ferment, and when, as is always the case on such occasions, there are not wanting wicked and designing men whose element is confusion, and who will not hesitate in destroying the public tranquillity to gain a favorite point."

Sympathy with the popular cause prevailed with a part of Washington's cabinet. Jefferson was ardent in his wishes that the revolution might be established. He felt, he said, that the permanence of our own revolution leaned, in some degree, on that of France; that a failure there would be a powerful argument to prove there must be a failure here, and that the success of the French revolution was necessary to stay up our own and "pre-

vent its falling back to that kind of half-way house, the English constitution."

Outside of the cabinet, the Vice President, John Adams, regarded the French revolution with strong distrust. His official position, however, was too negative in its nature to afford him an opportunity of exerting influence on public affairs. He considered the post of Vice President beneath his talents. "My country," writes he, "has, in its wisdom, contrived for me the most insignificant office that ever the invention of man contrived or his imagination conceived."* Impatient of a situation in which, as he said, he could do neither good nor evil, he resorted, for mental relief, to the press, and for upwards of a year had exercised his fertile and ever ready pen, in furnishing Fenno's Gazette of the United States, with a series of papers entitled, "Discourses on Davila," being an analysis of Davila's History of the Civil Wars of France in the 16th century. The aim of Mr. Adams, in this series, was to point out to his countrymen the dangers to be apprehended from powerful factions in ill-balanced forms of government; but his aim was mistaken, and he was charged with advocating monarchy, and laboring to prepare the way for an hereditary presidency. To counteract these "political heresies," a reprint of Paine's Rights of Man, written in reply to Burke's pamphlet on the French revolution, appeared under the auspices of Mr. Jefferson.

While the public mind was thus agitated with conflicting opinions, news arrived in August, of the flight of Louis XVI. from Paris, and his recapture at Varennes. All Jefferson's hatred of royalty was aroused by this breach of royal faith

* Life, i. 460.

"Such are the fruits of that form of government," said he, scornfully, "which heaps importance on idiots, and which the tories of the present day are trying to preach into our favor. It would be unfortunate were it in the power of any one man to defeat the issue of so beautiful a revolution. I hope and trust that it is not, and that, for the good of suffering humanity all over the earth, that revolution will be established and spread all over the world."

He was the first to communicate the intelligence to Washington, who was holding one of his levees, and observes, "I never saw him so much dejected by any event in my life." Washington, himself, declares that he remained for some time in painful suspense, as to what would be the consequences of this event. Ultimately, when news arrived that the king had accepted the constitution from the hands of the National Assembly, he hailed the event as promising happy consequences to France, and to mankind in general; and what added to his joy, was the noble and disinterested part which his friend, Lafayette, had acted in this great drama. "The prayers and wishes of the human race," writes he to the Marquis, "have attended the exertions of your nation; and when your affairs are settled under an energetic and equal government, the hearts of all good men will be satisfied."

CHAPTER XIV.

RURAL HOURS AT MOUNT VERNON—ASSEMBLING OF SECOND CONGRESS—WASHINGTON'S OPENING SPEECH—TWO EXPEDITIONS ORGANIZED AGAINST THE INDIANS, UNDER SCOTT AND WILKINSON—THEIR FEEBLE RESULT—THIRD EXPEDITION UNDER ST. CLAIR—HIS DISASTROUS CONTEST AND DISMAL RETREAT—HOW WASHINGTON RECEIVED THE INTELLIGENCE.

A FEW weeks of autumn were passed by Washington at Mount Vernon, with his family in rural enjoyment, and in instructing a new agent, Mr. Robert Lewis, in the management of his estate; his nephew, Major George A. Washington, who ordinarily attended to his landed concerns, being absent among the mountains in quest of health.

The second Congress assembled at Philadelphia on the 24th of October, and on the 25th Washington delivered his opening speech. After remarking upon the prosperous situation of the country, and the success which had attended its financial measures, he adverted to the offensive operations against the Indians, which government had been compelled to adopt for the protection of the Western frontier. Some of these operations, he observed, had been successful, others were still depending. A brief statement will be sufficient for the successful operations alluded to.

To reconcile some of the people of the West, to the appointment of General St. Clair as commander-in-chief in that quarter, a local board of war had been formed for the Western country, empowered to act in conjunction with the commanding officer of the United States, in calling out the militia; sending out expeditions against the Indians, and apportioning scouts through the exposed parts of the district of Kentucky.

Under this arrangement two expeditions had been organized in Kentucky against the villages on the Wabash. The first, in May, was led by General Charles Scott, having General Wilkinson as second in command. The second, a volunteer enterprise, in August, was led by Wilkinson alone. Very little good was effected, or glory gained by either of these expeditions. Indian villages and wigwams were burned, and fields laid waste; some few warriors were killed and prisoners taken, and an immense expense incurred.

Of the events of a third enterprise, led by General St. Clair himself, no tidings had been received at the time of Washington's opening speech; but we will anticipate the official despatches, and proceed to show how it fared with that veteran soldier, and how far he profited by the impressive warning which he had received from the President at parting.

The troops for his expedition assembled early in September, in the vicinity of Fort Washington (now Cincinnati). There were about two thousand regulars, and one thousand militia. The regulars included a corps of artillery and several squadrons of horse. An arduous task was before them. Roads were to be opened through a wilderness; bridges constructed for the conveyance of artillery and stores, and forts to be built so as to keep up a line of communication between the Wabash and the Ohio,

the base of operations. The troops commenced their march directly North, on the 6th or 7th of September, cutting their way through the woods, and slowly constructing the line of forts. The little army, on the 24th of October, according to the diary of an officer, was respectable in numbers—"upon paper"—but, adds he, "the absence of the first Regiment, and desertions from the militia, had very much reduced us. With the residue there was too generally wanting the essential stamina of soldiers. Picked up and recruited from the off-scourings of large towns and cities, enervated by idleness, debauchery, and every species of vice, it was impossible they could have been made competent to the arduous duties of Indian warfare. An extraordinary aversion to service was also conspicuous amongst them, and demonstrated by repeated desertions; in many instances, to the very foe we were to combat. The late period at which they had been brought into the field, left no leisure nor opportunity to discipline them. They were, moreover, badly clothed, badly paid, and badly fed. * * * The military stores and arms were sent on in infamous order. Notwithstanding pointed orders against firing, and a penalty of one hundred lashes, game was so plenty and presented such a strong temptation, that the militia and the levies were constantly offending, to the great injury of the service and the destruction of all order in the army." *

After placing garrisons in the forts, the general continued his march. It was a forced one with him, for he was so afflicted with the gout that he could not walk, and had to be helped on and off of his horse; but his only chance to keep his little army

* Diary of Col. Winthrop Sargent, Adjutant General of the U. S. army during the campaign of 1791.

together was to move on. A number of the Virginia troops had already, on the 27th of October, insisted on their discharges; there was danger that the whole battalion would follow their example, and the time of the other battalions was nearly up. The plan of the general was to push so far into the enemy's country, that such detachments as might be entitled to their discharges, would be afraid to return.

The army had proceeded six days after leaving Fort Jefferson, and were drawing near a part of the country where they were likely to meet with Indians, when, on the 30th of October, sixty of the militia deserted in a body; intending to supply themselves by plundering the convoys of provisions which were coming forward in the rear. The 1st United States regiment, under Major Hamtranck, was detached to march back beyond Fort Jefferson, apprehend these deserters, if possible, and, at all events, prevent the provisions that might be on the way, from being rifled. The force thus detached, consisted of three hundred of the best disciplined men in the service, with experienced officers.

Thus reduced to 1,400 effective rank and file, the army continued its march to a point about twenty-nine miles from Fort Jefferson, and ninety-seven from Fort Washington, and fifteen miles south of the Miami villages, where it encamped, November 3d, on a rising ground with a stream forty feet wide in front, running westerly. This stream was mistaken by General St. Clair for the St. Mary, which empties itself into the Miami of the lakes; but it was, in fact, a tributary of the Wabash.

A number of new and old Indian camps showed that this had been a place of general resort; and in the bends of the stream were tracks of a party of fifteen, horse and foot; a scouting party

most probably, which must have quitted the ground just before the arrival of the army.

The troops were encamped in two lines, the right wing composed of Butler, Clarke, and Patterson's battalions, commanded by Major General Butler, forming the first line; Patterson on the right, and four pieces of artillery on the right of Butler. The left wing, consisting of Beddinger and Gaither's battalions, and the second United States regiment, commanded by Colonel Darke, formed the second line; with an interval of about seventy yards, which was all that the ground allowed. The length of the lines was nearly four hundred yards; the rear somewhat more, and the front somewhat less. A troop of horse, commanded by Captain Truman, and a company of riflemen under Captain Faulkner, were upon the right flank, and Snowden's troop of horse on the left.

The ground descended gradually in front of the encampment to the stream, which, at this time, was fordable, and meandered in its course; in some places, one hundred yards distant from the camp, in others not more than twenty-five. The immediate spot of the encampment was very defensible against regular troops; but it was surrounded by close woods, dense thickets, and the trunks of fallen trees, with here and there a ravine, and a small swamp—all the best kind of cover for stealthy Indian warfare.

The militia were encamped beyond the stream about a quarter of a mile in the advance, on a high flat; a much more favorable position than that occupied by the main body; and capacious enough to have accommodated the whole, and admitted any extent of lines.

It was the intention of St. Clair to throw up a slight work on

the following day, and to move on to the attack of the Indian villages as soon as he should be rejoined by Major Hamtranck and the first United States regiment. The plan of this work he concerted in the evening with Major Ferguson of the artillery, a cool, indefatigable, determined man. In the mean time, Colonel Oldham, the commanding officer of the militia, was directed to send out two detachments that evening, to explore the country and gain information concerning the enemy. The militia, however, showed signs of insubordination. They complained of being too much fatigued for the purpose; in short, the service was not, and probably could not be enforced. Sentinels posted around the camp, about fifty paces distant from each other, formed the principal security.

About half an hour before sunrise on the next morning (Nov. 4th), and just after the troops had been dismissed on parade, a horrible sound burst forth from the woods around the militia camp, resembling, says an officer, the jangling of an infinitude of horse-bells. It was the direful Indian yell, followed by the sharp reports of the deadly rifle. The militia returned a feeble fire and then took to flight, dashing helter-skelter into the other camp. The first line of the continental troops, which was hastily forming, was thrown into disorder. The Indians were close upon the heels of the flying militia, and would have entered the camp with them, but the sight of troops drawn up with fixed bayonets to receive them, checked their ardor, and they threw themselves behind logs and bushes at the distance of seventy yards; and immediately commenced an attack upon the first line, which soon was extended to the second. The great weight of the attack was upon the centre of each line where the artillery was placed. The artillery, if not well served, was bravely fought; a quantity of

canister and some round shot were thrown in the direction whence the Indians fired; but, concealed as they were, and only seen occasionally as they sprang from one covert to another, it was impossible to direct the pieces to advantage. The artillerists themselves were exposed to a murderous fire, and every officer, and more than two-thirds of the men, were killed and wounded. Twice the Indians pushed into the camp, delivering their fire and then rushing on with the tomahawk, but each time they were driven back. General Butler had been shot from his horse, and was sitting down to have his wound dressed, when a daring savage, darting into the camp, tomahawked and scalped him. He failed to carry off his trophy, being instantly slain.

The veteran St. Clair, who, unable to mount his horse, was borne about on a litter, preserved his coolness in the midst of the peril and disaster, giving his orders with judgment and self-possession. Seeing to what disadvantage his troops fought with a concealed enemy, he ordered Colonel Darke, with his regiment of regulars, to rouse the Indians from their covert with the bayonet, and turn their left flank. This was executed with great spirit: the enemy were driven three or four hundred yards; but, for want of cavalry or riflemen, the pursuit slackened, and the troops were forced to give back in turn. The savages had now got into the camp by the left flank; again several charges were made, but in vain. Great carnage was suffered from the enemy concealed in the woods; every shot seemed to take effect; all the officers of the second regiment were picked off, excepting three. The contest had now endured for more than two hours and a half. The spirits of the troops flagged under the loss of the officers; half the army was killed, and the situation of the remainder was desperate. There appeared to be no alternative but a retreat.

At half-past nine, General St. Clair ordered Colonel Darke, with the second regiment, to make another charge, as if to turn the right wing of the enemy, but, in fact, to regain the road from which the army was cut off. This object was effected. "Having collected in one body the greatest part of the troops," writes one of the officers, "and such of the wounded as could possibly hobble along with us, we pushed out from the left of the rear line, sacrificing our artillery and baggage." Some of the wounded officers were brought off on horses, but several of the disabled men had to be left on the ground. The poor fellows charged their pieces before they were left: and the firing of musketry heard by the troops after they quitted the camp, told that their unfortunate comrades were selling their lives dear.

It was a disorderly flight. The troops threw away arms, ammunition, and accoutrements; even the officers, in some instances, divested themselves of their fusees. The general was mounted on a pack horse which could not be pricked out of a walk. Fortunately, the enemy did not pursue above a mile or two, returning, most probably, to plunder the camp.

By seven in the evening, the fugitives reached Fort Jefferson, a distance of twenty-nine miles. Here they met Major Hamtranck with the first regiment; but, as this force was far from sufficient to make up for the losses of the morning, the retreat was continued to Fort Washington, where the army arrived on the 8th at noon, shattered and broken-spirited. Many poor fellows fell behind in the retreat, and fancying the savages were upon them, left the road, and some of them were wandering several days, until nearly starved.

In this disastrous battle the whole loss of regular troops and levies amounted to five hundred and fifty killed, and two hundred

wounded. Out of ninety-five commissioned officers who were on the field, thirty-one were slain and twenty-four wounded. Of the three hundred and nineteen militia, Colonel Oldham and three other officers were killed and five wounded; and of non-commissioned officers and privates, thirty-eight were killed and twenty-nine wounded. Fourteen artificers and ten pack horsemen were also killed, and thirteen wounded. So that, according to Colonel Sargent's estimate, the whole loss amounted to six hundred and seventy-seven killed, including thirty women, and two hundred and seventy-one wounded.

Poor St. Clair's defeat has been paralleled with that of Braddock. No doubt, when he realized the terrible havoc that had been made, he thought sadly of Washington's parting words, "Beware of a surprise!"

We have a graphic account of the manner in which the intelligence of the disaster was received by Washington at Philadelphia. Towards the close of a winter's day in December, an officer in uniform dismounted in front of the President's house, and, giving the bridle to his servant, knocked at the door. He was informed by the porter that the President was at dinner and had company. The officer was not to be denied; he was on public business, he brought despatches for the President. A servant was sent into the dining-room to communicate the matter to Mr. Lear. The latter left the table and went into the hall, where the officer repeated what he had said to the porter. Mr. Lear, as secretary of the President, offered to take charge of the despatches and deliver them at the proper time. The officer replied that he was just arrived from the Western army; his orders were to deliver the despatches promptly to the President in person: but that he would wait his directions. Mr. Lear returned,

and, in a whisper, communicated to the President what had passed. Washington rose from the table and went into the hall, whence he returned in a short time and resumed his seat, apologizing for his absence, but without alluding to the cause of it. One of the company, however, overheard him, as he took his seat, mutter to himself, with an ejaculation of extreme impatience, "I knew it would be so!"

Mrs. Washington held her drawing-room that evening. The gentlemen repaired thither from the table. Washington appeared there with his usual serenity; speaking courteously to every lady, as was his custom. By ten o'clock all the company had gone; Mrs. Washington retired soon after, and Washington and his secretary alone remained.

The general walked slowly backward and forward for some minutes in silence. As yet there had been no change in his manner. Taking a seat on a sofa by the fire he told Mr. Lear to sit down; the latter had scarce time to notice that he was extremely agitated, when he broke out suddenly: "It's all over!—St. Clair's defeated!—routed: the officers nearly all killed, the men by wholesale; the rout complete; too shocking to think of, and a surprise into the bargain!" All this was uttered with great vehemence. Then pausing and rising from the sofa, he walked up and down the room in silence, violently agitated, but saying nothing. When near the door he stopped short; stood still for a few moments, when there was another terrible explosion of wrath.

"Yes," exclaimed he, "HERE, on this very spot, I took leave of him; I wished him success and honor. 'You have your instructions from the Secretary of War,' said I, 'I had a strict eye to them, and will add but one word, BEWARE OF A SURPRISE!

You know how the Indians fight us. I repeat it, BEWARE OF A SURPRISE.' He went off with that, my last warning, thrown into his ears. And yet!! To suffer that army to be cut to pieces, hacked, butchered, tomahawked, by a surprise—the very thing I guarded him against—O God! O God!" exclaimed he, throwing up his hands, and while his very frame shook with emotion, "he's worse than a murderer! How can he answer it to his country! The blood of the slain is upon him—the curse of widows and orphans—the curse of heaven!"

Mr. Lear remained speechless; awed into breathless silence by the appalling tones in which this torrent of invective was poured forth. The paroxysm passed by. Washington again sat down on the sofa—he was silent—apparently uncomfortable, as if conscious of the ungovernable burst of passion which had overcome him. "This must not go beyond this room," said he at length, in a subdued and altered tone—there was another and a longer pause; then, in a tone quite low: "General St. Clair shall have justice," said he. "I looked hastily through the despatches; saw the whole disaster, but not all the particulars. I will receive him without displeasure; I will hear him without prejudice; he shall have full justice." *

Washington had recovered his equanimity. "The storm," we are told, "was over, and no sign of it was afterwards seen in his conduct or heard in his conversation." How well he kept his word, in regard to General St. Clair, will hereafter be shown.

* Rush's Washington in Domestic Life.

CHAPTER XV.

THE APPORTIONMENT BILL—WASHINGTON'S VETO—HIS CONCERN AT THE GROWING ASPERITIES OF CONGRESS—INTENDED RETIREMENT—JEFFERSON'S DETERMINATION TO RETIRE AT THE SAME TIME—REMONSTRANCE OF WASHINGTON—HIS REQUEST TO MADISON TO PREPARE VALEDICTORY—WAYNE APPOINTED TO SUCCEED ST. CLAIR—CONGRESS ADJOURNS—WASHINGTON AT MOUNT VERNON—SUGGESTS TOPICS FOR HIS FAREWELL ADDRESS—MADISON'S DRAFT—JEFFERSON URGES HIS CONTINUANCE.

In the course of the present session of Congress a bill was introduced for apportioning representatives among the people of the several States, according to the first enumeration.

The constitution had provided that the number of representatives should not exceed one for every thirty thousand persons, and the House of Representatives passed a bill allotting to each State one member for this amount of population. This ratio would leave a fraction, greater or less, in each State. Its operation was unequal, as in some States a large surplus would be unrepresented, and hence, in one branch of the legislature, the relative power of the State be affected. That, too, was the popular branch, which those who feared a strong executive, desired to provide with the counterpoise of as full a representation as possible.

To obviate this difficulty the Senate adopted a new principle of apportionment. They assumed the total population of the United States, and not the population of each State, as the basis on which the whole number of representatives should be ascertained. This aggregate they divided by thirty thousand: the quotient gave one hundred and twenty as the number of representatives; and this number they apportioned upon the several States according to their population; allotting to each one member for every thirty thousand, and distributing the residuary members (to make up the one hundred and twenty) among the States having the largest fractions.

After an earnest debate, the House concurred, and the bill came before the President for his decision. The sole question was as to its constitutionality; that being admitted, it was unexceptionable. Washington took the opinion of his cabinet. Jefferson and Randolph considered the act at variance with the constitution. Knox was undecided. Hamilton thought the clause of the constitution relating to the subject somewhat vague, and was in favor of the construction given to it by the legislature.

After weighing the arguments on both sides, and maturely deliberating, the President made up his mind that the act was unconstitutional. It was the obvious intent of the constitution to apply the ratio of representation according to the separate numbers of each State, and not to the aggregate of the population of the United States. Now this bill allotted to eight of the States more than one representative for thirty thousand inhabitants. He accordingly returned the bill with his objections, being the first exercise of the veto power. A new bill was substituted, and passed into a law; giving a representative for every thirty-three thousand to each State.

Great heat and asperity were manifested in the discussions of Congress throughout the present session. Washington had observed with pain the political divisions which were growing up in the country; and was deeply concerned at finding that they were pervading the halls of legislation. The press, too, was contributing its powerful aid to keep up and increase the irritation. Two rival papers existed at the seat of government; one was Fenno's Gazette of the United States, in which John Adams had published his "Discourses on Davila;" the other was the National Gazette, edited by Philip Freneau. Freneau had been editor of the New York Daily Advertiser, but had come to Philadelphia in the autumn of 1791 to occupy the post of translating clerk in Mr. Jefferson's office, and had almost immediately (Oct. 31) published the first number of his Gazette. Notwithstanding his situation in the office of the Secretary of State, Freneau became and continued to be throughout the session, a virulent assailant of most of the measures of government; excepting such as originated with Mr. Jefferson, or were approved by him.

Heart-weary by the political strifes and disagreements which were disturbing the country and marring the harmony of his cabinet, the charge of government was becoming intolerably irksome to Washington; and he longed to be released from it, and to be once more master of himself, free to indulge those rural and agricultural tastes which were to give verdure and freshness to his future existence. He had some time before this expressed a determination to retire from public life at the end of his presidential term. But one more year of that term remained to be endured; he was congratulating himself with the thought, when Mr. Jefferson intimated that it was his intention to retire from office at the same time with himself.

Washington was exceedingly discomposed by this determination. Jefferson, in his Anas, assures us that the President remonstrated with him against it, "in an affectionate tone." For his own part, he observed, many motives compelled him to retire. It was only after much pressing that he had consented to take a part in the new government and get it under way. Were he to continue in it longer, it might give room to say that, having tasted the sweets of office, he could not do without them.

He observed, moreover, to Jefferson, that he really felt himself growing old; that his bodily health was less firm, and his memory, always bad, was becoming worse. The other faculties of his mind, perhaps, might be evincing to others a decay of which he himself might be insensible. This apprehension, he said, particularly oppressed him.

His activity, too, had declined; business was consequently more irksome, and the longing for tranquillity and retirement had become an irresistible passion. For these reasons he felt himself obliged, he said, to retire; yet he should consider it unfortunate if, in so doing, he should bring on the retirement of the great officers of government, which might produce a shock on the public mind of a dangerous consequence.

Jefferson, in reply, stated the reluctance with which he himself had entered upon public employment, and the resolution he had formed on accepting his station in the cabinet, to make the resignation of the President the epoch of his own retirement from labors of which he was heartily tired. He did not believe, however, that any of his brethren in the administration had any idea of retiring; on the contrary, he had perceived, at a late meeting of the trustees of the sinking fund, that the Secretary of the

Treasury had developed the plan he intended to pursue, and that it embraced years in its view.

Washington rejoined, that he considered the Treasury department a limited one, going only to the single object of revenue, while that of the Secretary of State, embracing nearly all the objects of administration, was much more important, and the retirement of the officer, therefore, would be more noticed; that though the government had set out with a pretty general goodwill, yet that symptoms of dissatisfaction had lately shown themselves, far beyond what he could have expected; and to what height these might arise, in case of too great a change in the administration, could not be foreseen.

Jefferson availed himself of this opportunity to have a thrust at his political rival. "I told him," (the President,) relates he, "that in my opinion there was only a single source of these discontents. Though they had, indeed, appeared to spread themselves over the war department also, yet I considered that as an overflowing only from their real channel, which would never have taken place if they had not first been generated in another department, to wit, that of the Treasury. That a system had there been contrived for deluging the States with paper money instead of gold and silver, for withdrawing our citizens from the pursuits of commerce, manufactures, buildings, and other branches of useful industry, to occupy themselves and their capitals in a species of gambling, destructive of morality, and which had introduced its poison into the government itself." *

Mr. Jefferson went on, in the same strain, to comment at large upon the measures of Mr. Hamilton, but records no reply of

* Jefferson's Works, ix. 102.

importance on the part of Washington, whose object in seeking the conversation had been merely to persuade his Secretary to remain in the cabinet; and who had no relish for the censorious comments to which it had given rise.

Yet with all this political rivalry, Jefferson has left on record his appreciation of the sterling merit of Hamilton. In his Anas, he speaks of him as "of acute understanding, disinterested, honest, and honorable in all private transactions; amiable in society, and duly valuing virtue in private life. Yet so bewitched and perverted by the British example, as to be under thorough conviction that corruption was essential to the government of a nation."

In support of this sweeping exception to Mr. Hamilton's political orthodoxy, Mr. Jefferson gives, in his Anas, a conversation which occurred between that gentleman and Mr. Adams, at his (Mr. Jefferson's) table, *after the cloth was removed.* "Conversation," writes he, "began on other matters, and by some circumstance was led to the British constitution, on which Mr. Adams observed, "purge that constitution of its corruption, and give to its popular branch equality of representation, and it would be the most perfect constitution ever devised by the wit of man." Hamilton paused and said, "purge it of its corruption, and give to its popular branch equality of representation, and it would become an *impracticable* government; as it stands at present, with all its supposed defects, it is the most perfect government which ever existed." *

This after-dinner conversation appears to us very loose ground on which to found the opinion continually expressed by

* Jefferson's Works, vol. ix. p. 96.

Mr. Jefferson, that "Mr. Hamilton was not only a monarchist, but for a monarchy bottomed on corruption."

Subsequent to Washington's remonstrance with Mr. Jefferson above cited, he had confidential conversations with Mr. Madison on the subject of his intended retirement from office at the end of the presidential term, and asked him to think what would be the proper time and mode of announcing his intention to the public; and intimating a wish that Mr. Madison would prepare for him the announcement.

Mr. Madison remonstrated in the most earnest manner against such a resolution, setting forth, in urgent language, the importance to the country of his continuing in the presidency. Washington listened to his reasoning with profound attention, but still clung to his resolution.

In consequence of St. Clair's disastrous defeat and the increasing pressure of the Indian war, bills had been passed in Congress for increasing the army, by adding three regiments of infantry and a squadron of cavalry (which additional force was to serve for three years, unless sooner discharged), also for establishing a uniform militia system.

The question now came up as to the appointment of an officer to command in the Western frontier. General St. Clair, in a letter to Washington, expressed a wish that a court of inquiry might be instituted to investigate his conduct in the late expedition. "Your desire," replied Washington, March 28th, "of rectifying any errors of the public opinion relative to your conduct, by an investigation of a court of inquiry, is highly laudable, and would be readily complied with, were the measure practicable. But a total deficiency of officers in actual service, of competent rank to

form a legal court for that purpose, precludes the power of gratifying your wishes on this occasion.

"The intimation of your wishes to afford your successor all the information of which you are capable, although unnecessary for my personal conviction, must be regarded as an additional evidence of the goodness of your heart, and of your attachment to your country."

In a letter dated March 31st, St. Clair urged reasons for being permitted to retain his commission "until an opportunity should be presented, if necessary, of investigating his conduct in every mode presented by law."

These reasons, Washington replied, would be conclusive with him under any other circumstances than the present. "But the establishment of the troops," observes he, "allows only of one Major General. You have manifested your intention of retiring, and the essential interests of the public require that your successor should be immediately appointed, in order to repair to the frontiers.

"As the House of Representatives have been pleased to institute an inquiry into the causes of the failure of the late expedition, I should hope an opportunity would thereby be afforded you of explaining your conduct in a manner satisfactory to the public and yourself."

St. Clair resigned his commission, and was succeeded in his Western command by General Wayne, the mad Anthony of the revolution, still in the vigor of his days, being forty-seven years of age. "He has many good points as an officer," writes Washington, "and it is to be hoped that time, reflection, good advice, and, above all, a due sense of the importance of the trust which is

committed to him, will correct his foibles, or cast a shade over them." *

Washington's first thought was that a decisive expedition conducted by this energetic man of the sword, might retrieve the recent frontier disgrace, and put an end to the persevering hostility of the Indians. In deference, however, to the clamors which had been raised against the war and its expenses, and to meet what appeared to be the prevalent wish of the nation, he reluctantly relinquished his more energetic policy, and gave in to that which advised further negotiations for peace; though he was far from anticipating a beneficial result.

In regard to St. Clair, we will here add: that a committee of the House of Representatives ultimately inquired into the cause of the failure of his expedition, and rendered a report, in which he was explicitly exculpated. His adjutant general also (Winthrop Sargent), in his private diary, testifies to St. Clair's coolness and bravery, though debilitated by illness. Public sentiment, however, remained for a long time adverse to him; but Washington, satisfied with the explanations which had been given, continued to honor him with his confidence and friendship.

Congress adjourned on the 8th of May, and soon afterward Washington set off on a short visit to Mount Vernon. The season was in all its beauty, and never had this rallying place of his affections appeared to him more attractive. How could he give up the prospect of a speedy return to its genial pursuits and pleasures from the harassing cares and janglings of public life. On the 20th of May, he wrote to Mr. Madison on the subject of

* Letter to Governor Lee. Washington's Writings, x. 248.

their late conversation. "I have not been unmindful," says he, "of the sentiments expressed by you. On the contrary, I have again and again revolved them with thoughtful anxiety, but without being able to dispose my mind to a longer continuation in the office I have now the honor to hold. I, therefore, still look forward with the fondest and most ardent wishes to spend the remainder of my days, which I cannot expect to be long, in ease and tranquillity."

He now renewed the request he had made Mr. Madison, for advice as to the proper time and mode for announcing his intention of retiring, and for assistance in preparing the announcement. "In revolving this subject myself," writes he, "my judgment has always been embarrassed. On the one hand, a previous declaration to retire, not only carries with it the appearance of vanity and self-importance, but it may be construed into a manœuvre to be invited to remain; and, on the other hand, to say nothing, implies consent, or, at any rate, would leave the matter in doubt; and to decline afterwards, might be deemed as bad and uncandid."

"I would fain carry my request to you further," adds he. "As the recess [of Congress] may afford you leisure, and, I flatter myself, you have dispositions to oblige me, I will, without apology, desire, if the measure in itself should strike you as proper, or likely to produce public good, or private honor, that you would turn your thoughts to a valedictory address from me to the public."

He then went on to suggest a number of the topics and ideas which the address was to contain; all to be expressed in "plain and modest terms." But, in the main, he left it to Mr. Madison to determine whether, in the first place, such an address would

be proper; if so, what matters it ought to contain and when it ought to appear; whether at the same time with his [Washington's] declaration of his intention to retire, or at the close of his career.

Madison, in reply, approved of the measure, and advised that the notification and address should appear together, and be promulgated through the press in time to pervade every part of the Union by the beginning of November. With the letter he sent a draft of the address. "You will readily observe," writes he, "that, in executing it, I have aimed at that plainness and modesty of language, which you had in view, and which, indeed, are so peculiarly becoming the character and the occasion; and that I had little more to do as to the matter, than to follow the just and comprehensive outline which you had sketched. I flatter myself, however, that, in every thing which has depended on me, much improvement will be made, before so interesting a paper shall have taken its last form."*

Before concluding his letter, Madison expressed a hope that Washington would reconsider his idea of retiring from office, and that the country might not, at so important a conjuncture, be deprived of the inestimable advantage of having him at the head of its councils.

On the 23d of May, Jefferson also addressed a long letter to Washington on the same subject. "When you first mentioned to me your purpose of retiring from the government, though I felt all the magnitude of the event, I was in a considerable degree silent. I knew that, to such a mind as yours, persuasion was idle and impertinent; that, before forming your decision, you had

* Washington's Writings. Sparks, xii. 382.

weighed all the reasons for and against the measure, had made up your mind in full view of them, and that there could be little hope of changing the result. Pursuing my reflections, too, I knew we were some day to try to walk alone, and, if the essay should be made while you should be alive and looking on, we should derive confidence from that circumstance, and resource if it failed. The public mind, too, was then calm and confident, and therefore in a favorable state for making the experiment. But the public mind is no longer so confident and serene; and that from causes in which you are no ways personally mixed."

Jefferson now launched out against the public debt and all the evils which he apprehended from the funding system, the ultimate object of all which was, said he, "to prepare the way for a change from the present republican form of government to that of a monarchy, of which the English constitution is to be the model." He concluded by pronouncing the continuance of Washington at the head of affairs, to be of the last importance.

"The confidence of the whole Union," writes he, "is centred in you. Your being at the helm will be more than an answer to every argument which can be used to alarm and lead the people in any quarter into violence or secession. North and South will hang together, if they have you to hang on; and, if the first corrective of a numerous representation should fail in its effect, your presence will give time for trying others not inconsistent with the union and peace of the States.

"I am perfectly aware of the oppression under which your present office lays your mind, and of the ardor with which you pant for retirement to domestic life. But there is sometimes an eminence of character on which society have such peculiar claims, as to control the predilections of the individual for a particular

walk of happiness, and restrain him to that alone, arising from the present and future benedictions of mankind. This seems to be your condition, and the law imposed on you by Providence, in forming your character, and fashioning the events on which it was to operate; and it is to motives like these, and not to personal anxieties of mine or others, who have no right to call on you for sacrifices, that I appeal from your former determination and urge a revisal of it, on the ground of change in the aspect of things. Should an honest majority result from the new and enlarged representation, should those acquiesce, whose principles or interests they may control, your wishes for retirement would be gratified with less danger, as soon as that shall be manifest, without awaiting the completion of the second period of four years. One or two sessions will determine the crisis; and I cannot but hope, that you can resolve to add one or two more to the many years you have already sacrificed to the good of mankind."*

* Writings, x. 508.

CHAPTER XVI.

JEFFERSON'S SUSPICIONS—CONTEMNED BY HAMILTON—WASHINGTON'S EXPOSTULATION—COMPLAINS OF THE CONDUCT OF FRENEAU'S PAPER—HAMILTON AND RANDOLPH URGE HIM TO A RE-ELECTION—A WARRING CABINET—HAMILTON'S ATTACK ON JEFFERSON—WASHINGTON'S HEALING ADMONITIONS—REPLIES OF THE TWO SECRETARIES—CONTINUED HOSTILITY TO THE EXCISE LAW—WASHINGTON'S PROCLAMATION—RENEWED EFFORT TO ALLAY THE DISCORD IN HIS CABINET.

The letter of Jefferson was not received by Washington until after his return to Philadelphia, and the purport of it was so painful to him, that he deferred from day to day having any conversation with that statesman on the subject. A letter written in the mean time, by Jefferson to Lafayette, shows the predominant suspicion, or rather belief, which had fixed itself in the mind of the former, and was shaping his course of action.

"A sect," writes he, "has shown itself among us, who declare they espoused our constitution not as a good and sufficient thing in itself, but only as a step to an English constitution, the only thing good and sufficient in itself, in their eyes. It is happy for us that these are preachers without followers, and that our people are firm and constant in their republican purity. You will won-

der to be told that it is from the Eastward chiefly, that these champions for a king, lords, and commons, come. They get some important associates from New York, and are puffed up by a tribe of Agioteurs which have been hatched in a bed of corruption, made up after the model of their beloved England. Too many of these stock-jobbers and king-jobbers have come into our legislature, or rather, too many of our legislature have become stock-jobbers and king-jobbers. However, the voice of the people is beginning to make itself heard, and will probably cleanse their seats at the next election." *

In regard to the suspicions and apprehensions avowed in the above letter, and which apparently were haunting Jefferson's mind, Hamilton expressed himself roundly in one of his cabinet papers:

"The idea of introducing a monarchy or aristocracy into this country, by employing the influence and force of a government continually changing hands, towards it, is one of those visionary things that none but madmen could meditate, and that no wise man will believe. If it could be done at all, which is utterly incredible, it would require a long series of time, certainly beyond the life of any individual, to effect it—who, then, would enter into such a plot? for what purpose of interest or ambition?"

And as to the charge of stock-gambling in the legislature, Hamilton indignantly writes: "As far as I know, there is not a member of the legislature who can properly be called a stock-jobber or a paper-dealer. There are several of them who were proprietors of public debt, in various ways; some for money lent and property furnished for the use of the public during the war,

* Jefferson's Works, iii. 450.

others for sums received in payment of debts, and it is supposable enough that some of them had been purchasers of the public debt, with intention to hold it as a valuable and convenient property, considering an honorable provision for it as a matter of course.

"It is a strange perversion of ideas, and as novel as it is extraordinary, that men should be deemed corrupt and criminal for becoming proprietors in the funds of their country. Yet, I believe the number of members of Congress is very small, who have ever been considerable proprietors in the funds. As to improper speculations on measures depending before Congress, I believe never was any body of men freer from them." *

On the 10th of July, Washington had a conversation with Jefferson on the subject of the letter he had recently received from him; and endeavored with his usual supervising and moderating assiduity to allay the jealousies and suspicions which were disturbing the mind of that ardent politician. These, he intimated, had been carried a great deal too far. There might be *desires*, he said, among a few in the higher walks of life, particularly in the great cities, to change the form of government into a monarchy, but he did not believe there were any *designs;* and he believed the main body of the people in the Eastern States were as steadily for republicanism as in the Southern.

He now spoke with earnestness about articles in the public papers, especially in the Gazette edited by Freneau, the object of which seemed to be to excite opposition to the government, and which had actually excited it in Pennsylvania, in regard to the excise law. "These articles," said he, feelingly, "tend to produce a separation of the Union, *the most dreadful of calamities;*

* Hamilton's Works, iv. 268.

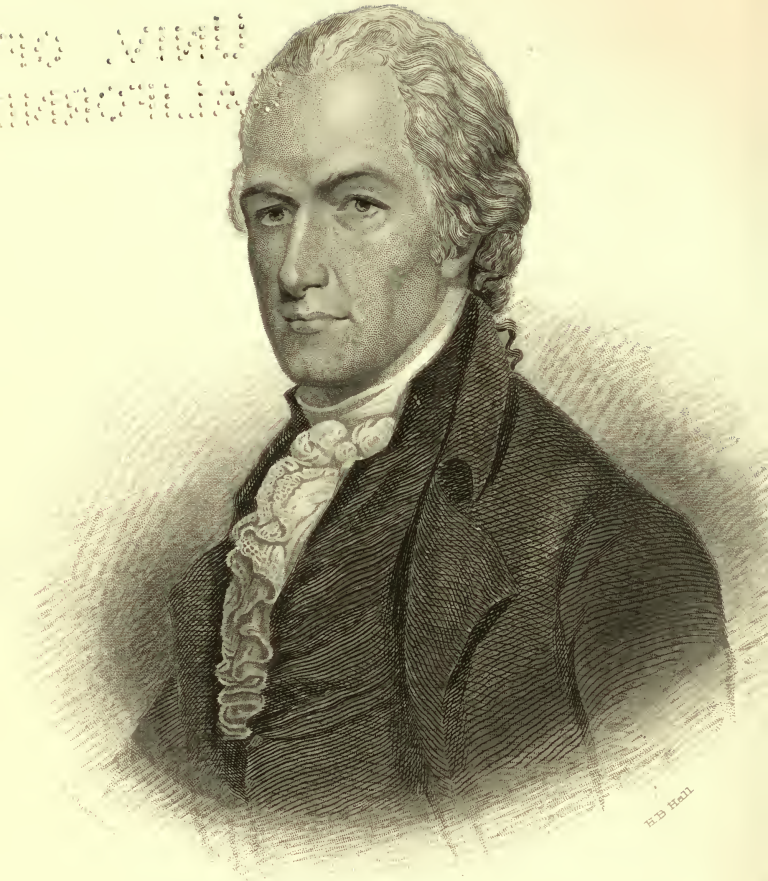
and whatever tends to produce anarchy, tends, of course, to produce a resort to monarchical government."

The articles in question had, it is true, been chiefly levelled at the Treasury department, but Washington accepted no immunity from attacks pointed at any department of his government; assuming that they were aimed directly at himself. "In condemning the administration of the government, they condemned me," said he, "for, if they thought these were measures pursued contrary to my sentiments, they must conceive me too careless to attend to them or too stupid to understand them."

He acknowledged, indeed, that he had signed many acts of which he did not approve in all their parts; but never had he put his hand to one which he did not think eligible, on the whole.

As to the bank which had been so much complained of, he observed that, until there was some infallible criterion of reason, a difference of opinion must be tolerated. He did not believe the discontents extended far from the seat of government. He had seen and spoken with many people in Maryland and Virginia in his late journey, and had found them contented and happy.

Jefferson's observations in reply tended, principally, to iterate and enforce what he had already urged in his letter. The two great popular complaints were, he said, that the national debt was unnecessarily increased by the Assumption, and that it had furnished the means of corrupting both branches of the legislature. In both Houses there was a considerable squadron whose votes were devoted to the paper and stock-jobbing interest. On examining the votes of these men they would be found uniformly for every treasury measure, and as most of these measures had been carried by small majorities, they had been carried by these



ALEXANDER HAMILTON

Printed

A Hamilton

very votes. It was a cause of just uneasiness therefore, when we saw a legislature legislating for their own interests in opposition to those of the people.

"Washington," observes Jefferson, "said not a word on the corruption of the legislature." He probably did not feel disposed to contend against what he may have considered jealous suspicions and deductions. But he took up the other point and defended the Assumption, agreeing, says Jefferson, that it had not increased the debt, *for that all of it was honest debt.*

He justified the excise law, too, as one of the best laws that could be passed, as nobody would pay the tax who did not choose to do it.

We give this conversation as noted down by Jefferson in his "Anas." It is one of the very few instances we have of Washington's informal discussions with the members of his cabinet, and it bears the stamp of that judgment, considerateness, delicacy, and good faith which enabled him to moderate and manage the wayward passions and impulses of able men.

Hamilton was equally strenuous with Jefferson in urging upon Washington the policy of a re-election, as it regarded the public good, and wrote to him fully on the subject. It was the opinion of every one, he alleged, with whom he had conversed, that the affairs of the national government were not yet firmly established; that its enemies, generally speaking, were as inveterate as ever; that their enmity had been sharpened by its success and all the resentments which flow from disappointed predictions and mortified vanity; that a general and strenuous effort was making in every State to place the administration of it in the hands of its enemies, as if they were its safest guardians; that the period of the next House of Representatives was likely to prove the crisis

of its national character; that if Washington continued in office, nothing materially mischievous was to be apprehended; but, if he should quit, much was to be dreaded; that the same motives which had induced him to accept originally, ought to decide him to continue till matters had assumed a more determinate aspect; that, indeed, it would have been better as it regarded his own character, that he had never consented to come forward, than now to leave the business unfinished and in danger of being undone; that in the event of storms arising, there would be an imputation either of want of foresight or want of firmness; and, in fine, that on public and personal accounts, on patriotic and prudential considerations, the clear path to be pursued by him would be again to obey the voice of his country; which, it was not doubted, would be as earnest and as unanimous as ever.

In concluding his letter, Hamilton observes, "The sentiments I have delivered upon this occasion, I can truly say, proceed exclusively from an anxious concern for the public welfare and an affectionate personal attachment."

Mr. Edmund Randolph also, after a long letter on the "jeopardy of the Union," which seemed to him "at the eve of a crisis," adds: "The fuel which has been already gathered for combustion wants no addition. But how awfully might it be increased, were the violence, which is now suspended by a universal submission to your pretensions, let loose by your resignation. Permit me, then, in the fervor of a dutiful and affectionate attachment to you, to beseech you to penetrate the consequences of a dereliction of the reins. The constitution would never have been adopted but from a knowledge that you had once sanctioned it, and an expectation that you would execute it. It is in a state of probation. The most inauspicious struggles are past, but the public delibera-

tions need stability. You alone can give them stability. You suffered yourself to yield when the voice of your country summoned you to the administration. Should a civil war arise, you cannot stay at home. And how much easier will it be to disperse the factions, which are rushing to this catastrophe, than to subdue them after they shall appear in arms? It is the fixed opinion of the world, that you surrender nothing incomplete." *

Not the cabinet, merely, divided as it was in its political opinions, but all parties, however discordant in other points, concurred in a desire that Washington should continue in office—so truly was he regarded as the choice of the nation.

But though the cabinet was united in feeling on this one subject, in other respects its dissensions were increasing in virulence. Hamilton, aggrieved by the attacks made in Freneau's paper upon his funding and banking system, his duty on home-made spirits, and other points of his financial policy, and upon himself, by holding him up as a monarchist at heart, and considering these attacks as originating in the hostility of Freneau's patron, Mr. Jefferson, addressed a note signed T. L., to the editor of the Gazette of the United States, in which he observed that the editor of the National Gazette received a salary from government, adding the significant quere—whether this salary was paid him for translations or for publications, the design of which was to vilify those to whom the voice of the people had committed the administration of our public affairs, to oppose the measures of government, and, by false insinuations, to disturb the public peace? "In common life it is thought ungrateful for a man to bite the

* Washington's Writings, x. 514.

hand that puts bread in his mouth; but, if the man is hired to do it, the case is altered."

In another article, dated August 4th, Mr. Hamilton, under the signature of "An American," gave some particulars of the negotiations which ended in the establishment of the National Gazette, devoted to the interests of a certain party, of which Mr. Jefferson was the head. "An experiment," said he, "somewhat new in the history of political manœuvres in this country; a newspaper instituted by a public officer, and the editor of it regularly pensioned with the public money in the disposal of that officer. * * * * But, it may be asked—is it possible that Mr. Jefferson, the head of a principal department of the government, can be the patron of a paper, the evident object of which is to decry the government and its measures? If he disapproves of the government itself, and thinks it deserving of his opposition, can he reconcile it to his own personal dignity and the principles of probity, to hold an office under it, and employ the means of official influence in that opposition? If he disapproves of the leading measures which have been adopted in the course of his administration, can he reconcile it with the principles of delicacy and propriety, to hold a place in that administration, and at the same time to be instrumental in vilifying measures which have been adopted by majorities of both branches of the legislature, *and sanctioned by the chief magistrate of the Union?*"

This attack brought out an affidavit from Mr. Freneau, in which he declared that his coming to Philadelphia was his own voluntary act; that, as an editor of a newspaper, he had never been urged, advised, or influenced by Mr. Jefferson, and that not a single line of his Gazette was ever directly or indirectly written, dictated, or composed for it, by the Secretary of State.

Washington had noticed this growing feud with excessive pain, and at length found it necessary to interfere and attempt a reconciliation between the warring parties. In the course of a letter to Jefferson (Aug. 23d), on the subject of Indian hostilities, and the possibility of their being furnished by foreign agents to check, as far as possible, the rapid increase, extension, and consequence of the United States, "How unfortunate then," observes he, "and how much to be regretted that, while we are encompassed on all sides with armed enemies and insidious friends, internal dissensions should be harrowing and tearing our vitals. The latter, to me, is the most serious, the most alarming and the most afflicting of the two; and without more charity for the opinions and acts of one another in governmental matters, or some more infallible criterion by which the truth of speculative opinions, before they have undergone the test of experience, are to be prejudged, than has yet fallen to the lot of fallibility, I believe it will be difficult, if not impracticable, to manage the reins of government, or to keep the parts of it together; for if, instead of laying our shoulders to the machine after measures are decided on, one pulls this way and another that, before the utility of the thing is fairly tried, it must inevitably be torn asunder; and, in my opinion, the fairest prospect of happiness and prosperity that ever was presented to man, will be lost perhaps forever.

"My earnest wish and fondest hope, therefore, is, that instead of wounding suspicions and irritating charges, there may be liberal allowances, mutual forbearances, and temporizing yieldings on all sides. Under the exercise of these, matters will go on smoothly, and, if possible, more prosperously. Without them, every thing must rub; the wheels of government will clog; our enemies will triumph, and, by throwing their weight into the dis-

affected scale, may accomplish the ruin of the goodly fabric we have been erecting."

Admonitions to the same purport were addressed by him to Hamilton. "Having premised these things," adds he, "I would fain hope that liberal allowances will be made for the political opinions of each other; and, instead of those wounding suspicions and irritating charges, with which some of our gazettes are so strongly impregnated, and which cannot fail, if persevered in, of pushing matters to extremity, and thereby tearing the machine asunder, that there may be mutual forbearance and temporizing yielding *on all sides*. Without these I do not see how the reins of government are to be managed, or how the Union of the States can be much longer preserved." * * *

"I do not mean to apply this advice to any measures which are passed, or to any particular character. I have given it in the same *general* terms to other officers of the government. My earnest wish is, that balsam may be poured into *all* the wounds which have been given, to prevent them from gangrening, and from those fatal consequences, which the community may sustain if it is withheld." *

Hamilton was prompt and affectionate in his reply, expressing sincere regret at the circumstances which had given rise to the uneasy sensations experienced by Washington. "It is my most anxious wish," writes he, "as far as may depend upon me, to smooth the path of your administration, and to render it prosperous and happy. And, if any prospect shall open of healing or terminating the differences which exist, I shall most cheerfully embrace it; though I consider myself as the deeply injured party.

* Writings, x. p. 284.

The recommendation of such a spirit is worthy of the moderation and wisdom which dictated it."

He then frankly acknowledged that he had had "some instrumentality" in the retaliations which of late had fallen upon certain public characters.

"I considered myself compelled to this conduct," adds he, "by reasons public as well as personal, of the most cogent nature. I *know* I have been an object of uniform opposition from Mr. Jefferson, from the moment of his coming to the city of New York to enter upon his present office. I *know*, from the most authentic sources, that I have been the frequent subject of the most unkind whispers and insinuations from the same quarter. I have long seen a formed party in the legislature under his auspices, bent upon my subversion. I cannot doubt, from the evidence I possess, that the *National Gazette* was instituted by him for political purposes, and that one leading object of it has been to render me and all the measures connected with my department as odious as possible." "Nevertheless," proceeds he, "I can truly say, that, excepting explanations to confidential friends, I never, directly or indirectly, retaliated or countenanced retaliation till very lately. * * * * * * But when I no longer doubted that there was a formed party deliberately bent upon the subversion of measures which, in its consequences, would subvert the government; when I saw that the undoing of the funding system in particular, (which, whatever may be the original measures of that system, would prostrate the credit and honor of the nation, and bring the government into contempt with that description of men who are in every society the only firm supporters of government,) was an avowed object of the party; and that all possible pains were taken to produce

that effect, by rendering it odious to the body of the people, I considered it a duty to endeavor to resist the torrent, and, as an effectual means to this end, to draw aside the veil from the principal actors. To this strong impulse, to this decided conviction, I have yielded; and I think events will prove that I have judged rightly."

"Nevertheless, I pledge my hand to you, sir, that, if you shall hereafter form a plan to re-unite the members of your administration upon some steady principle of co-operation, I will faithfully concur in executing it during my continuance in office. And I will not, directly or indirectly, say or do a thing that shall endanger a feud."

Jefferson, too, in a letter of the same date, assured Washington that to no one had the dissensions of the Cabinet given deeper concern than to himself—to no one equal mortification at being himself a part of them. His own grievances, which led to those dissensions, he traced back to the time when Hamilton, in the spring of 1790, procured his influence to effect a change in the vote on Assumption. "When I embarked in the government," writes he, "it was with a determination to intermeddle not at all with the legislature, and as little as possible with my co-departments. The first and only instance of variance from the former part of my resolution, I was duped into by the Secretary of the Treasury, and made a tool for forwarding his schemes, not then sufficiently understood by me; and of all the errors of my political life, this has occasioned me the deepest regret." * * * "If it has been supposed that I have ever intrigued among the members of the legislature to defeat the plans of the Secretary of the Treasury, it is contrary to all truth. * * * That I have utterly, in my private conversations, disapproved of the system

of the Secretary of the Treasury, I acknowledge and avow; and this was not merely a speculative difference. His system flowed from principles adverse to liberty, and was calculated to undermine and demolish the republic by creating an influence of his department over the members of the legislature."

In regard to Freneau's Gazette, Mr. Jefferson absolutely denied that he had set it up, but admitted that, on its first establishment, and subsequently from time to time, he had furnished the editor with the Leyden Gazette, requesting that he would always translate and publish the material intelligence contained in them. "But as to any other direction or indication," adds he, "of my wish how his press should be conducted, what sort of intelligence he should give, what essays encourage, I can protest, in the presence of Heaven, that I never did, by myself or any other, directly or indirectly, say a syllable, nor attempt any kind of influence. I can further protest, in the same awful presence, that I never did, by myself or any other, directly or indirectly, write, dictate, or procure any one sentence or sentiment to be inserted *in his or any other Gazette*, to which my name was not affixed, or that of my office. * * * *

"Freneau's proposition to publish a paper having been about the time that the writings of PUBLICOLA and the DISCOURSES ON DAVILA had a good deal excited the public attention, I took it for granted, from Freneau's character, which had been marked as that of a good Whig, that he would give free place to pieces written against the aristocratical and monarchical principles these papers had inculcated. * * * * *

"As to the merits or demerits of his paper, they certainly concern me not. He and Fenno [editor of the United States Gazette] are rivals for the public favor; the one courts them by

flattery, the other by censure; and I believe it will be admitted that the one has been as servile as the other severe. But is not the dignity and even decency of government committed, when one of its principal ministers enlists himself as an anonymous writer or paragraphist for either the one or the other of them?"

Mr. Jefferson considered himself particularly aggrieved by charges against him in Fenno's Gazette, which he ascribed to the pen of Mr. Hamilton, and intimated the possibility, that after his retirement from office, he might make an appeal to the country, should his own justification or the interests of the Republic require it, subscribing his name to whatever he might write, and using with freedom and truth the facts and names necessary to place the cause in its just form before that tribunal. "To a thorough disregard of the honors and emoluments of office, I join as great a value for the esteem of my countrymen; and conscious of having merited it by an integrity which cannot be reproached, and by an enthusiastic devotion to their rights and liberty, I will not suffer my retirement to be clouded by the slanders of a man, whose history, from the moment at which history can stoop to notice him, is a tissue of machinations against the liberty of the country which has not only received and given him bread, but heaped its honors on his head."

Washington's solicitude for harmony in his cabinet had been rendered more anxious by public disturbances in some parts of the country. The excise law on ardent spirits distilled within the United States, had, from the time of its enactment by Congress in 1791, met with opposition from the inhabitants of the Western counties of Pennsylvania. It had been modified and rendered less offensive within the present year; but the hostility

to it had continued. Combinations were formed to defeat the execution of it, and the revenue officers were riotously opposed in the execution of their duties.

Determined to exert all the legal powers with which he was invested to check so daring and unwarrantable a spirit, Washington, on the 15th of September, issued a proclamation, warning all persons to desist from such unlawful combinations and proceedings, and requiring all courts, magistrates, and officers to bring the infractors of the law to justice; copies of which proclamation were sent to the governors of Pennsylvania and of North and South Carolina.

On the 18th of October, Washington made one more effort to allay the discord in his cabinet. Finding it impossible for the rival secretaries to concur in any system of politics, he urged them to accommodate their differences by mutual yieldings. "A measure of this sort," observed he, "would produce harmony and consequent good in our public councils, and the contrary will inevitably produce confusion and serious mischiefs; and all for what? Because mankind cannot think alike, but would adopt different means to attain the same end. For I will frankly and solemnly declare, that I believe the views of both to be pure and well meant, and that experience only will decide with respect to the salutariness of the measures which are the subjects of this dispute."

"Why, then, when some of the best citizens of the United States—men of discernment—uniform and tried patriots—who have no sinister views to promote, but are chaste in their ways of thinking and acting, are to be found, some on one side and some on the other of the questions which have caused these agita-

tions—why should either of you be so tenacious of your opinions as to make no allowance for those of the other? * * * *

"I have a great, a sincere esteem and regard for you both; and ardently wish that some line could be marked out by which both of you could walk."

CHAPTER XVII.

WASHINGTON UNANIMOUSLY RE-ELECTED—OPENING OF SESSION OF CONGRESS —TOPICS OF THE PRESIDENT'S SPEECH—ABORTIVE ATTACK UPON THE SECRETARY OF THE TREASURY—WASHINGTON INSTALLED FOR HIS SECOND TERM.

It was after a long and painful conflict of feelings that Washington consented to be a candidate for a re-election. There was no opposition on the part of the public, and the vote for him in the Electoral College was unanimous. In a letter to a friend, he declared himself gratefully impressed by so distinguished and honorable a testimony of public approbation and confidence. In truth he had been apprehensive of being elected by but a meagre majority, which he acknowledged would have been a matter of chagrin.

George Clinton, of New York, was held up for the Vice-presidency, in opposition to John Adams; but the latter was re-elected by a majority of twenty-seven electoral votes.

But though gratified to find that the hearts of his countrymen were still with him, it was with no emotion of pleasure that Washington looked forward to another term of public duty, and a prolonged absence from the quiet retirement of Mount Vernon.

The session of Congress, which was to close his present term, opened on the fifth of November. The continuance of the Indian war formed a painful topic in the President's address. Efforts at pacification had as yet been unsuccessful: two brave officers, Colonel Hardin and Major Trueman, who had been sent to negotiate with the savages, had been severally murdered. Vigorous preparations were therefore making for an active prosecution of hostilities, in which Wayne was to take the field. Washington, with benevolent earnestness, dwelt upon the humane system of civilizing the tribes, by inculcating agricultural tastes and habits.

The factious and turbulent opposition which had been made in some parts of the country to the collection of duties on spirituous liquors distilled in the United States, was likewise adverted to by the President, and a determination expressed to assert and maintain the just authority of the laws; trusting in the "full cooperation of the other departments of government, and the zealous support of all good citizens."

In a part of the speech addressed to the House of Representatives, he expressed a strong hope that the state of the national finances was now sufficiently matured to admit of an arrangement for the redemption and discharge of the public debt. "No measure," said he, "can be more desirable, whether viewed with an eye to its intrinsic importance, or to the general sentiment and wish of the nation."

The address was well received by both houses, and a disposition expressed to concur with the President's views and wishes. The discussion of the subjects to which he had called their attention, soon produced vehement conflicts of opinion in the house, marking the growing virulence of parties. The Secretary of the

Treasury, in reporting, at the request of the House, a plan for the annual reduction of so much of the national debt as the United States had a right to redeem, spoke of the expenses of the Indian war, and the necessity of additional internal taxes. The consideration of the report was parried or evaded, and a motion made to reduce the military establishment. This gave an opportunity for sternly criticizing the mode in which the Indian war had been conducted; for discussing the comparative merits and cost of regular and militia forces, and for inveighing against standing armies, as dangerous to liberty. These discussions, while they elicited much heat, led to no present result, and gave way to an inquiry into the conduct of the Secretary of the Treasury in regard to certain loans, which the President, in conformity to acts of Congress, had authorized him to make; but concerning the management of which he had not furnished detailed reports to the legislature.

The subject was opened by Mr. Giles, of Virginia, who moved in the House of Representatives a series of resolutions seeking information in the matter, and who followed his resolutions by a speech, charging the Secretary of the Treasury with official misconduct, and intimating that a large balance of public money had not been accounted for.

A report of the Secretary gave all the information desired; but the charges against him continued to be urged with great acrimony to the close of the session, when they were signally rejected, not more than sixteen members voting for any one of them.

The veneration inspired by the character of Washington, and the persuasion that he would never permit himself to be considered the head of a party, had hitherto shielded him from

attack; a little circumstance, however, showed that the rancor of party was beginning to glance at him.

On his birth-day (Feb. 22) many of the members of Congress were desirous of waiting on him in testimony of respect as chief magistrate of the Union, and a motion was made to adjourn for half an hour for the purpose. It met with serious opposition as a species of homage—it was setting up an idol dangerous to liberty —it had a bias towards monarchy!

Washington, though he never courted popularity, was attentive to the signs of public opinion, and disposed to be guided by them when right. The time for entering upon his second term of Presidency was at hand. There had been much cavilling at the parade attending his first installation. Jefferson especially had pronounced it "not at all in character with the simplicity of republican government, and looking, as if wishfully, to those of European Courts."

To guide him on the coming occasion, Washington called the heads of departments together, and desired they would consult with one another, and agree on any changes they might consider for the better, assuring them he would willingly conform to whatever they should advise.

They held such consultation, and ultimately gave their individual opinions in writing, with regard to the time, manner, and place of the President's taking the oath of office. As they were divided in opinion, and gave no positive advice as to any change, no change was made. On the 4th of March, the oath was publicly administered to Washington by Mr. Justice Cushing, in the Senate Chamber, in presence of the heads of departments, foreign ministers, such members of the House of Representatives as were in town, and as many other spectators as could be accommodated.

CHAPTER XVIII.

GOUVERNEUR MORRIS MINISTER AT THE FRENCH COURT—HIS REPRESENTATIONS OF THE STATE OF AFFAIRS—WASHINGTON'S CONCERN FOR LAFAYETTE—JEFFERSON ANNOYED AT HIS FOREBODINGS—OVERTHROW OF THE FRENCH MONARCHY—IMPRISONMENT OF LAFAYETTE—JEFFERSON CONCERNED, BUT NOT DISCOURAGED AT THE REPUBLICAN MASSACRES—WASHINGTON SHOCKED—HIS LETTER TO THE MARCHIONESS LAFAYETTE.

Early in 1792, Gouverneur Morris had received the appointment of minister plenipotentiary to the French court. His diplomatic correspondence from Paris gave shocking accounts of the excesses attending the revolution. France, he represented as governed by Jacobin clubs. Lafayette, by endeavoring to check their excesses, had completely lost his authority. "Were he to appear just now in Paris, unattended by his army," writes Morris, "he would be torn to pieces." Washington received these accounts with deep concern. What was to be the fate of that distracted country—what was to be the fate of his friend!

Jefferson was impatient of these gloomy picturings; especially when he saw their effect upon Washington's mind. "The fact is," writes he, "that Gouverneur Morris, a high-flying monarchy

man, shutting his eyes and his faith to every fact against his wishes, and believing every thing he desires to be true, has kept the President's mind constantly poisoned with his forebodings."

His forebodings, however, were soon verified. Lafayette addressed from his camp, a letter to the Legislative Assembly, formally denouncing the conduct of the Jacobin club as violating the declaration of rights and the constitution.

His letter was of no avail. On the 20th of June bands from the Faubourg St. Antoine, armed with pikes, and headed by Santerre, marched to the Tuileries, insulted the king in the presence of his family, obliging him to put on the *bonnet rouge*, the baleful cap of liberty of the revolution. Lafayette, still loyal to his sovereign, hastened to Paris, appeared at the bar of the Assembly, and demanded, in the name of the army, the punishment of those who had thus violated the constitution, by insulting in his palace, the chief of the executive power. His intervention proved of no avail, and he returned with a sad and foreboding heart to his army.

On the 9th of August, Paris was startled by the sound of the fatal tocsin at midnight. On the 10th the chateau of the Tuileries was attacked, and the Swiss guard who defended it, were massacred. The king and queen took refuge in the National Assembly, which body decreed the suspension of the king's authority.

It was at once the overthrow of the monarchy, the annihilation of the constitutional party, and the commencement of the reign of terror. Lafayette, who was the head of the constitutionalists, was involved in their downfall. The Jacobins denounced him in the National Assembly; his arrest was decreed, and emissaries

were sent to carry the decree into effect. At first he thought of repairing at once to Paris and facing his accusers, but, on second thoughts, determined to bend before the storm and await the return of more propitious days.

Leaving every thing in order in his army, which remained encamped at Sedan, he set off with a few trusty friends for the Netherlands, to seek an asylum in Holland or the United States, but, with his companions, was detained a prisoner at Rochefort, the first Austrian post.

"Thus his circle is completed," writes Morris. "He has spent his fortune on a revolution, and is now crushed by the wheel which he put in motion. He lasted longer than I expected."

Washington looked with a sadder eye on this catastrophe of Lafayette's high-hearted and gallant aspirations, and mourned over the adverse fortunes of his friend.

The reign of terror continued. "We have had one week of unchecked murders, in which some thousands have perished in this city," writes Morris to Jefferson, on the 10th of September. "It began with between two and three hundred of the clergy, who had been shot because they would not take the oaths prescribed by the law, and which they said, were contrary to their conscience." Thence *these executors of speedy justice* went to the *abbaye* where persons were confined who were at court on the 10th of August. These were despatched also, and afterwards they visited the other prisons. "All those who were confined either on the accusation or suspicion of crimes, were destroyed."

The accounts of these massacres grieved Mr. Jefferson. They were shocking in themselves, and he feared they might bring great discredit upon the Jacobins of France, whom he considered republican patriots, bent on the establishment of a free

constitution. They had acquiesced for a time, said he, in the experiment of retaining an hereditary executive, but finding, if pursued, it would ensure the re-establishment of a despotism, they considered it absolutely indispensable to expunge that office. "In the struggle which was necessary, many guilty persons fell without the forms of trial, and with them, some innocent. These I deplore as much as anybody, and shall deplore some of them to the day of my death. But I deplore them as I should have done, had they fallen in battle. It was necessary to use the arm of the people, a machine not quite so blind as balls and bombs, but blind to a certain degree. A few of their cordial friends met at their hands the fate of enemies. But time and truth will rescue and embalm their memories, while their posterity will be enjoying that very liberty for which they would never have hesitated to offer up their lives. The liberty of the whole earth was depending on the issue of the contest, and was ever such a prize won with so little innocent blood? My own affections have been deeply wounded by some of the martyrs to this cause, but rather than it should have failed, I would have seen half the earth desolated; were there but an Adam and Eve left in every country, and left free, it would be better than as it now is."*

Washington, who contemplated the French revolution with a less sanguine eye than Jefferson, was simply shocked at the atrocities which disgraced it, and at the dangers to be apprehended from an unrestrained populace. A letter which he received from Gouverneur Morris (dated October 23d), placed the condition of the unfortunate Louis XVI., the ancient friend and ally of America, in a light to awaken his benevolent sympathy.

* Letter to Mr. Short. Jefferson's Works, iii. 501.

"You will have seen," writes Morris, "that the king is accused of high crimes and misdemeanors; but I verily believe that he wished sincerely for this nation, the enjoyment of the utmost degree of liberty, which their situation and circumstances will permit. He wished for a good constitution, but, unfortunately, he had not the means to obtain it, or, if he had, he was thwarted by those about him. What may be his fate God only knows, but history informs us that the passage of dethroned monarchs is short from the prison to the grave."

Nothing, however, in all the eventful tidings from France, gave Washington greater concern than the catastrophe of his friend Lafayette. His first thoughts prompted the consolation and assistance of the marchioness. In a letter to her, he writes: "If I had words that could convey to you an adequate idea of my feelings on the present situation of the Marquis Lafayette, this letter would appear to you in a different garb. The sole object in writing to you now, is to inform you that I have deposited in the hands of Mr. Nicholas Van Staphorst of Amsterdam, two thousand three hundred and ten guilders, Holland currency, equal to two hundred guineas, subject to your orders.

"This sum is, I am certain, the least I am indebted for services rendered me by the Marquis de Lafayette, of which I never yet have received the account. I could add much, but it is best, perhaps, that I should say little on this subject. Your goodness will supply my deficiency.

"The uncertainty of your situation, after all the inquiries I have made, has occasioned a delay in this address and remittance; and even now the measure adopted is more the effect of a desire to find where you are, than from any knowledge I have obtained of your residence."

Madame de Lafayette, in fact, was at that time a prisoner in France, in painful ignorance of her husband's fate. She had been commanded by the Jacobin committee to repair to Paris about the time of the massacres, but was subsequently permitted to reside at Chavaniac, under the surveillance of the municipality.

We will anticipate events by adding here, that some time afterwards, finding her husband was a prisoner in Austria, she obtained permission to leave France, and ultimately, with her two daughters, joined him in his prison at Olmutz. George Washington Lafayette, the son of the General, determined to seek an asylum in America.

In the mean time, the arms of revolutionary France were crowned with great success. "Towns fall before them without a blow," writes Gouverneur Morris, "and the declaration of rights produces an effect equal at least to the trumpets of Joshua." But Morris was far from drawing a favorable augury from this success. "We must observe the civil, moral, religious, and political institutions," said he. "These have a steady and lasting effect, and these only. * * * Since I have been in this country, I have seen the worship of many idols, and but little of the true God. I have seen many of those idols broken, and some of them beaten to dust. I have seen the late constitution, in one short year, admired as a stupendous monument of human wisdom, and ridiculed as an egregious production of folly and vice. I wish much, very much, the happiness of this inconstant people. I love them. I feel grateful for their efforts in our cause, and I consider the establishment of a good constitution here as the principal means, under Divine Providence, of extending the blessings of freedom to the many millions of my fellow-men, who groan in bondage on

the continent of Europe. But I do not greatly indulge the flattering illusions of hope, because I do not yet perceive that reformation of morals, without which, liberty is but an empty sound." *

* Life of Morris, ii. 248.

CHAPTER XIX.

WASHINGTON'S ENTRANCE UPON HIS SECOND TERM—GLOOMY AUSPICES—EXECUTION OF LOUIS XVI.—FRANCE DECLARES WAR AGAINST ENGLAND—BELLIGERENT EXCITEMENT IN AMERICA—PROCLAMATION OF NEUTRALITY—FRENCH MISSION TO THE UNITED STATES—GENET ARRIVES IN CHARLESTON—HIS RECEPTION IN PHILADELPHIA—VIEWS OF JEFFERSON AND HAMILTON—WASHINGTON'S DISPASSIONATE OPINION.

It was under gloomy auspices, a divided cabinet, an increasing exasperation of parties, a suspicion of monarchical tendencies, and a threatened abatement of popularity, that Washington entered upon his second term of presidency. It was a portentous period in the history of the world, for in a little while came news of that tragical event, the beheading of Louis XVI. It was an event deplored by many of the truest advocates of liberty in America, who, like Washington, remembered that unfortunate monarch as the friend of their country in her revolutionary struggle; but others, zealots in the cause of political reform, considered it with complacency, as sealing the downfall of the French monarchy and the establishment of a republic.

An event followed hard upon it to shake the quiet of the world. Early in April intelligence was received that France had declared war against England. Popular excitement was now

wound up to the highest pitch. What, it was asked, were Americans to do in such a juncture? Could they remain unconcerned spectators of a conflict between their ancient enemy and republican France? Should they fold their arms and look coldly on a war, begun, it is true, by France, but threatening the subversion of the republic, and the re-establishment of a monarchical government?

Many, in the wild enthusiasm of the moment, would at once have precipitated the country into a war. Fortunately this belligerent impulse was not general, and was checked by the calm, controlling wisdom of Washington. He was at Mount Vernon when he received news of the war, and understood that American vessels were already designated, and some even fitting out to serve in it as privateers. He forthwith despatched a letter to Jefferson on the subject. "War having actually commenced between France and Great Britain," writes he, "it behooves the government of this country to use every means in its power to prevent the citizens thereof from embroiling us with either of those powers, by endeavoring to maintain a strict neutrality."

Hastening back to Philadelphia, he held a cabinet council on the 19th of April, to deliberate on the measures proper to be observed by the United States in the present crisis; and to determine upon a general plan of conduct for the Executive.

In this council it was unanimously determined that a proclamation should be issued by the President, "forbidding the citizens of the United States to take part in any hostilities on the seas, and warning them against carrying to the belligerents any articles deemed contraband according to the modern usages of nations, and forbidding all acts and proceedings inconsistent with the duties of a friendly nation towards those at war."

It was unanimously agreed also, that should the republic of France send a minister to the United States, he should be received.

No one at the present day questions the wisdom of Washington's proclamation of neutrality. It was our true policy to keep aloof from European war, in which our power would be inefficient, our loss certain. The measure, however, was at variance with the enthusiastic feelings and excited passions of a large portion of the citizens. They treated it for a time with some forbearance, out of long-cherished reverence for Washington's name; but his popularity, hitherto unlimited, was no proof against the inflamed state of public feeling. The proclamation was stigmatized as a royal edict; a daring assumption of power; an open manifestation of partiality for England and hostility to France.

Washington saw that a deadly blow was aimed at his influence and his administration, and that both were at hazard; but he was convinced that neutrality was the true national policy, and he resolved to maintain it, whatever might be his immediate loss of popular favor. His resolution was soon put to the test.

The French republic had recently appointed Edmond Charles Genet, or 'Citizen Genet,' as he was styled, minister to the United States. He was represented as a young man of good parts, very well educated, and of an ardent temper. He had served in the bureau of Foreign Affairs under the ministry of Vergennes, and been employed in various diplomatic situations until the overthrow of the monarchy, when he joined the popular party, became a political zealot, and member of the Jacobin club, and was rewarded with the mission to America.

A letter from Gouverneur Morris apprised Mr. Jefferson that

the Executive Council had furnished Genet with three hundred blank commissions for privateers, to be given clandestinely to such persons as he might find in America inclined to take them. "They suppose," writes Morris, "that the avidity of some adventurers may lead them into measures which would involve altercations with Great Britain, and terminate finally in a war."

Genet's conduct proved the correctness of this information. He had landed at Charleston, South Carolina, from the French frigate the Ambuscade, on the 8th of April, a short time before the proclamation of neutrality, and was received with great rejoicing and extravagant demonstrations of respect. His landing at a port several hundred miles from the seat of government, was a singular move for a diplomat; but his object in so doing was soon evident. It is usual for a foreign minister to present his credentials to the government to which he comes, and be received by it in form before he presumes to enter upon the exercise of his functions. Citizen Genet, however, did not stop for these formalities. Confident in his nature, heated in his zeal, and flushed with the popular warmth of his reception, he could not pause to consider the proprieties of his mission and the delicate responsibilities involved in diplomacy. The contiguity of Charleston to the West Indies made it a favorable port for fitting out privateers against the trade of these islands; and during Genet's short sojourn there he issued commissions for arming and equipping vessels of war for that purpose, and manning them with Americans.

In the latter part of April, Genet set out for the north by land. As he proceeded on his journey, the newspapers teemed with accounts of the processions and addresses with which he was greeted, and the festivities which celebrated his arrival at each

place. Jefferson, in a letter to Madison written from Philadelphia on the 5th of May, observes with exultation: "The war between France and England seems to be producing an effect not contemplated. All the old spirit of 1776, rekindling the newspapers from Boston to Charleston, proves this; and even the monocrat papers are obliged to publish the most furious philippics against England. A French frigate* took a British prize [the Grange] off the Capes of Delaware the other day, and sent her up here. Upon her coming into sight, thousands and thousands of the *yeomanry* of the city crowded and covered the wharves. Never was there such a crowd seen there; and when the British colors were seen reversed, and the French flying above them, they burst into peals of exultation. I wish we may be able to repress the spirit of the people within the limits of a fair neutrality. * * * We expect Genet daily."

A friend of Hamilton writes in a different vein. Speaking of Genet, he observes: "He has a good person, a fine ruddy complexion, quite active, and seems always in a bustle, more like a busy man than a man of business. A Frenchman in his manners, he announces himself in all companies as the minister of the republic, etc., talks freely of his commission, and, like most Europeans, seems to have adopted mistaken notions of the penetration and knowledge of the people of the United States. His system, I think, is to laugh us into the war if he can."

On the 16th of May, Genet arrived at Philadelphia. His belligerent operations at Charleston had already been made a subject of complaint to the government by Mr. Hammond, the British minister; but they produced no abatement in the public

* The Ambuscade.

enthusiasm. "It was suspected," writes Jefferson, "that there was not a clear mind in the President's counsellors to receive Genet. The citizens, however, determined to receive him. Arrangements were taken for meeting him at Gray's Ferry, in a great body. He escaped that, by arriving in town with the letters which brought information that he was on the road." *

On the following day, various societies and a large body of citizens waited upon him with addresses, recalling with gratitude the aid given by France in the achievement of American independence, and extolling and rejoicing in the success of the arms of the French republic. On the same day, before Genet had presented his credentials and been acknowledged by the President, he was invited to a grand republican dinner, "at which," we are told, "the company united in singing the Marseilles Hymn. A deputation of French sailors presented themselves, and were received by the guests with the 'fraternal embrace.' The table was decorated with the 'tree of liberty,' and a red cap, called the cap of liberty, was placed on the head of the minister, and from his travelled in succession from head to head round the table." †

This enthusiasm of the multitude was regarded with indulgence, if not favor, by Jefferson, as being the effervescence of the true spirit of liberty; but was deprecated by Hamilton as an infatuation that might "do us much harm, and could do France no good." A letter, written by him at the time, is worthy of full citation, as embodying the sentiments of that party of which he was the leader. "It cannot be without danger and inconvenience

* Letter to Madison, Works iii. 562.
† Jay's Life, vol. i., p. 301.

to our interests, to impress on the nations of Europe an idea that we are actuated by the same spirit which has for some time past fatally misguided the measures of those who conduct the affairs of France, and sullied a cause once glorious, and that might have been triumphant. The cause of France is compared with that of America during its late revolution. Would to Heaven that the comparison were just! Would to Heaven we could discern, in the mirror of French affairs, the same decorum, the same gravity, the same order, the same dignity, the same solemnity, which distinguished the cause of the American Revolution! Clouds and darkness would not then rest upon the issue as they now do. I own I do not like the comparison. When I contemplate the horrid and systematic massacres of the 2d and 3d of September; when I observe that a Marat and a Robespierre, the notorious prompters of those bloody scenes, sit triumphantly in the convention, and take a conspicuous part in its measures—that an attempt to bring the assassins to justice has been obliged to be abandoned—when I see an unfortunate prince, whose reign was a continued demonstration of the goodness and benevolence of his heart, of his attachment to the people of whom he was the monarch, who, though educated in the lap of despotism, had given repeated proofs that he was not the enemy of liberty, brought precipitately and ignominiously to the block without any substantial proof of guilt, as yet disclosed—without even an authentic exhibition of motives, in decent regard to the opinions of mankind; when I find the doctrines of atheism openly advanced in the convention, and heard with loud applauses; when I see the sword of fanaticism extended to force a political creed upon citizens who were invited to submit to the arms of France as the harbingers of liberty; when I behold the hand of rapacity out-

stretched to prostrate and ravish the monuments of religious worship, erected by those citizens and their ancestors; when I perceive passion, tumult and violence usurping those seats, where reason and cool deliberation ought to preside, I acknowledge that I am glad to believe there is no real resemblance between what was the cause of America and what is the cause of France; that the difference is no less great than that between liberty and licentiousness. I regret whatever has a tendency to confound them, and I feel anxious, as an American, that the ebullitions of inconsiderate men among us may not tend to involve our reputation in the issue." *

Washington, from his elevated and responsible situation, endeavored to look beyond the popular excitement, and regard the affairs of France with a dispassionate and impartial eye, but he confessed that he saw in the turn they had lately taken the probability of a terrible confusion, to which he could predict no certain issue: a boundless ocean whence no land was to be seen. He feared less, he said, for the cause of liberty in France from the pressure of foreign enemies, than from the strifes and quarrels of those in whose hands the government was intrusted, who were ready to tear each other to pieces, and would more probably prove the worst foes the country had.

* Hamilton's Works, v. 566.

CHAPTER XX.

GENET PRESENTS HIS LETTER OF CREDENCE—HIS DIPLOMATIC SPEECH—WASHINGTON'S CONVERSATION WITH JEFFERSON—CAPTURE OF THE SHIP GRANGE AND OTHER BRITISH VESSELS—QUESTION OF RESTITUTION—DISSATISFACTION OF GENET—DEMANDS RELEASE OF TWO AMERICAN CITIZENS—WASHINGTON'S SENSITIVENESS TO THE ATTACKS OF THE PRESS—HIS UNSHAKEN DETERMINATION.

On the 18th of May, Genet presented his letter of credence to the President; by whom, notwithstanding his late unwarrantable proceedings at Charleston, he was well received; Washington taking the occasion to express his sincere regard for the French nation.

Jefferson, who, as Secretary of State, was present, had all his warm sympathies in favor of France, roused by Genet's diplomatic speech. "It was impossible," writes he to Madison, "for any thing to be more affectionate, more magnanimous, than the purport of Genet's mission. 'We wish you to do nothing,' said he, 'but what is for your own good, and we will do all in our power to promote it. Cherish your own peace and prosperity. You have expressed a willingness to enter into a more liberal commerce with us; I bring full powers to form such a treaty, and

a preliminary decree of the National Convention to lay open our country and its colonies to you, for every purpose of utility, without your participating the burthens of maintaining and defending them. We see in you, the only person on earth who can love us sincerely, and merit to be so loved.' In short, he offers every thing and asks nothing."

"Yet I know the offers will be opposed," adds Jefferson, "and suspect they will not be accepted. In short, my dear sir, it is impossible for you to conceive what is passing in our conclave; and it is evident that one or two, at least, under pretence of avoiding war on the one side, have no great antipathy to run foul of it on the other, and to make a part in the confederacy of princes against human liberty."

The 'one or two,' in the paragraph above cited, no doubt, imply Hamilton and Knox.

Washington again, in conversation, endeavored to counteract these suspicions which were swaying Jefferson's mind against his contemporaries. We give Jefferson's own account of the conversation. "He (Washington) observed that, if anybody wanted to change the form of our government into a monarchy, he was sure it was only a few individuals, and that no man in the United States would set his face against it, more than himself; but, that this was not what he was afraid of; his fears were from another quarter; that *there was more danger of anarchy being introduced.*"

He then adverted to Freneau's paper and its partisan hostilities. He despised, he said, all personal attacks upon himself, but observed that there never had been an act of the government which that paper had not abused. "He was evidently sore and warm," adds Jefferson, "and I took his intention to be, that I

should interpose in some way with Freneau; perhaps, withdraw his appointment of translating clerk in my office. But I will not do it."

It appears to us rather an ungracious determination on the part of Jefferson, to keep this barking cur in his employ, when he found him so annoying to the chief, whom he professed, and we believe with sincerity, to revere. Neither are his reasons for so doing satisfactory, savoring, as they do, of those strong political suspicions already noticed. "His (Freneau's) paper," observed he, "has saved our constitution, which was galloping fast into monarchy, and has been checked by no means so powerfully as by that paper. It is well and universally known, that it has been that paper which checked the career of the monocrats; the President, not sensible of the designs of the party, has not, with his usual good sense and *sang froid*, looked on the efforts and effects of this free press, and seen that, though some bad things have passed through it to the public, yet the good have preponderated immensely." *

Jefferson was mistaken. Washington had regarded the efforts and effects of this free press with his usual good sense; and the injurious influence it exercised in public affairs, was presently manifested in the transactions of the government with Genet. The acts of this diplomatic personage at Charleston, had not been the sole ground of the complaint preferred by the British minister. The capture of the British vessel, the Grange, by the frigate Ambuscade, formed a graver one. Occurring within our waters, it was a clear usurpation of national sovereignty, and a violation of neutral rights. The British minister demanded a

* Works, ix. 143.

restitution of the prize, and the cabinet were unanimously of opinion that restitution should be made; nor was there any difficulty with the French minister on this head; but restitution was likewise claimed of other vessels captured on the high seas, and brought into port by the privateers authorized by Genet. In regard to these there was a difference of sentiment in the cabinet. Hamilton and Knox were of opinion that the government should interpose to restore the prizes; it being the duty of a neutral nation to remedy any injury sustained by armaments fitted out in its ports. Jefferson and Randolph contended that the case should be left to the decision of the courts of justice. If the courts adjudged the commissions issued by Genet to be invalid, they would, of course, decide the captures made under them to be void, and the property to remain in the original owners; if, on the other hand, the legal right to the property had been transferred to the captors, they would so decide.

Seeing this difference of opinion in the cabinet, Washington reserved the point for further deliberation; but directed the Secretary of State to communicate to the ministers of France and Britain, the principles in which they concurred; these being considered as settled. Circular letters, also, were addressed to the Governors of several States, requiring their co-operation, with force, if necessary, to carry out the rules agreed upon.

Genet took umbrage at these decisions of the government, and expressed his dissatisfaction in a letter, complaining of them as violations of natural right, and subversive of the existing treaties between the two nations. His letter, though somewhat wanting in strict decorum of language, induced a review of the subject in the cabinet; and he was informed that no reason appeared for changing the system adopted. He was further in-

formed that in the opinion of the executive, the vessels which had been illegally equipped, should depart from the ports of the United States.

Genet was not disposed to acquiesce in these decisions. He was aware of the grateful feelings of the nation to France: of the popular disposition to go all lengths short of war, in her favor; of the popular idea, that republican interests were identical on both sides of the Atlantic; that a royal triumph over republicanism in Europe, would be followed by a combination to destroy it in this country. He had heard the clamor among the populace, and uttered in Freneau's Gazette and other newspapers, against the policy of neutrality; the people, he thought, were with him, if Washington was not, and he believed the latter would not dare to risk his popularity in thwarting their enthusiasm. He persisted, therefore, in disregarding the decisions of the government, and spoke of them as a departure from the obligations it owed to France; a cowardly abandonment of friends when danger menaced.

Another event added to the irritation of Genet. Two American citizens, whom he had engaged at Charleston, to cruise in the service of France, were arrested on board of the privateer, conducted to prison, and prosecutions commenced against them. The indignant feelings of Genet were vented in an extraordinary letter to the Secretary of State. When speaking of their arrest, "The crime laid to their charge," writes he—"the crime which my mind cannot conceive, and which my pen almost refuses to state—is the serving of France, and defending with her children the common glorious cause of liberty.

"Being ignorant of any positive law or treaty, which deprives Americans of this privilege, and authorizes officers of police arbi-

trarily to take mariners in the service of France from on board of their vessels, I call upon your intervention, sir, and that of the President of the United States, in order to obtain the immediate releasement of the above-mentioned officers, who have acquired, by the sentiments animating them, and by the act of their engagement, anterior to any act to the contrary, the right of French citizens, if they have lost that of American citizens."

The lofty and indignant tone of this letter had no effect in shaking the determination of government, or obtaining the release of the prisoners. Washington confesses, however, that he was very much harried and perplexed by the "disputes, memorials, and what not," with which he was pestered, by one or other of the powers at war. It was a sore trial of his equanimity, his impartiality, and his discrimination, and wore upon his spirits and his health. "The President is not well," writes Jefferson to Madison (June 9th); "little lingering fevers have been hanging about him for a week or ten days, and affected his looks most remarkably. He is also extremely affected by the attacks made and kept up on him, in the public papers. I think he feels these things more than any other person I ever yet met with. I am sincerely sorry to see them."

Jefferson's sorrow was hardly in accordance with the resolution expressed by him, to retain Freneau in his office, notwithstanding his incessant attacks upon the President and the measures of his government. Washington might well feel sensitive to these attacks, which Jefferson acknowledges were the more mischievous, from being planted on popular ground, on the universal love of the people to France and its cause. But he was not to be deterred by personal considerations, from the strict line of his duty. He

was aware that, in withstanding the public infatuation in regard to France, he was putting an unparalleled popularity at hazard; but he put it at hazard without hesitation; and, in so doing, set a magnanimous example for his successors in office to endeavor to follow.

CHAPTER XXI.

WASHINGTON CALLED TO MOUNT VERNON—THE CASE OF THE LITTLE SARAH COMES UP IN HIS ABSENCE—GOVERNOR MIFFLIN DETERMINED TO PREVENT HER DEPARTURE—RAGE OF GENET—JEFFERSON URGES DETENTION OF THE PRIVATEER UNTIL THE PRESIDENT'S RETURN—EVASIVE ASSURANCE OF GENET—DISTRUST OF HAMILTON AND KNOX—WASHINGTON RETURNS TO PHILADELPHIA—A CABINET COUNCIL—ITS DETERMINATION COMMUNICATED TO GENET—THE VESSEL SAILS IN DEFIANCE OF IT—FORMATION OF THE DEMOCRATIC SOCIETY—THE RECALL OF GENET DETERMINED ON—THE RIBALD LAMPOON—WASHINGTON'S OUTBURST.

In the latter part of July, Washington was suddenly called to Mount Vernon by the death of Mr. Whiting, the manager of his estates. During his brief absence from the seat of government, occurred the case of the Little Sarah. This was a British merchant vessel which had been captured by a French privateer, and brought into Philadelphia, where she had been armed and equipped for privateering; manned with one hundred and twenty men, many of them Americans, and her name changed into that of *Le Petit Democrat.* This, of course, was in violation of Washington's decision, which had been communicated to Genet.

General Mifflin, now Governor of Pennsylvania, being informed, on the 6th of July, that the vessel was to sail the next day,

sent his secretary, Mr. Dallas, at midnight to Genet, to persuade him to detain her until the President should arrive, intimating that otherwise force would be used to prevent her departure.

Genet flew into one of the transports of passion to which he was prone; contrasted the treatment experienced by him from the officers of government, with the attachment to his nation professed by the people at large; declared that the President was not the sovereign of the country, and had no right, without consulting Congress, to give such instructions as he had issued to the State Governors; threatened to appeal from his decision to the people, and to repel force by force, should an attempt be made to seize the privateer.

Apprised of this menace, Governor Mifflin forthwith ordered out one hundred and twenty of the militia to take possession of the privateer, and communicated the circumstances of the case to the cabinet.

Mr. Jefferson now took the matter in hand, and, on the 7th of July, in an interview with Genet, repeated the request that the privateer be detained until the arrival of the President. Genet, he writes, instantly took up the subject in a very high tone, and went into an immense field of declamation and complaint. Jefferson made a few efforts to be heard, but, finding them ineffectual, suffered the torrent of vituperation to pour on. He sat in silence, therefore, while Genet charged the government with having violated the treaties between the two nations; with having suffered its flag to be insulted and disregarded by the English; who stopped its vessels on the high seas, and took out of them whatever they suspected to be French property. He declared that he had been thwarted and opposed in every thing he had to do with the government; so that he sometimes thought of packing

up and going away, as he found he could not be useful to his nation in any thing. He censured the executive for the measures it had taken without consulting Congress, and declared, that, on the President's return, he would certainly press him to convene that body.

He had by this time exhausted his passion and moderated his tone, and Jefferson took occasion to say a word. "I stopped him," writes he, "at the subject of calling Congress; explained our constitution to him as having divided the functions of government among three different authorities, the executive, legislative, and judiciary, each of which were supreme on all questions belonging to their department, and independent of the others; that all the questions which had arisen between him and us, belonged to the executive department, and, if Congress were sitting, could not be carried to them, nor would they take notice of them."

Genet asked with surprise, if Congress were not the sovereign.

"No," replied Jefferson. "They are sovereign only in making laws; the executive is the sovereign in executing them, and the judiciary in construing them, where they relate to that department."

"But at least," cried Genet, "Congress are bound to see that the treaties are observed." "No," rejoined Jefferson. "There are very few cases, indeed, arising out of treaties, which they can take notice of. The President is to see that treaties are observed."

"If he decides against the treaty," demanded Genet, "to whom is a nation to appeal?" "The constitution," replied Jefferson, "has made the President the last appeal."

Genet, perfectly taken aback at finding his own ignorance in

the matter, shrugged his shoulders, made a bow, and said, "he would not compliment Mr. Jefferson on such a constitution!"

He had now subsided into coolness and good humor, and the subject of the Little Sarah being resumed, Jefferson pressed her detention until the President's return; intimating that her previous departure would be considered a very serious offence.

Genet made no promise, but expressed himself very happy to be able to inform Mr. Jefferson that the vessel was not in a state of readiness; she had to change her position that day, he said, and fall down the river, somewhere about the lower end of the town, for the convenience of taking some things on board, and would not depart yet.

When Jefferson endeavored to extort an assurance that she would await the President's return, he evaded a direct committal, intimating however, by look and gesture, that she would not be gone before that time. "But let me beseech you," said he, "not to permit any attempt to put men on board of her. She is filled with high-spirited patriots, and they will unquestionably resist. And there is no occasion, for I tell you she will not be ready to depart for some time."

Jefferson was accordingly impressed with the belief that the privateer would remain in the river until the President should decide on her case, and, on communicating this conviction to the Governor, the latter ordered the militia to be dismissed.

Hamilton and Knox, on the other hand, were distrustful, and proposed the immediate erection of a battery on Mud Island, with guns mounted to fire at the vessel, and even to sink her, if she attempted to pass. Jefferson, however, refusing to concur in the

measure, it was not adopted. The vessel, at that time, was at Gloucester Point, but soon fell down to Chester.

Washington arrived at Philadelphia on the 11th of July; when papers requiring "instant attention" were put into his hands. They related to the case of the Little Sarah, and were from Jefferson, who, being ill with fever, had retired to his seat in the country. Nothing could exceed the displeasure of Washington when he examined these papers.

In a letter written to Jefferson, on the spur of the moment, he puts these indignant queries: "What is to be done in the case of the Little Sarah, now at Chester? Is the minister of the French republic to set the acts of this government at defiance *with impunity?* And then threaten the executive with an appeal to the people! What must the world think of such conduct, and of the government of the United States in submitting to it?

"These are serious questions. Circumstances press for decision, and, as you have had time to consider them (upon me they come unexpectedly), I wish to know your opinion upon them, even before to-morrow, for the vessel may then be gone."

Mr. Jefferson, in a reply of the same date, informed the President of his having received assurance, that day, from Mr. Genet, that the vessel would not be gone before his (the President's) decision.

In consequence of this assurance of the French minister, no immediate measures of a coercive nature were taken with regard to the vessel; but, in a cabinet council held the next day, it was determined to detain in port all privateers which had been equipped within the United States by any of the belligerent powers.

No time was lost in communicating this determination to Genet; but, in defiance of it, the vessel sailed on her cruise.

It must have been a severe trial of Washington's spirit to see his authority thus braved and insulted, and to find that the people, notwithstanding the indignity thus offered to their chief magistrate, sided with the aggressors, and exulted in their open defiance of his neutral policy.

About this time a society was formed under the auspices of the French minister, and in imitation of the Jacobin clubs of Paris. It was called the Democratic Society, and soon gave rise to others throughout the Union; all taking the French side in the present questions. The term democrat, thenceforward, began to designate an ultra-republican.

Fresh mortifications awaited Washington, from the distempered state of public sentiment. The trial came on of Gideon Henfield, an American citizen, prosecuted under the advice of the Attorney General, for having enlisted, at Charleston, on board of a French privateer which had brought prizes into the port of Philadelphia. The populace took part with Henfield. He had enlisted before the proclamation of neutrality had been published, and even if he had enlisted at a later date, was he to be punished for engaging with their ancient ally, France, in the cause of liberty against the royal despots of Europe? His acquittal exposed Washington to the obloquy of having attempted a measure which the laws would not justify. It showed him, moreover, the futility of attempts at punishment for infractions of the rules proclaimed for the preservation of neutrality; while the clamorous rejoicing by which the acquittal of Henfield had been celebrated, evinced the popular disposition to thwart that line of policy which he considered most calculated to promote the public good. Nothing,

however, could induce him to swerve from that policy. "I have consolation within," said he, "that no earthly effort can deprive me of, and that is, that neither ambitious nor interested motives have influenced my conduct. The arrows of malevolence, therefore, however barbed and well pointed, can never reach the most vulnerable part of me; though, whilst I am set up as a *mark* they will be continually aimed." *

Hitherto Washington had exercised great forbearance toward the French minister, notwithstanding the little respect shown by the latter to the rights of the United States; but the official communications of Genet were becoming too offensive and insulting to be longer tolerated. Meetings of the heads of departments and the Attorney General were held at the President's on he 1st and 2d of August, in which the whole of the official correspondence and conduct of Genet was passed in review; and it was agreed that his recall should be desired. Jefferson recommended that the desire should be expressed with great delicacy; the others were for peremptory terms. Knox was for sending him off at once, but this proposition was generally scouted. In the end it was agreed that a letter should be written to Gouverneur Morris, giving a statement of the case, with accompanying documents, that he might lay the whole before the executive council of France, and explain the reason for desiring the recall of Mr. Genet.

It was proposed that a publication of the whole correspondence, and a statement of the proceedings, should be made by way of appeal to the people. This produced animated debates. Hamilton spoke with great warmth in favor of an appeal. Jef-

* Letter to Gov. Lee. Sparks, x. 359.

ferson opposed it. "Genet," said he, "will appeal also; it will become a contest betwen the President and Genet. Anonymous writers will take it up. There will be the same difference of opinion in *public* as in our cabinet—there will be the same difference in *Congress*, for it must be laid before them. It would work, therefore, very unpleasantly *at home*. How would it work *abroad?*"

Washington, already weary and impatient, under the incessant dissensions of his cabinet, was stung by the suggestion that he might be held up as in conflict with Genet, and subjected, as he had been, to the ribaldry of the press. At this unlucky moment Knox blundered forth with a specimen of the scandalous libels already in circulation; a pasquinade lately printed, called the Funeral of George Washington, wherein the President was represented as placed upon a guillotine, a horrible parody on the late decapitation of the French King. "The President," writes Jefferson, "now burst forth into one of those transports of passion beyond his control; inveighed against the personal abuse which had been bestowed upon him, and defied any man on earth to produce a single act of his since he had been in the government that had not been done on the purest motives.

"He had never repented but once the having slipped the moment of resigning his office, and that was every moment since. In the agony of his heart he declared that he had rather be in his grave than in his present situation; that he had rather be on his farm than to be made emperor of the world—and yet, said he, indignantly, they are charging me with wanting to be a king!

"All were silent during this burst of feeling—a pause ensued—it was difficult to resume the question. Washington, however, who had recovered his equanimity, put an end to the difficulty.

There was no necessity, he said, for deciding the matter at present; the propositions agreed to, respecting the letter to Mr. Morris, might be put into a train of execution, and, perhaps, events would show whether the appeal would be necessary or not." *

* Jefferson's Works, ix. 164.

CHAPTER XXII.

THREATENED DISSOLUTION OF THE CABINET—ACTION BETWEEN THE AMBUSCADE AND BOSTON—TRIUMPHANT RETURN OF THE FORMER TO NEW YORK—A FRENCH FLEET ARRIVES SAME DAY—EXCITEMENT OF THE PEOPLE—GENET ARRIVES IN THE MIDST OF IT—HIS ENTHUSIASTIC RECEPTION—IS INFORMED BY JEFFERSON OF THE MEASURES FOR HIS RECALL—HIS RAGE AND REPLY—DECLINE OF HIS POPULARITY.

WASHINGTON had hitherto been annoyed and perplexed by having to manage a divided cabinet; he was now threatened with that cabinet's dissolution. Mr. Hamilton had informed him by letter, that private as well as public reasons had determined him to retire from office towards the close of the next session; probably with a view to give Congress an opportunity to examine into his conduct. Now came a letter from Mr. Jefferson, dated July 31st, in which he recalled the circumstances which had induced him to postpone for a while his original intention of retiring from office at the close of the first four years of the republic. These circumstances, he observed, had now ceased to such a degree as to leave him free to think again of a day on which to withdraw; "at the close, therefore, of the ensuing month of September, I shall beg leave to retire to scenes of greater tranquillity, from those for

which I am every day more and more convinced that neither my talents, tone of mind, nor time of life fit me."

Washington was both grieved and embarrassed by this notification. Full of concern, he called upon Jefferson at his country residence near Philadelphia; pictured his deep distress at finding himself, in the present perplexing juncture of affairs, about to be deserted by those of his cabinet on whose counsel he had counted, and whose places he knew not where to find persons competent to supply; and, in his chagrin, again expressed his repentance that he himself had not resigned as he had once meditated.

The public mind, he went on to observe, was in an alarming state of ferment; political combinations of various kinds were forming; where all this would end he knew not. A new Congress was to assemble, more numerous than the last, perhaps of a different spirit; the first expressions of its sentiments would be important, and it would relieve him considerably if Jefferson would remain in office, if it were only until the end of the session.

Jefferson, in reply, pleaded an excessive repugnance to public life; and, what seems to have influenced him more sensibly, the actual uneasiness of his position. He was obliged, he said, to move in exactly the circle which he knew to bear him peculiar hatred; "the wealthy aristocrats, the merchants connected closely with England; the newly-created paper fortunes." Thus surrounded, his words were caught, multiplied, misconstrued, and even fabricated, and spread abroad to his injury.

Mr. Jefferson pleaded, moreover, that the opposition of views between Mr. Hamilton and himself was peculiarly unpleasant, and destructive of the necessary harmony. With regard to the republican party he was sure it had not a view which went to the

frame of the government; he believed the next Congress would attempt nothing material but to render their own body independent; the manœuvres of Mr. Genet might produce some little embarrassment, but the republicans would abandon that functionary the moment they knew the nature of his conduct.

Washington replied, that he believed the views of the republican party to be perfectly pure: "but when men put a machine into motion;" said he, "it is impossible for them to stop it exactly where they would choose, or to say where it will stop. The constitution we have is an excellent one, if we can keep it where it is."

He again adverted to Jefferson's constant suspicion that there was a party disposed to change the constitution into a monarchical form, declaring that there was not a man in the United States who would set his face more decidedly against such a change than himself.

"No rational man in the United States suspects you of any other disposition," cried Jefferson; "but there does not pass a week in which we cannot prove declarations dropping from the monarchical party, that our government is good for nothing; is a milk-and-water thing which cannot support itself; that we must knock it down and set up something with more energy."

"If that is the case," rejoined Washington, "it is a proof of their insanity, for the republican spirit of the Union is so manifest and so solid that it is astonishing how any one can expect to move it."

We have only Jefferson's account of this and other interesting interviews of a confidential nature which he had with the President, and we give them generally almost in his own words, through which, partial as they may have been, we discern Wash-

ington's constant efforts to moderate the growing antipathies between the eminent men whom he had sought to assist him in conducting the government. He continued to have the highest opinion of Jefferson's abilities, his knowledge of foreign affairs, his thorough patriotism; and it was his earnest desire to retain him in his cabinet through the whole of the ensuing session of Congress; before the close of which he trusted the affairs of the country relating to foreign powers, Indian disturbances, and internal policy, would have taken a more decisive, and it was to be hoped agreeable form than they then had. A compromise was eventually made, according to which Jefferson was to be allowed a temporary absence in the autumn, and on his return was to continue in office until January.

In the mean time Genet had proceeded to New York, which very excitable city was just then in a great agitation. The frigate Ambuscade, while anchored in the harbor, had been challenged to single combat by the British frigate Boston, Captain Courtney, which was cruising off the Hook. The challenge was accepted; a severe action ensued; Courtney was killed; and the Boston, much damaged, was obliged to stand for Halifax. The Ambuscade returned triumphant to New York, and entered the port amid the enthusiastic cheers of the populace. On the same day, a French fleet of fifteen sail arrived from the Chesapeake and anchored in the Hudson river. The officers and crews were objects of unbounded favor with all who inclined to the French cause. Bompard, the commander of the Ambuscade, was the hero of the day. Tri-colored cockades, and tri-colored ribbons were to be seen on every side, and rude attempts to chant the Marseilles Hymn and the Carmagnole resounded through the streets.

In the midst of this excitement, the ringing of bells and the firing of cannon announced that Citizen Genet was arrived at Powles Hook Ferry, directly opposite the city. There was an immediate assemblage of the republican party in the fields now called the Park. A committee was appointed to escort Genet into the city. He entered it amid the almost frantic cheerings of the populace. Addresses were made to him, expressing devoted attachment to the French republic, and abjuring all neutrality in regard to its heroic struggle. "The cause of France is the cause of America," cried the enthusiasts, "it is time to distinguish its friends from its foes." Genet looked round him. The tri-colored cockade figured in the hats of the shouting multitude; tri-colored ribbons fluttered from the dresses of females in the windows; the French flag was hoisted on the top of the Tontine Coffee House (the City Exchange), surmounted by the cap of liberty. Can we wonder that what little discretion Genet possessed, was completely overborne by this tide of seeming popularity?

In the midst of his self-gratulation and complacency, however, he received a letter from Mr. Jefferson (Sept. 15th), acquainting him with the measures taken to procure his recall, and inclosing a copy of the letter written for that purpose to the American minister at Paris. It was added that, out of anxious regard lest the interests of France might suffer, the Executive would, in the mean time, receive his (M. Genet's) communications in writing, and admit the continuance of his functions so long as they should be restrained within the law as theretofore announced to him, and should be of the tenor usually observed towards independent nations, by the representative of a friendly power residing with them.

The letter of the Secretary of State threw Genet into a violent passion, and produced a reply (Sept. 18th), written while he was still in a great heat. In this he attributed his disfavor with the American government to the machinations of "those gentlemen who had so often been represented to him as aristocrats, partisans of monarchy, partisans of England and her constitution, and consequently enemies of the principles which all good Frenchmen had embraced with religious enthusiasm." "These persons," he said, "alarmed by the popularity which the zeal of the American people for the cause of France had shed upon her minister; alarmed also by his inflexible and incorruptible attachment to the severe maxims of democracy, were striving to ruin him in his own country, after having united all their efforts to calumniate him in the minds of their fellow-citizens."

"These people," observes he, "instead of a democratic ambassador, would prefer a minister of the ancient regime, very complaisant, very gentle, very disposed to pay court to people in office, to conform blindly to every thing which flattered their views and projects; above all, to prefer to the sure and modest society of good farmers, simple citizens, and honest artisans, that of distinguished personages who speculate so patriotically in the public funds, in the lands, and the paper of government."

In his heat, Genet resented the part Mr. Jefferson had taken, notwithstanding their cordial intimacy, in the present matter, although this part had merely been the discharge of an official duty. "Whatever, Sir," writes Genet, "may be the result of the exploit of which you have rendered yourself the generous instrument, after having made me believe that you were my friend, after having initiated me in the mysteries which have influenced my hatred against all those who aspire to absolute power, there is an act of

justice which the American people, which the French people, which all free people are interested in demanding; it is, that a particular inquiry should be made, in the approaching Congress, into the motives which have induced the chief of the executive power of the United States to take upon himself to demand the recall of a public minister, whom the sovereign people of the United States had received fraternally and recognized, before the diplomatic forms had been fulfilled in respect to him at Philadelphia."

The wrongs of which Genet considered himself entitled to complain against the executive, commenced before his introduction to that functionary. It was the proclamation of neutrality which first grieved his spirit. "I was extremely wounded," writes he, "that the President of the United States should haste, before knowing what I had to transmit on the part of the French republic, to proclaim sentiments over which decency and friendship should at least have thrown a veil."

He was grieved, moreover, that on his first audience, the President had spoken only of the friendship of the United States for France, without uttering a word or expressing a single sentiment in regard to its revolution, although all the towns, all the villages from Charleston to Philadelphia, had made the air resound with their ardent voices for the French republic. And what further grieved his spirit was, to observe "that this first magistrate of a free people had decorated his saloon with certain medallions of Capet [meaning Louis XVI.] and his family, which served in Paris for rallying signs."

We forbear to cite further this angry and ill-judged letter. Unfortunately for Genet's ephemeral popularity, a rumor got abroad that he had expressed a determination to appeal from the

President to the people. This at first was contradicted, but was ultimately established by a certificate of Chief Justice Jay and Mr. Rufus King, of the United States Senate, which was published in the papers.

The spirit of audacity thus manifested by a foreign minister shocked the national pride. Meetings were held in every part of the Union to express the public feeling in the matter. In these meetings the proclamation of neutrality and the system of measures flowing from it, were sustained, partly from a conviction of their wisdom and justice, but more from an undiminished affection for the person and character of Washington; for many who did not espouse his views, were ready to support him in the exercise of his constitutional functions. The warm partisans of Genet, however, were the more vehement in his support from the temporary ascendency of the other party. They advocated his right to appeal from the President to the people. The President, they argued, was invested with no sanctity to make such an act criminal. In a republican country the people were the real sovereigns.

CHAPTER XXIII.

NEUTRALITY ENDANGERED BY GREAT BRITAIN—HER ILL-ADVISED MEASURES—DETENTION OF VESSELS BOUND FOR FRANCE—IMPRESSMENT OF AMERICAN SEAMEN—PERSISTENCE IN HOLDING THE WESTERN POSTS—CONGRESS ASSEMBLES IN DECEMBER—THE PRESIDENT'S OPENING SPEECH—HIS CENSURE OF GENET—THE VICE-PRESIDENT'S ALLUSION TO IT—THE ADMINISTRATION IN A MINORITY IN THE HOUSE—PROCLAMATION OF NEUTRALITY SUSTAINED—JEFFERSON'S REPORT—RETIRES FROM THE CABINET—HIS PARTING REBUKE TO GENET—HIS CHARACTER OF WASHINGTON.

While the neutrality of the United States, so jealously guarded by Washington, was endangered by the intrigues of the French minister, it was put to imminent hazard by ill-advised measures of the British cabinet.

There was such a scarcity in France, in consequence of the failure of the crops, that a famine was apprehended. England, availing herself of her naval ascendency, determined to increase the distress of her rival by cutting off all her supplies from abroad. In June, 1793, therefore, her cruisers were instructed to detain all vessels bound to France with cargoes of corn, flour, or meal, take them into port, unload them, purchase the cargoes, make a proper allowance for the freight, and then release the vessels; or to allow the masters of them, on a stipulated security, to dispose

of their cargoes in a port in amity with England. This measure gave umbrage to all parties in the United States, and brought out an earnest remonstrance from the government, as being a violation of the law of neutrals, and indefensible on any proper construction of the law of nations.

Another grievance which helped to swell the tide of resentment against Great Britain, was the frequent impressment of American seamen, a wrong to which they were particularly exposed from national similarity.

To these may be added the persistence of Great Britain in holding the posts to the south of the lakes, which, according to treaty stipulations, ought to have been given up. Washington did not feel himself in a position to press our rights under the treaty, with the vigorous hand that some would urge; questions having risen in some of the State courts, to obstruct the fulfilment of our part of it, which regarded the payment of British debts contracted before the war.

The violent partisans of France thought nothing of these shortcomings on our own part; and would have had the forts seized at once; but Washington considered a scrupulous discharge of our own obligations the necessary preliminary, should so violent a measure be deemed advisable. His prudent and conscientious conduct in this particular, so in unison with the impartial justice which governed all his actions, was cited by partisan writers, as indicative of his preference of England to "our ancient ally."

The hostilities of the Indians north of the Ohio, by many attributed to British wiles, still continued. The attempts at an amicable negotiation had proved as fruitless as Washington had anticipated. The troops under Wayne had, therefore, taken the

field to act offensively; but from the lateness of the season, had formed a winter camp near the site of the present city of Cincinnati, whence Wayne was to open his campaign in the ensuing spring.

Congress assembled on the 2d of December (1793), with various causes of exasperation at work; the intrigues of Genet and the aggressions of England, uniting to aggravate to a degree of infatuation the partiality for France, and render imminent the chance of a foreign war.

Washington, in his opening speech, after expressing his deep and respectful sense of the renewed testimony of public approbation manifested in his re-election, proceeded to state the measures he had taken, in consequence of the war in Europe, to protect the rights and interests of the United States, and maintain peaceful relations with the belligerent parties. Still he pressed upon Congress the necessity of placing the country in a condition of complete defence. "The United States," said he, "ought not to indulge a persuasion that, contrary to the order of human events, they will forever keep at a distance those painful appeals to arms with which the history of every nation abounds. There is a rank due to the United States among nations, which will be withheld, if not absolutely lost, by the reputation of weakness. If we desire to avoid insult, we must be able to repel it; if we desire to secure peace—one of the most powerful instruments of our prosperity—it must be known that we are, at all times, ready for war." In the spirit of these remarks, he urged measures to increase the amount of arms and ammunition in the arsenals, and to improve the militia establishment.

One part of his speech conveyed an impressive admonition to the House of Representatives: "No pecuniary consideration is

more urgent than the regular redemption and discharge of the public debt; in none can delay be more injurious, or an economy of time more valuable."

The necessity of augmenting the public revenue in a degree commensurate with the objects suggested, was likewise touched upon.

In concluding his speech, he endeavored to impress upon his hearers the magnitude of their task, the important interests confided to them, and the conscientiousness that should reign over their deliberations. "Without an unprejudiced coolness, the welfare of the government may be hazarded; without harmony, as far as consists with freedom of sentiment, its dignity may be lost. But, as the legislative proceedings of the United States will never, I trust, be reproached for the want of temper or of candor, so shall not the public happiness languish from the want of my strenuous and warmest co-operation."

In a message to both Houses, on the 5th of December, concerning foreign relations, Washington spoke feelingly with regard to those with the representative and executive bodies of France: "It is with extreme concern I have to inform you that the proceedings of the person whom they have unfortunately appointed their minister plenipotentiary here, have breathed nothing of the friendly spirit of the nation which sent him; their tendency, on the contrary, has been to involve us in war abroad, and discord and anarchy at home. So far as his acts, or those of his agents, have threatened our immediate commitment in the war, or flagrant insult to the authority of the laws, their effect has been counteracted by the ordinary cognizance of the laws, and by an exertion of the powers confided to me. Where their danger was not imminent, they have been borne with, from sentiments of regard for

his nation; from a sense of their friendship towards us; from a conviction, that they would not suffer us to remain long exposed to the action of a person, who has so little respected our mutual dispositions; and, I will add, from a reliance on the firmness of my fellow-citizens in their principles of peace and order."

John Adams, speaking of this passage of the message, says: "The President has given Genet a bolt of thunder." He questioned, however, whether Washington would be supported in it by the two Houses—"although he stands at present, as high in the admiration and confidence of the people as ever he did, I expect he will find many bitter and desperate enemies arise in consequence of his just judgment against Genet.*

In fact, the choice of speaker showed that there was a majority of ten against the administration, in the House of Representatives; yet it was manifest, from the affectionate answer on the 6th, of the two Houses, to Washington's speech, and the satisfaction expressed at his re-election, that he was not included in the opposition which, from this act, appeared to await his political system. The House did justice to the purity and patriotism of the motives which had prompted him again to obey the voice of his country, when called by it to the Presidential chair. "It is to virtues which have commanded long and universal reverence, and services from which have flowed great and lasting benefits, that the tribute of praise may be paid, without the reproach of flattery; and it is from the same sources that the fairest anticipations may be derived in favor of the public happiness."

Notwithstanding the popular ferment in favor of France, both Houses seem to have approved the course pursued by Washington

* Letter to Mrs. Adams. Life, vol. i., p. 460.

in regard to that country; and as to his proclamation of neutrality, while the House approved of it in guarded terms, the Senate pronounced it a "measure well-timed and wise; manifesting a watchful solicitude for the welfare of the nation, and calculated to promote it."

Early in the session, Mr. Jefferson, in compliance with a requisition which the House of Representatives had made, Feb. 23d, 1791, furnished an able and comprehensive report of the state of trade of the United States with different countries; the nature and extent of exports and imports, and the amount of tonnage of the American shipping: specifying, also, the various restrictions and prohibitions by which our commerce was embarrassed, and, in some instances, almost ruined. "Two methods," he said, "presented themselves, by which these impediments might be removed, modified, or counteracted; friendly arrangement or countervailing legislation. Friendly arrangements were preferable with all who would come into them, and we should carry into such arrangements all the liberality and spirit of accommodation which the nature of the case would admit. But," he adds, "should any nation continue its system of prohibitive duties and regulations, it behooves us to protect our citizens, their commerce, and navigation, by counter prohibitions, duties, and regulations." To effect this, he suggested a series of legislative msasures of a retaliatory kind.*

With this able and elaborate report, Jefferson closed his labors as Secretary of State. His last act was a kind of parting gun to Mr. Genet. This restless functionary had, on the 20th of December, sent to him translations of the instructions given

* See Jefferson's Works, vol. vii.

him by the executive council of France; desiring that the President would lay them officially before both Houses of Congress, and proposing to transmit successively, other papers to be laid before them in like manner.

Jefferson, on the 31st of December, informed Genet that he had laid his letter and its accompaniments before the President. "I have it in charge to observe," adds he, "that your functions as the missionary of a foreign nation here, are confined to the transactions of the affairs of your nation, with the Executive of the United States; that the communications which are to pass between the executive and legislative branches, cannot be a subject for your interference, and that the President must be left to judge for himself what matters his duty or the public good may require him to propose to the deliberations of Congress. I have, therefore, the honor of returning you the copies sent for distribution, and of being, with great respect, sir, your most obedient and most humble servant."

Such was Jefferson's dignified rebuke of the presumptuous meddling of Genet, and indeed his whole course of official proceedings with that minister, notwithstanding his personal intimacy with him and his strong French partialities, is worthy of the highest approbation. Genet, in fact, who had calculated on Jefferson's friendship, charged him openly with having a language official and a language confidential, but it certainly was creditable to him, as a public functionary in a place of high trust, that, in his official transactions, he could rise superior to individual prejudices and partialities, and consult only the dignity and interests of his country.

Washington had been especially sensible of the talents and integrity displayed by Jefferson during the closing year of his

secretaryship, and particularly throughout this French perplexity, and had recently made a last attempt, but an unsuccessful one, to persuade him to remain in the cabinet. On the same day with his letter to Genet, Jefferson addressed one to Washington, reminding him of his having postponed his retirement from office until the end of the annual year. "That term being now arrived," writes he, "and my propensities to retirement becoming daily more and more irresistible, I now take the liberty of resigning the office into your hands. Be pleased to accept with it my sincere thanks for all the indulgences which you have been so good as to exercise towards me in the discharge of its duties. Conscious that my need of them has been great, I have still ever found them greater, without any other claim on my part than a firm pursuit of what has appeared to me to be right, and a thorough disdain of all means which were not as open and honorable as their object was pure. I carry into my retirement a lively sense of your goodness, and shall continue gratefully to remember it."

The following was Washington's reply: "Since it has been impossible to prevent you to forego any longer the indulgence of your desire for private life, the event, however anxious I am to avert it, must be submitted to.

"But I cannot suffer you to leave your station without assuring you, that the opinion which I had formed of your integrity and talents, and which dictated your original nomination, has been confirmed by the fullest experience, and that both have been eminently displayed in the discharge of your duty."

The place thus made vacant in the cabinet was filled by Mr Edmund Randolph, whose office of Attorney General was conferred on Mr. William Bradford, of Pennsylvania.

No one seemed to throw of the toils of office with more delight than Jefferson: or to betake himself with more devotion to the simple occupations of rural life. It was his boast, in a letter to a friend written some time after his return to Monticello, that he had seen no newspaper since he had left Philadelphia, and he believed he should never take another newspaper of any sort. "I think it is Montaigne," writes he, "who has said, that ignorance is the softest pillow on which a man can rest his head. I am sure it is true as to every thing political, and shall endeavor to estrange myself to every thing of that character." Yet the very next sentence shows the lurking of the old party feud. "I indulge myself in one political topic only—that is, in declaring to my countrymen the shameless corruption of a portion of the representatives of the first and second Congresses, *and their implicit devotion to the treasury*." *

We subjoin his comprehensive character of Washington, the result of long observation and cabinet experience, and written in after years, when there was no temptation to insincere eulogy:

"His integrity was most pure; his justice the most inflexible I have ever known; no motives of interest or consanguinity, of friendship or hatred, being able to bias his decision. He was, indeed, in every sense of the word, a wise, a good, and a great man."

* Letter to E. Randolph. Works, iv. 103.

CHAPTER XXIV.

DEBATE ON JEFFERSON'S REPORT ON COMMERCIAL INTERCOURSE—A NAVAL FORCE PROPOSED FOR THE PROTECTION OF COMMERCE AGAINST PIRATICAL CRUISERS—FURTHER INSTANCES OF THE AUDACITY OF GENET—HIS RECALL—ARRIVAL OF HIS SUCCESSOR—IRRITATION EXCITED BY BRITISH CAPTURES OF AMERICAN VESSELS—PREPARATIONS FOR DEFENCE—EMBARGO—INTENSE EXCITEMENT AT "BRITISH SPOLIATIONS"—PARTISANS OF FRANCE IN THE ASCENDANT—A CHANCE FOR ACCOMMODATING DIFFICULTIES—JEFFERSON'S HOPES OF RECONCILIATION—THE WAR CRY UPPERMOST—WASHINGTON DETERMINES TO SEND A SPECIAL ENVOY TO THE BRITISH GOVERNMENT—JEFFERSON'S LETTER TO TENCH COXE.

Public affairs were becoming more and more complicated, and events in Europe were full of gloomy portent. "The news of this evening," writes John Adams to his wife, on the 9th of January, "is, that the queen of France is no more. When will savages be satisfied with blood? No prospect of peace in Europe, therefore none of internal harmony in America. We cannot well be in a more disagreeable situation than we are with all Europe, with all Indians, and with all Barbary rovers. Nearly one-half of the Continent is in constant opposition to the other, and the President's situation, which is highly responsible, is very distressing."

Adams speaks of having had two hours' conversation with

Washington alone in his cabinet, but intimates that he could not reveal the purport of it, even by a hint; it had satisfied him, however, of Washington's earnest desire to do right; his close application to discover it, and his deliberate and comprehensive view of our affairs with all the world. "The anti-federalists and the Frenchified zealots," adds Adams, "have nothing now to do that I can conceive of, but to ruin his character, destroy his peace, and injure his health. He supports all their attacks with firmness, and his health appears to be very good."*

The report of Mr. Jefferson on commercial intercourse, was soon taken up in the House in a committee of the whole. A series of resolutions based on it, and relating to the privileges and restrictions of the commerce of the United States, were introduced by Mr, Madison, and became the subject of a warm and acrimonious debate. The report upheld the policy of turning the course of trade from England to France, by discriminations in favor of the latter; and the resolutions were to the same purport. The idea was to oppose commercial resistance to commercial injury; to enforce a perfect commercial equality by retaliating impositions, assuming that the commercial system of Great Britain was hostile to the United States—a position strongly denied by some of the debaters.

Though the subject was, or might seem to be, of a purely commercial nature, it was inevitably mixed up with political considerations, according as a favorable inclination to England or France was apprehended. The debate waxed warm as it proceeded, with a strong infusion of bitterness. Fisher Ames stigmatized the resolutions as having *French* stamped upon the very

* Life of John Adams, vo.. i., p. 461.

face of them. Whereupon, Colonel Parker of Virginia, wished that there were a stamp on the forehead of every one to designate whether he were for France or England. For himself, he would not be silent and hear that nation abused, to whom America was indebted for her rank as a nation. There was a burst of applause in the gallery; but the indecorum was rebuked by the galleries being cleared.

The debate, which had commenced on the 13th of January, (1794,) was protracted to the 3d of February, when the question being taken on the first resolution, it was carried by a majority of only five, so nearly were parties divided. The further consideration of the remaining resolutions was postponed to March, when it was resumed, but, in consequence of the new complexion of affairs, was suspended without a decision.

The next legislative movement was also productive of a warm debate, though connected with a subject which appealed to the sympathies of the whole nation. Algerine corsairs had captured eleven American merchant vessels, and upwards of one hundred prisoners, and the regency manifested a disposition for further outrages. A bill was introduced into Congress proposing a force of six frigates, to protect the commerce of the United States against the cruisers of this piratical power. The bill met with strenuous opposition. The force would require time to prepare it; and would then be insufficient. It might be laying the foundation of a large permanent navy and a great public debt. It would be cheaper to purchase the friendship of Algiers with money, as was done by other nations of superior maritime force, or to purchase the protection of those nations. It seems hardly credible at the present day, that such policy could have been urged before an American Congress, without provoking a burst

of scorn and indignation; yet it was heard without any emotion of the kind; and, though the bill was eventually passed by both Houses, it was but by a small majority. It received the hearty assent of the President.

In the course of this session, fresh instances had come before the government of the mischievous activity and audacity of Genet; showing that, not content with compromising the neutrality of the United States at sea, he was attempting to endanger it by land. From documents received, it appeared that in November he had sent emissaries to Kentucky, to enroll American citizens in an expedition against New Orleans, and the Spanish possessions; furnishing them with blank commissions for the purpose.* It was an enterprise in which the adventurous people of that State were ready enough to embark, through enthusiasm for the French nation and impatience at the delay of Spain to open the navigation of the Mississippi. Another expedition was to proceed against the Floridas; men for the purpose to be enlisted at the South, to rendezvous in Georgia, and to be aided by a body of Indians and by a French fleet, should one arrive on the coast.

A proclamation from Governor Moultrie checked all such enlistments in South Carolina, but brought forth a letter from Genet to Mr. Jefferson, denying that he had endeavored to raise an armed force in that State for the service of the republic: "At the same time," adds he, "I am too frank to conceal from you that, authorized by the French nation to deliver brevets to such of your fellow-citizens who feel animated by a desire to serve the fairest of causes, I have accorded them to several brave republicans of South Carolina, whose intention appeared to me to be, in

* American State Papers, ii. 36.

expatriating themselves, to go among the tribes of independent Indians, ancient friends and allies of France, to inflict, if they could, in concert with them, the harm to Spaniards and Englishmen, which the governments of those two nations had the baseness to do for a long time to your fellow-citizens, under the name of these savages, the same as they have done recently under that of the Algerines."

Documents relating to these transactions were communicated to Congress by Washington, early in January. But, though the expedition set on foot in South Carolina had been checked, it was subsequently reported that the one in Kentucky against Louisiana, was still in progress and about to descend the Ohio.

These schemes showed such determined purpose, on the part of Genet, to undermine the peace of the United States, that Washington, without waiting a reply to the demand for his recall, resolved to keep no further terms with that headlong diplomat. The dignity, possibly the safety of the United States, depended upon immediate measures.

In a cabinet council it was determined to supersede Genet's diplomatic functions, deprive him of the consequent privileges, and arrest his person; a message to Congress, avowing such determination, was prepared, but at this critical juncture came despatches from Gouverneur Morris, announcing Genet's recall.

The French minister of foreign affairs had, in fact, reprobated the conduct of Genet as unauthorized by his instructions and deserving of punishment, and Mr. Fauchet, secretary of the executive council, was appointed to succeed him. Mr. Fauchet arrived in the United States in February.

About this time vigilance was required to guard against wrongs from an opposite quarter. We have noticed the orders

issued by Great Britain to her cruisers in June, 1793, and the resentment thereby excited in the United States. On the 6th of the following month of November, she had given them additional instructions to detain all vessels laden with the produce of any colony belonging to France, or carrying supplies to any such colony, and to bring them, with their cargoes, to British ports, for adjudication in the British courts of admiralty.

Captures of American vessels were taking place in consequence of these orders, and heightening public irritation. They were considered indicative of determined hostility on the part of Great Britain, and they produced measures in Congress preparatory to an apprehended state of war. An embargo was laid, prohibiting all trade from the United States to any foreign place for the space of thirty days, and vigorous preparations for defence were adopted with but little opposition.

On the 27th of March, resolutions were moved that all debts due to British subjects be sequestered and paid into the treasury, as a fund to indemnify citizens of the United States for depredations sustained from British cruisers, and that all intercourse with Great Britain be interdicted until she had made compensation for these injuries, and until she should make surrender of the Western posts.

The popular excitement was intense. Meetings were held on the subject of British spoliations. 'Peace or war' was the absorbing question. The partisans of France were now in the ascendant. It was scouted as pusillanimous any longer to hold terms with England. "No doubt," said they, "she despises the proclamation of neutrality, as an evidence of timidity; every motive of self-respect calls on the people of the United States to show a proper spirit."

It was suggested that those who were in favor of resisting British aggressions should mount the tri-colored cockade; and forthwith it was mounted by many; while a democratic society was formed to correspond with the one at Philadelphia, and aid in giving effect to these popular sentiments.

While the public mind was in this inflammable state, Washington received advices from Mr. Pinckney, the American minister in London, informing him that the British ministry had issued instructions to the commanders of armed vessels, revoking those of the 6th of November, 1793. Lord Grenville also, in conversation with Mr. Pinckney, had explained the real motives for that order, showing that, however oppressive in its execution, it had not been intended for the special vexation of American commerce.

Washington laid Pinckney's letter before Congress on the 4th of April. It had its effect on both parties; federalists saw in it a chance of accommodating difficulties, and, therefore, opposed all measures calculated to irritate; the other party did not press their belligerent propositions to any immediate decision, but showed no solicitude to avoid a rupture.

Jefferson, though reputed to be the head of the French party, avowed in a letter to Madison his hope that war would not result, but that justice would be obtained in a peaceable way;* and he repeats the hope in a subsequent letter. "My countrymen," writes he, "are groaning under the insults of Great Britain. I hope some means will turn up of reconciling our faith and honor with peace. I confess to you, I have seen enough of one war never to wish to see another."†

* Jefferson's Works, vol. iv. p. 102.

† Ib. vol. iv., p. 104 Letter to John Adams.

"'Tis as great an error," writes Hamilton, at the same time, "for a nation to overrate as to underrate itself. Presumption is as great a fault as timidity. 'Tis our error to overrate ourselves and underrate Great Britain; we forget how little we can annoy, how much we may be annoyed." *

The war cry, however, is too obvious a means of popular excitement to be readily given up. Busy partisans saw that the feeling of the populace was belligerent, and every means were taken by the press and the democratic societies to exasperate this feeling; according to them the crisis called, not for moderation, but for decision, for energy. Still, to adhere to a neutral position, would argue tameness—cowardice! Washington, however, was too morally brave to be clamored out of his wise moderation by such taunts. He resolved to prevent a war if possible, by an appeal to British justice, to be made through a special envoy, who should represent to the British government the injuries we had sustained from it in various ways, and should urge indemnification.

The measure was decried by the party favorable to France, as an undue advance to the British government; but they were still more hostile to it when it was rumored that Hamilton was to be chosen for the mission. A member of the House of Representatives addressed a strong letter to the President, deprecating the mission, but especially the reputed choice of the envoy. James Monroe, also, at that time a member of the Senate, remonstrated against the nomination of Hamilton, as injurious to the public interest, and to the interest of Washington himself, and offered to explain his reasons to the latter in a private interview.

* Hamilton's Works, iv. 528.

Washington declined the interview, but requested Mr. Monroe, if possessed of any facts which would disqualify Mr. Hamilton for the mission, to communicate them to him in writing.

"Colonel Hamilton and others have been mentioned," adds he, "but no one is yet absolutely decided upon in my mind. But as much will depend, among other things, upon the abilities of the person sent, and his knowledge of the affairs of this country, and as I alone am responsible for a proper nomination, it certainly behooves me to name such a one as, in my judgment, combines the requisites for a mission so peculiarly interesting to the peace and happiness of this country."

Hamilton, however, aware of the "collateral obstacles" which existed with respect to himself, had resolved to advise Washington to drop him from the consideration and to fix upon another character; and recommended John Jay, the Chief Justice of the United States, as the man whom it would be advisable to send. "I think," writes he, "the business would have the best chance possible in his hands, and I flatter myself, that his mission would issue in a manner that would produce the most important good to the nation." *

Mr. Jay was the person ultimately chosen. Washington, in his message, thus nominating an additional envoy to Great Britain, expressed undiminished confidence in the minister actually in London. "But a mission like this," observes he, "while it corresponds with the solemnity of the occasion, will announce to the world a solicitude for a friendly adjustment of our complaints and a reluctance to hostility. Going immediately from the United States, such an envoy will carry with him a full knowl-

* Hamilton's Works, vol. iv. p. 531.

edge of the existing temper and sensibility of our country, and will thus be taught to vindicate our rights with firmness, and to cultivate peace with sincerity."

The nomination was approved by a majority of ten Senators.

By this sudden and decisive measure Washington sought to stay the precipitate impulses of public passion; to give time to put the country into a complete state of defence, and to provide such other measures as might be necessary if negotiation, in a reasonable time, should prove unsuccessful.*

Notwithstanding the nomination of the envoy, the resolution to cut off all intercourse with Great Britain passed the House of Representatives, and was only lost in the Senate by the casting vote of the Vice President, which was given, according to general belief, "not from a disinclination to the ulterior expedience of the measure, but from a desire," previously, "to try the effect of negotiation."†

While Washington was thus endeavoring to steer the vessel of State, amid the surges and blasts which were threatening on every side, Jefferson, who had hauled out of the storm, writes serenely from his retirement at Monticello, to his friend Tench Coxe at Paris:

"Your letters give a comfortable view of French affairs, and later events seem to confirm it. Over the foreign powers, I am convinced they will triumph completely, and I cannot but hope that that triumph, and the consequent disgrace of the invading tyrants, is destined, in order of events, to kindle the wrath of Europe against those who have dared to embroil them in such

* Letter to Edmund Randolph. Writings, x. 403.

† Washington to Tobias Lear, Writings, x. 401.

wickedness, and to bring, at length, kings, nobles, and priests, to the scaffolds which they have been so long deluging with human blood. I am still warm whenever I think of these scoundrels, though I do it as seldom as I can, preferring infinitely to contemplate the tranquil growth of my lucerne and potatoes. I have so completely withdrawn myself from these spectacles of usurpation and misrule, that I do not take a single newspaper, nor read one a month; and I feel myself infinitely the happier for it." *

* Works, iv. 104.

CHAPTER XXV.

JAMES MONROE APPOINTED MINISTER TO FRANCE IN PLACE OF GOUVERNEUR MORRIS RECALLED—HIS RECEPTION—PENNSYLVANIA INSURRECTION—PROCLAMATION OF WASHINGTON—PERSEVERANCE OF THE INSURGENTS—SECOND PROCLAMATION—THE PRESIDENT PROCEEDS AGAINST THEM—GENERAL MORGAN—LAWRENCE LEWIS—WASHINGTON ARRANGES A PLAN OF MILITARY OPERATIONS—RETURNS TO PHILADELPHIA, LEAVING LEE IN COMMAND—SUBMISSION OF THE INSURGENTS—THE PRESIDENT'S LETTER ON THE SUBJECT TO JAY, MINISTER AT LONDON.

The French government having so promptly complied with the wishes of the American government in recalling citizen Genet, requested, as an act of reciprocity, the recall of Gouverneur Morris, whose political sympathies were considered highly aristocratical. The request was granted accordingly, but Washington, in a letter to Morris, notifying him of his being superseded, assured him of his own undiminished confidence and friendship.

James Monroe, who was appointed in his place, arrived at Paris in a moment of great reaction. Robespierre had terminated his bloody career on the scaffold, and the reign of terror was at an end. The new minister from the United States was received in public by the Convention. The sentiments expressed by Monroe on delivering his credentials, were so completely in

unison with the feelings of the moment, that the President of the Convention embraced him with emotion, and it was decreed that the American and French flags should be entwined and hung up in the hall of the Convention, in sign of the union and friendship of the two republics.

Chiming in with the popular impulse, Monroe presented the American flag to the Convention, on the part of his country. It was received with enthusiasm, and a decree was passed, that the national flag of France should be transmitted in return, to the government of the United States.

Washington, in the mean time, was becoming painfully aware that censorious eyes at home were keeping a watch upon his administration, and censorious tongues and pens were ready to cavil at every measure. "The affairs of this country cannot go wrong," writes he ironically to Gouverneur Morris; "there are *so many watchful guardians of them*, and such infallible guides, that no one is at a loss for a director at every turn."

This is almost the only instance of irony to be found in his usually plain, direct correspondence, and to us is mournfully suggestive of that soreness and weariness of heart with which he saw his conscientious policy misunderstood or misrepresented, and himself becoming an object of party hostility.

Within three weeks after the date of this letter, an insurrection broke out in the western part of Pennsylvania on account of the excise law. We have already mentioned the riotous opposition this law had experienced. Bills of indictment had been found against some of the rioters. The marshal, when on the way to serve the processes issued by the court, was fired upon by armed men, and narrowly escaped with his life. He was subsequently seized and compelled to renounce the exercise of his official duties.

The house of General Nevil, inspector of the revenue, was assailed, but the assailants were repulsed. They assembled in greater numbers; the magistrates and militia officers shrank from interfering, lest it should provoke a general insurrection; a few regular soldiers were obtained from the garrison at Fort Pitt. There was a parley. The insurgents demanded that the inspector and his papers should be given up; and the soldiers march out of the house and ground their arms. The demand being refused, the house was attacked, the outhouses set on fire, and the garrison was compelled to surrender. The marshal and inspector finally escaped out of the country; descended the Ohio, and, by a circuitous route, found their way to the seat of government; bringing a lamentable tale of their misadventures.

Washington deprecated the result of these outrageous proceedings. "If the laws are to be so trampled upon with impunity," said he, "and a minority, a small one too, is to dictate to the majority, there is an end put, at one stroke, to republican government."

It was intimated that the insurgent district could bring seven thousand men into the field. Delay would only swell the growing disaffection. On the 7th of August Washington issued a proclamation, warning the insurgents to disperse, and declaring that if tranquillity were not restored before the 1st of September, force would be employed to compel submission to the laws. To show that this was not an empty threat, he, on the same day, made a requisition on the governors of New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Maryland, and Virginia, for militia to compose an army of twelve thousand men; afterwards augmented to fifteen thousand.

In a letter to the Governor of Virginia (Light-Horse Harry

Lee), he says: "I consider this insurrection as the first formidable fruit of the Democratic Societies, brought forth, I believe, too prematurely for their own views, which may contribute to the annihilation of them.

"That these societies were instituted by the artful and designing members (many of their body, I have no doubt, mean well, but know little of the real plan), primarily to sow among the people the seeds of jealousy and distrust of the government, by destroying all confidence in the administration of it, and that these doctrines have been budding and blowing ever since, is not new to any one who is acquainted with the character of their leaders, and has been attentive to their manœuvres. I early gave it as my opinion to the confidential characters around me, that if these societies were not counteracted (not by prosecutions, the ready way to make them grow stronger), or did not fall into disesteem from the knowledge of their origin, and the views with which they had been instituted by their father, Genet, for purposes well known to the government, they would shake the government to its foundation."

The insurgents manifesting a disposition to persevere in their rebellious conduct, the President issued a second proclamation on the 25th of September, describing in forcible terms, the perverse and obstinate spirit with which the lenient propositions of government had been met, and declaring his fixed purpose to reduce the refractory to obedience. Shortly after this he left Philadelphia for Carlisle, to join the army, then on its march to suppress the insurrection in the western part of Pennsylvania.

Just as Washington was leaving Philadelphia, a letter was put into his hands from Major-General Morgan. The proclamation had roused the spirit of that revolutionary veteran. He was

on his way, he wrote, to join the expedition against the insurgents, having command of a division of the Virginia militia, of which General Lee was commander-in-chief.

Washington replied from Carlisle to his old companion in arms: "Although I regret the occasion which has called you into the field, I rejoice to hear you are there; and it is probable I may meet you at Fort Cumberland, whither I shall proceed as soon as I see the troops at this rendezvous in condition to advance. At that place, or at Bedford, my ulterior resolution must be taken, either to advance with the troops into the insurgent counties of this State, or to return to Philadelphia for the purpose of meeting Congress the 3d of next month.

"Imperious circumstances alone can justify my absence from the seat of government, whilst Congress are in session; but if these, from the disposition of the people in the refractory counties, and the state of the information I expect to receive at the advanced posts, should appear to exist, the less must yield to the greater duties of my office, and I shall cross the mountains with the troops; if not, I shall place the command of the combined force under the orders of Governor Lee of Virginia, and repair to the seat of government."

We will here note that Lawrence Lewis, a son of Washington's sister, Mrs. Fielding Lewis, having caught the spirit of arms, accompanied Morgan as aide-de-camp, on this expedition. The prompt zeal with which he volunteered into the service of his country was, doubtless, highly satisfactory to his uncle, with whom, it will be seen, he was a great favorite.

On the 9th of October Washington writes from Carlisle to the Secretary of State: "The insurgents are alarmed, but not yet brought to their proper senses. Every means is devised by

them and their friends and associates, to induce a belief that there is no necessity for troops crossing the mountains; although we have information, at the same time, that part of the people there are obliged to embody themselves, to repel the insults of another part."

On the 10th, the Pennsylvania troops set out from Carlisle for their rendezvous at Bedford, and Washington proceeded to Williamsport, thence to go on to Fort Cumberland, the rendezvous of the Virginia and Maryland troops. He arrived at the latter place on the 16th of October, and found a respectable force assembled from those States, and learnt that fifteen hundred more from Virginia were at hand. All accounts agreed that the insurgents were greatly alarmed at the serious appearance of things. "I believe," writes Washington, "the eyes of all the well-disposed people of this country will soon be opened, and that they will clearly see the tendency, if not the design, of the leader of these self-created societies. As far as I have heard them spoken of, it is with strong reprobation."

At Bedford he arranged matters and settled a plan of military operations. The Governors of Virginia, Maryland, and Pennsylvania, were at the head of the troops of their respective States, but Governor Lee was to have the general command. This done, Washington prepared to shape his course for Philadelphia—"but not," says he indignantly, "because the impertinence of Mr. Bache, or his correspondent, has undertaken to pronounce that I cannot, constitutionally, command the army, whilst Congress is in session."

In a letter to Governor Lee, on leaving him in command, he conveyed to the army the very high sense he entertained "of the enlightened and patriotic zeal for the constitution and the laws

which had led them cheerfully to quit their families, homes, and the comforts of private life, to undertake, and thus far to perform, a long and fatiguing march, and to encounter and endure the hardships and privations of a military life."

"No citizen of the United States," observes he, "can ever be engaged in a service more important to their country. It is nothing less than to consolidate and to preserve the blessings of that revolution which, at much expense of blood and treasure, constituted us a free and independent nation."

His parting admonition is—"that every officer and soldier will constantly bear in mind, that he comes to support the laws, and that it would be peculiarly unbecoming in him to be, in any way, the infractor of them; that the essential principles of a free government confine the province of the military when called forth on such occasions, to these two objects: first, to combat and subdue all who may be found in arms in opposition to the national will and authority; secondly, to aid and support the civil magistrates in bringing offenders to justice. The dispensation of this justice belongs to the civil magistrates; and let it ever be our pride and our glory to leave the sacred deposit there inviolate."

Washington pushed on for Philadelphia, through deep roads and a three days' rain, and arrived there about the last of October. Governor Lee marched with the troops in two divisions, amounting to fifteen thousand men, into the western counties of Pennsylvania. This great military array extinguished at once the kindling elements of a civil war, "by making resistance desperate." At the approach of so overwhelming a force the insurgents laid down their arms, and gave assurance of submission, and craved the clemency of government. It was extended to them.

A few were tried for treason, but were not convicted; but as some spirit of discontent was still manifest, Major-General Morgan was stationed with a detachment for the winter, in the disaffected region.

The paternal care with which Washington watched, at all times, over the welfare of the country, was manifested in a letter to General Hamilton, who had remained with the army. "Press the Governors to be pointed in ordering the officers under their respective commands to march back with their respective corps; and to see that the inhabitants meet with no disgraceful insults or injuries from them."

It must have been a proud satisfaction to Washington to have put down, without an effusion of blood, an insurrection which, at one time, threatened such serious consequences. In a letter to Mr. Jay, who had recently gone minister to England, he writes: "The insurrection in the western counties of this State will be represented differently, according to the wishes of some and the prejudices of others, who may exhibit it as an evidence of what has been predicted, 'that we are unable to govern ourselves.' Under this view of the subject, I am happy in giving it to you as the general opinion, that this event, having happened at the time it did, was fortunate, although it will be attended with considerable expense."

After expressing his opinion that the 'self-created societies' who were laboring to effect some revolution in the government, were the fomenters of these western disturbances, he adds: "It has afforded an occasion for the people of this country to show their abhorrence of the result and their attachment to the constitution and the laws; for I believe that five times the number of

militia that was required, would have come forward, if it had been necessary, in support of them.

"The spirit which blazed out on this occasion, as soon as the object was fully understood and the lenient measures of the government were made known to the people, deserves to be communicated. There are instances of general officers going at the head of a single troop, and of light companies; of field officers, when they came to the place of rendezvous, and found no command for them in that grade, turning into the ranks and proceeding as private soldiers, under their own captains; and of numbers possessing the first fortunes in the country, standing in the ranks as private men, and marching day by day, with their knapsacks and haversacks at their backs, sleeping on straw with a single blanket in a soldier's tent, during the frosty nights which we have had, by way of example to others. Nay, more, many young Quakers, of the first families, character, and property, not discouraged by the elders, have turned into the ranks and marched with the troops.

"These things have terrified the insurgents, who had no conception that such a spirit prevailed; but while the thunder only rumbled at a distance, were boasting of their strength and wishing for and threatening the militia by turns; intimating that the arms they should take from them would soon become a magazine in their heads."

CHAPTER XXVI.

WASHINGTON'S DENUNCIATION OF SELF-CREATED SOCIETIES—NOT RELISHED BY CONGRESS—CAMPAIGN OF GENERAL WAYNE—HAMILTON REPORTS A PLAN FOR THE REDEMPTION OF THE PUBLIC DEBT—AND RETIRES FROM HIS POST AS SECRETARY OF THE TREASURY—IS SUCCEEDED BY OLIVER WOLCOTT—RESIGNATION OF KNOX—SUCCEEDED BY TIMOTHY PICKERING—CLOSE OF THE SESSION.

In his speech on the opening of Congress (November 19th), Washington, in adverting to the insurrection in Western Pennsylvania, did not hesitate to denounce "certain self-created societies" as "fomenters of it." After detailing its commencement and progress, he observes: "While there is cause to lament that occurrences of this nature should have disgraced the name or interrupted the tranquillity of any part of our community, or should have diverted to a new application any portion of the public resources, there are not wanting real and substantial consolations for the misfortune. It has demonstrated, that our prosperity rests on solid foundations; by furnishing an additional proof that my fellow-citizens understand the true principles of government and liberty; that they feel their inseparable union; that, notwithstanding all the devices which have been used to sway them from their

interest and duty, they are now as ready to maintain the authority of the laws against licentious invasions, as they were to defend their rights against usurpation. It has been a spectacle, displaying to the highest advantage the value of republican government, to behold the most and least wealthy of our citizens standing in the same ranks as private soldiers; preëminently distinguished by being the army of the constitution; undeterred by a march of three hundred miles over rugged mountains, by the approach of an inclement season, or by any other discouragement. Nor ought I to omit to acknowledge the efficacious and patriotic coöperation which I have experienced from the chief magistrates of the States to which my requisitions have been addressed.

"To every description, indeed, of citizens, let praise be given; but let them persevere in their affectionate vigilance over that precious depository of American happiness, the constitution of the United States. Let them cherish it, too, for the sake of those who, from every clime, are daily seeking a dwelling in our land. And when, in the calm moments of reflection, they shall have retraced the origin and progress of the insurrection, let them determine whether it has not been fomented by combinations of men, who, careless of consequences, and disregarding the unerring truth, that those who arouse cannot always appease, a civil convulsion, have disseminated from ignorance or perversion of facts, suspicions, jealousies, and accusations of the whole government."

This denunciation of the "self-created societies" was a bold step, by which he was sure to incur their resentment. It was not relished by some members of the Senate, but the majority gave it their approval. In the House, where the opposition party was most powerful, this passage of the President's speech gave rise to much altercation, and finally, the majority showed their disap-

probation by passing it over in silence in the address voted in reply.

The "self-created societies," however, which had sprung up in various parts of the Union, had received their death-blow; they soon became odious in the public eye, and gradually disappeared; following the fate of the Jacobin clubs in France.

It was with great satisfaction that Washington had been able to announce favorable intelligence of the campaign of General Wayne against the hostile Indians west of the Ohio. That brave commander had conducted it with a judgment and prudence little compatible with the hare-brained appellation he had acquired by his rash exploits during the Revolution. Leaving his winter encampment on the Ohio, in the spring (of 1794), he had advanced cautiously into the wild country west of it; skirmishing with bands of lurking savages, as he advanced, and establishing posts to keep up communication and secure the transmission of supplies. It was not until the 8th of August that he arrived at the junction of the rivers Au Glaize and Miami, in a fertile and populous region, where the Western Indians had their most important villages. Here he threw up some works, which he named Fort Defiance. Being strengthened by eleven hundred mounted volunteers from Kentucky, his force exceeded that of the savage warriors who had collected to oppose him, which scarcely amounted to two thousand men. These, however, were strongly encamped in the vicinity of Fort Miami, a British post, about thirty miles distant, and far within the limits of the United States, and seemed prepared to give battle, expecting, possibly to be aided by the British garrison. Wayne's men were eager for a fight, but he, remembering the instructions of government, restrained his fighting propensities. In a letter to his old comrade Knox, secretary of war,

he writes, "Though now prepared to strike, I have thought proper to make the enemy a last overture of peace, nor am I without hopes that they will listen to it."

His overture was ineffectual; or rather the reply he received was such as to leave him in doubt of the intentions of the enemy. He advanced, therefore, with the precautions he had hitherto observed, hoping to be met in the course of his march by deputies on peaceful missions.

On the 20th, being arrived near to the enemy's position, his advanced guard was fired upon by an ambush of the enemy concealed in a thicket, and was compelled to retreat. The general now ordered an attack of horse and foot upon the enemy's position; the Indians were roused from their lair with the point of the bayonet; driven, fighting for more than two miles, through thick woods, and pursued with great slaughter, until within gunshot of the British fort. "We remained," writes the general, "three days and nights on the banks of the Miami, in front of the field of battle, during which time all the houses and corn were consumed, or otherwise destroyed, for a considerable distance both above and below Fort Miami; and we were within pistol-shot of the garrison of that place, who were compelled to remain quiet spectators of this general devastation and conflagration."

It was trusted that this decisive battle, and the wide ravages of villages and fields of corn with which it was succeeded, would bring the Indians to their senses, and compel them to solicit the peace which they had so repeatedly rejected.

In his official address to Congress, Washington had urged the adoption of some definite plan for the redemption of the public debt. A plan was reported by Mr. Hamilton, 20th January, 1795, which he had digested and prepared on the basis of the

actual revenues, for the further support of public credit. The report embraced a comprehensive view of the system which he had pursued, and made some recommendations, which after much debate were adopted.

So closed Mr. Hamilton's labors as Secretary of the Treasury. He had long meditated a retirement from his post, the pay of which was inadequate to the support of his family, but had postponed it, first, on account of the accusations brought against him in the second Congress, and of which he awaited the investigation; secondly, in consequence of events which rendered the prospect of a continuance of peace precarious. But these reasons no longer operating, he gave notice, on his return from the Western country, that on the last day of the ensuing month of January he should give in his resignation. He did so, and received the following note from Washington on the subject: "After so long an experience of your public services, I am naturally led, at this moment of your departure from office (which it has always been my wish to prevent), to review them. In every relation which you have borne to me, I have found that my confidence in your talents, exertions, and integrity has been well placed. I the more freely render this testimony of my approbation, because I speak from opportunities of information which cannot deceive me, and which furnish satisfactory proof of your title to public regard.

"My most earnest wishes for your happiness will attend you in your retirement, and you may assure yourself of the sincere esteem, regard, and friendship, of, dear sir, your affectionate," &c.*

Hamilton's reply manifests his sense of the kindness of this letter. "As often as I may recall the vexations I have endured,"

* Writings, xi. 16.

writes he, "your approbation will be a great and precious consolation. It was not without a struggle that I yielded to the very urgent motives which impelled me to relinquish a station in which I could hope to be in any degree instrumental in promoting the success of an administration under your direction. * * Whatever may be my destination hereafter, I entreat you to be persuaded (not the less from my having been sparing in professions) that I shall never cease to render a just tribute to those eminent and excellent qualities, which have been already productive of so many blessings to your country; that you will always have my fervent wishes for your public and personal felicity, and that it will be my pride to cultivate a continuance of that esteem, regard, and friendship, of which you do me the honor to assure me. With true respect and affectionate attachment, I have the honor to be," &c. *

Hamilton was succeeded in office by Oliver Wolcott, of Connecticut, a man of judgment and ability, who had served as comptroller, and was familiar with the duties of the office

Knox likewise had given in his resignation at the close of the month of December. "After having served my country nearly twenty years," writes he to Washington, "the greatest portion of which under your immediate auspices, it is with extreme reluctance that I find myself constrained to withdraw from so honorable a station. But the natural and powerful claims of a numerous family will no longer permit me to neglect their essential interests. In whatever situation I shall be, I shall recollect your confidence and kindness, with all the fervor and purity of affection of which a grateful heart is susceptible."

* Writings, xi. 16.

"I cannot suffer you," replies Washington, "to close your public service, without uniting with the satisfaction which must arise in your own mind from a conscious rectitude, my most perfect persuasion that you have deserved well of your country.

"My personal knowledge of your exertions, whilst it authorizes me to hold this language, justifies the sincere friendship which I have ever borne for you, and which will accompany you in every situation of life; being, with affectionate regard, always yours," &c.

There was always a kindly warmth in Washington's expressions towards the buoyant General Knox. Knox was succeeded in the war department by Colonel Timothy Pickering, at that time Postmaster-General.

The session of Congress closed on the 3d of March, 1795.

CHAPTER XXVII.

WASHINGTON'S ANXIETY ABOUT THE PROGRESS OF THE NEGOTIATION WITH ENGLAND—JAY'S TREATY ARRIVES FOR RATIFICATION—PREDISPOSITION TO CONDEMN—RETURN OF JAY—ADET SUCCEEDS FAUCHET AS MINISTER FROM FRANCE—THE TREATY LAID BEFORE THE SENATE—RATIFIED WITH A QUALIFICATION—A NOVEL QUESTION—POPULAR DISCONTENT—ABSTRACT OF THE TREATY PUBLISHED—VIOLENT OPPOSITION TO IT—WASHINGTON RESOLVED TO RATIFY—HIS RESOLUTION SUSPENDED—GOES TO MOUNT VERNON—REPLY TO AN ADDRESS FROM BOSTON—INCREASING CLAMOR.

WASHINGTON had watched the progress of the mission of Mr. Jay to England, with an anxious eye. He was aware that he had exposed his popularity to imminent hazard, by making an advance toward a negotiation with that power; but what was of still greater moment with him, he was aware that the peace and happiness of his country were at stake on the result of that mission. It was, moreover, a mission of great delicacy, from the many intricate and difficult points to be discussed, and the various and mutual grounds of complaint to be adjusted.

Mr. Jay, in a letter dated August 5th, 1794, had informed him confidentially, that the ministry were prepared to settle the matters in dispute upon just and liberal terms; still, what those terms, which they conceived to be just and liberal, might prove

when they came to be closely discussed, no one could prognosticate.

Washington hardly permitted himself to hope for the complete success of the mission. To 'give and take,' he presumed would be the result. In the mean time there were so many hot heads and impetuous spirits at home to be managed and restrained, that he was anxious the negotiation might assume a decisive form and be brought to a speedy close. He was perplexed too, by what, under existing circumstances, appeared piratical conduct, on the part of Bermudian privateers persisting in capturing American vessels.

At length, on the 7th of March, 1795, four days after the close of the session of Congress, a treaty arrived which had been negotiated by Mr. Jay, and signed by the ministers of the two nations on the 19th of November, and was sent out for ratification.

In a letter to Washington, which accompanied the treaty, Mr. Jay wrote: "To do more was impossible. I ought not to conceal from you that the confidence reposed in your personal character was visible and useful throughout the negotiation."

Washington immediately made the treaty a close study; some of the provisions were perfectly satisfactory; of others, he did not approve; on the whole, he considered it a matter, to use his own expression, of 'give and take,' and believing the advantages to outweigh the objections, and that, as Mr. Jay alleged, it was the best treaty attainable, he made up his mind to ratify it, should it be approved by the Senate.

As a system of predetermined hostility to the treaty, however, was already manifested, and efforts were made to awaken popular jealousy concerning it, Washington kept its provisions

secret, that the public mind might not be preoccupied on the subject. In the course of a few days, however, enough leaked out to be seized upon by the opposition press to excite public distrust, though not enough to convey a distinct idea of the merits of the instrument. In fact, the people were predisposed to condemn, because vexed that any overtures had been made toward a negotiation, such overtures having been stigmatized as cowardly and degrading. If it had been necessary to send a minister to England, said they, it should have been to make a downright demand of reparation for wrongs inflicted on our commerce, and the immediate surrender of the Western posts.

In the mean time Jay arrived on the 28th of May, and found that during his absence in Europe he had been elected governor of the State of New York; an honorable election, there sult of no effort nor intrigue, but of the public sense entertained by his native State, of his pure and exalted merit. He, in consequence, resigned the office of Chief Justice of the United States.

In the course of this month arrived Mr. Adet, who had been appointed by the French government to succeed Mr. Fauchet as minister to the United States. He brought with him the colors of France which the Convention had instructed him to present as a testimonial of friendship, in return for the American flag which had been presented by Mr. Monroe. The presentation of the colors was postponed by him for the present.

The Senate was convened by Washington on the 8th of June, and the treaty of Mr. Jay was laid before it, with its accompanying documents. The session was with closed doors, discussions were long and arduous, and the treaty underwent a scrutinizing examination. The twelfth article met with especial objections.

This article provided for a direct trade between the United

States and the British West India Islands, in American vessels not exceeding seventy tons burden, conveying the produce of the States or of the Islands; but it prohibited the exportation of molasses, sugar, coffee, cocoa, or cotton, in American vessels, either from the United States or the Islands, to any part of the world. Under this article it was a restricted intercourse, but Mr. Jay considered the admission even of small vessels, to the trade of these islands, an important advantage to the commerce of the United States. He had not sufficiently adverted to the fact that, among the prohibited articles, cotton was also a product of the Southern States. Its cultivation had been but recently introduced there; so that when he sailed for Europe hardly sufficient had been raised for domestic consumption, and at the time of signing the treaty very little, if any, had been exported. Still it was now becoming an important staple of the South, and hence the objection of the Senate to this article of the treaty. On the 24th of June two-thirds of the Senate, the constitutional majority, voted for the ratification of the treaty, stipulating, however, that an article be added suspending so much of the twelfth article as respected the West India trade, and that the President be requested to open, without delay, further negotiation on this head.

Here was a novel case to be determined. Could the Senate be considered to have ratified the treaty before the insertion of this new article? Was the act complete and final, so as to render it unnecessary to refer it back to that body? Could the President put his final seal upon an act before it was complete? After much reflection, Washington was satisfied of the propriety of ratifying the treaty with the qualification imposed by the Senate.

In the mean time the popular discontent which had been ex-

cited concerning the treaty was daily increasing. The secrecy which had been maintained with regard to its provisions was wrested into a cause of offence. Republics should have no secrets. The Senate should not have deliberated on the treaty with closed doors.

Such was the irritable condition of the public mind when, on the 29th of June, a senator of the United States (Mr. Mason of Virginia) sent an abstract of the treaty to be published in a leading opposition paper in Philadelphia.

The whole country was immediately in a blaze. Beside the opposition party, a portion of the Cabinet was against the ratification. Of course it received but a faltering support, while the attack upon it was vehement and sustained. The assailants seemed determined to carry their point by storm. Meetings to oppose the ratification were held in Boston, New York, Philadelphia, Baltimore, and Charleston. The smaller towns throughout the Union followed their example. In New York, a copy of the treaty was burnt before the governor's house. In Philadelphia, it was suspended on a pole, carried about the streets, and finally burnt in front of the British minister's house, amid the shoutings of the populace. The whole country seemed determined, by prompt and clamorous manifestations of dissatisfaction, to make Washington give way.

He saw their purpose; he was aware of the odious points of view on which the treaty might justly be placed; his own opinion was not particularly favorable to it; but he was convinced that it was better to ratify it, in the manner the Senate had advised, and with the reservation already mentioned, than to suffer matters to remain in their present unsettled and precarious state.

Before he could act upon this conviction a new difficulty arose

to suspend his resolution. News came that the order of the British government of the 8th of June, 1793, for the seizure of provisions in vessels going to French ports, was renewed. Washington instantly directed that a strong memorial should be drawn up against this order; as it seemed to favor a construction of the treaty which he was determined to resist. While this memorial was in course of preparation, he was called off to Mount Vernon. On his way thither, though little was said to him on the subject of the treaty, he found, he says, from indirect discourses, that endeavors were making to place it in all the odious points of view of which it was susceptible, and in some which it would not admit.

The proceedings and resolves of town meetings, also, savoring as he thought of party prejudice, were forwarded to him by express, and added to his disquiet. "Party disputes are now carried to such a length," writes he, "and truth is so enveloped in mist and false representation, that it is extremely difficult to know through what channel to seek it. This difficulty, to one who is of no party, and whose sole wish is to pursue with undeviating steps a path, which would lead this country to respectability, wealth, and happiness, is exceedingly to be lamented. But such, for wise purposes it is presumed, is the turbulence of human passions in party disputes, when victory more than *truth* is the palm contended for, that 'the post of honor is a *private station*.'" *

The opposition made to the treaty from meetings in different parts of the Union, gave him the most serious uneasiness, from the effect it might have on the relations with France and England. His reply (July 28th) to an address from the selectmen

* Writings, xi. 40.

of Boston, contains the spirit of his replies to other addresses of the kind, and shows the principles which influenced him in regard to the treaty:

In every act of my administration," said he, "I have sought the happiness of my fellow-citizens. My system for the attainment of this object has uniformly been to overlook all personal, local, and partial considerations; to contemplate the United States as one great whole; to confide that sudden impressions, when erroneous, would yield to candid reflection; and to consult only the substantial and permanent interests of our country.

"Nor have I departed from this line of conduct, on the occasion which has produced the resolutions contained in your letter.

"Without a predilection for my own judgment I have weighed with attention, every argument which has at any time been brought into view. But the constitution is the guide which I never can abandon. It has assigned to the President the power of making treaties with the advice and consent of the Senate. It was, doubtless, supposed that these two branches of government would combine, without passion, and with the best means of information, those facts and principles upon which the success of our foreign relations will always depend; that they ought not to substitute for their own conviction, the opinions of others, or to seek truth through any channel but that of a temperate and well-informed investigation.

"Under this persuasion, I have resolved on the manner of executing the duty before me. To the high responsibility of it, I freely submit, and you, gentlemen, are at liberty to make these sentiments known as the grounds of my procedure. While I feel the most lively gratitude for the many instances of approbation from

my country, I can no otherwise deserve it, than by obeying the dictates of my conscience." *

The violence of the opposition increased. Washington perceived that the prejudices against the treaty were more extensive than was generally imagined. "How should it be otherwise," said he, "when no stone has been left unturned that could impress on the minds of the people the most arrant misrepresentation of facts; that their rights have not only been *neglected*, but absolutely *sold;* that there are no reciprocal advantages in the treaty; that the benefits are all on the side of Great Britain; and what seems to have had more weight with them than all the rest, and to have been most pressed, that the treaty is made with the design to oppress the French, in open violation of our treaty with that nation; and contrary, too, to every principle of gratitude and sound policy."

Never, during his administration, had he seen a crisis, in his judgment, so pregnant with interesting events, nor one from which, whether viewed on one side or the other, more was to be apprehended.

If the treaty were ratified, the partisans of the French, "or rather," said he, "of war and confusion" would excite them to hostility; if not ratified, there was no foreseeing the consequences as it respected Great Britain. It was a crisis, he said, that most eminently called upon the administration to be wise and temperate, as well as firm. The public clamor continued, and induced a reiterated examination of the subject; but did not shake his purpose. "*There is but one straight course*," said he, "*and that is to seek truth and pursue it steadily.*" †

* Writings. Sparks, xi. 2.

† See Letters to Edmund Randolph. Writings, xi. pp. 45–51.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

WASHINGTON RECALLED TO THE SEAT OF GOVERNMENT—CONDUCT OF RANDOLPH BROUGHT IN QUESTION—TREATY SIGNED—RESIGNATION OF RANDOLPH—HIS CORRESPONDENCE WITH WASHINGTON—UNLIMITED DISCLOSURE PERMITTED—APPEARANCE OF HIS VINDICATION—PICKERING TRANSFERRED TO THE DEPARTMENT OF STATE—M'HENRY APPOINTED SECRETARY OF WAR—ARRIVAL OF GEORGE WASHINGTON LAFAYETTE.

The difficult and intricate questions pressing upon the attention of government left Washington little mood to enjoy the retirement of Mount Vernon, being constantly in doubt whether his presence in Philadelphia were not necessary. In his letters to Randolph, he requested to be kept continually advised on this head. "While I am in office I shall never suffer private convenience to interfere with what I conceive to be my official duty." "I do not require more than a day's notice to repair to the seat of government."

His promptness was soon put to the test. Early in August came a mysterious letter, dated July 31, from Mr. Pickering, the secretary of war.

"On the subject of the treaty," writes Pickering, "I confess I feel extreme solicitude, and for a *special reason*, which can be

communicated to you only in person. I entreat, therefore, that you will return with all convenient speed to the seat of government. In the meanwhile, for the reason above referred to, I pray you to decide on no important political measure, in whatever form it may be presented to you. Mr. Wolcott and I (Mr. Bradford concurring) waited on Mr. Randolph, and urged his writing to request your return. He wrote in our presence, but we concluded a letter from one of us also expedient. With the utmost sincerity I subscribe myself yours and my country's friend. This letter is for your own eye alone."

The receipt of this enigmatical letter induced Washington to cut short his sojourn at Mount Vernon, and hasten to Philadelphia. He arrived there on the 11th of August; and on the same day received a solution of the mystery. A despatch written by Fauchet, the French minister, to his government in the preceding month of November, was placed in Washington's hands with a translation of it made by Mr. Pickering. The despatch had been found on board of a French privateer, captured by a British frigate, and had been transmitted to the ministry. Lord Grenville, finding it contained passages relating to the intercourse of Mr. Randolph, the American secretary of state, with Mr. Fauchet, had sent it to Mr. Hammond, the British minister in Philadelphia. He had put it into the hands of Mr. Wolcott, the secretary of the treasury, who had shown it to the secretary of war and the attorney-general; and the contents had been considered so extraordinary as to call forth the mysterious letter entreating the prompt return of Washington.

The following passages in Fauchet's intercepted despatch related to the Western insurrection and the proclamation of Washington:

"Two or three days before the proclamation was published, and of course before the cabinet had resolved on its measures, the secretary of state came to my house. All his countenance was grief. He requested of me a private conversation. It was all over, he said to me; a civil war is about to ravage our unhappy country. Four men, by their talents, their influence, and their energy, may save it. But, debtors of English merchants, they will be deprived of their liberty if they take the smallest step. Could you lend them instantaneously funds to shelter them from English prosecution? This inquiry astonished me much. It was impossible for me to make a satisfactory answer. You know my want of power and deficiency in pecuniary means." * * * "Thus, with some thousands of dollars, the Republic could have decided on civil war or peace. Thus *the consciences of the pretended patriots of America have already their price.*"—"What will be the old age of this government, if it is thus already decrepit?"

The perusal of the letter gave Washington deep perplexity and concern. He revolved the matter in his mind in silence. The predominant object of his thoughts recently had been to put a stop to the public agitation on the subject of the treaty; and he postponed any new question of difficulty until decided measures had laid the other at rest. On the next day, therefore, (12th,) he brought before the cabinet the question of immediate ratification. All the members were in favor of it excepting Mr. Randolph; he had favored it before the news of the British provision order, but now pronounced it unadvisable, until that order were revoked, and there should be an end of the war between France and England. This led to further discussion, and it was finally agreed to ratify the treaty immediately; but to accom-

pany the ratification with a strong memorial against the provision order. The ratification was signed by Washington on the 18th of August.

His conduct towards Randolph, in the interim, had been as usual, but now that the despatch of public business no longer demanded the entire attention of the cabinet, he proceeded to clear up the doubts occasioned by the intercepted despatch. Accordingly, on the following day, as Randolph entered the cabinet, Washington, who was conversing with Pickering and Wolcott, rose and handed to him the letter of Fauchet, asking an explanation of the questionable parts.

Randolph appears to have been less agitated by the production of the letter, than hurt that the inquiry concerning it had not first been made of him in private. He postponed making any specific reply, until he should have time to examine the letter at his leisure; and observed on retiring, that, after the treatment he had experienced, he could not think of remaining in office a moment longer.

In a letter to the President the same day he writes: "Your confidence in me, sir, has been unlimited, and I can truly affirm unabused. My sensations, then, cannot be concealed, when I find that confidence so suddenly withdrawn, without a word or distant hint being previously dropped to me. This, sir, as I mentioned in your room, is a situation in which I cannot hold my present office, and therefore I hereby resign it.

"It will not, however, be concluded from hence that I mean to relinquish the inquiry. No, sir; very far from it. I will also meet any inquiry; and to prepare for it, if I learn there is a chance of overtaking Mr. Fauchet before he sails, I will go to him immediately.

"I have to beg the favor of you to permit me to be furnished with a copy of the letter, and I will prepare an answer to it; which I perceive that I cannot do as I wish, merely upon the few hasty memoranda which I took with my pencil.

"I am satisfied, sir, that you will acknowledge one piece of justice to be due on the occasion: which is, that, until an inquiry can be made, the affair shall continue in secrecy under your injunction. For, after pledging myself for a more specific investigation of all the suggestions, I here most solemnly deny that any overture came from me, which was to produce money to me or any others for me; and that in any manner, directly or indirectly, was a shilling ever received by me; nor was it ever contemplated by me, that one shilling should be applied by Mr. Fauchet to any purpose relative to the insurrection."

Washington, in a reply on the following day, in which he accepted his resignation, observes: "Whilst you are in pursuit of means to remove the strong suspicions arising from this letter, no disclosure of its contents will be made by me; and I will enjoin the same on the public officers who are acquainted with the purport of it, unless something will appear to render an explanation necessary on the part of the government, and of which I will be the judge."

And on a subsequent occasion he writes: "No man would rejoice more than I to find that the suspicions which have resulted from the intercepted letter were unequivocally and honorably removed."

Mr. Fauchet, in the mean time, having learnt previous to embarkation, that his despatch had been intercepted, wrote a declaration, denying that Mr. Randolph had ever indicated a willingness to receive money for personal objects, and affirming

that he had had no intention to say any thing in his letter to his government, to the disadvantage of Mr. Randolph's character.*

Mr. Randolph now set to work to prepare a pamphlet in explanation of his conduct, intimating to his friends, that in the course of his vindication, he would bring things to view which would affect Washington more than any thing which had yet appeared.†

While thus occupied he addressed several notes to Washington, requiring information on various points, and received concise answers to all his queries.

On one occasion, where he had required a particular paper, he published in the Gazette an extract from his note to Washington; as if fearing the request might be denied, lest the paper in question should lay open many confidential and delicate matters.

In reply, Washington writes: "That you may have no cause to complain of the withholding of any paper, however private and confidential, which you shall think necessary in a case of so serious a nature, I have directed that you should have the inspection of my letter of the 22d of July, agreeably to your request, and you are at full liberty to publish, without reserve, *any* and *every* private and confidential letter I ever wrote to you; nay, more, every word I ever uttered to you or in your hearing, from whence you can derive any advantage in your vindication. I grant this permission, inasmuch as the extract alluded to manifestly tends to impress on the public an opinion, that something was passed between us, which you should disclose with reluctance, from motives of delicacy with respect to me. * * * That public will

* Sparks' Writings of Washington, xi. 90. † Writings, xi. 89.

judge, when it comes to see your vindication, how far and how proper it has been for you to publish private and confidential communications which oftentimes have been written in a hurry, and sometimes without even copies being taken; and it will, I hope, appreciate my motives, even if it should condemn my prudence, in allowing you the unlimited license herein contained."

The merit of this unlimited license will be properly understood when it is known that, at this time, Washington was becoming more and more the object of the malignant attacks of the press. The ratification of the treaty had opened the vials of party wrath against him. "His military and political character," we are told, "was attacked with equal violence, and it was averred that he was totally destitute of merit, either as a soldier or a statesman. He was charged with having violated the constitution, in negotiating a treaty without the previous advice of the Senate, and that he had embraced within that treaty subjects belonging exclusively to the legislature, for which an impeachment was publicly suggested. Nay more, it was asserted that he had drawn from the treasury, for his private use, more than the salary annexed to his office." *

This last charge, so incompatible with the whole character and conduct of Washington, was fully refuted by the late Secretary of the Treasury, who explained that the President never himself touched any part of the compensation attached to his office, but that the whole was received and disbursed by the gentleman who superintended the expenses of his household. That the expenses at some times exceeded, and at other times fell short

* See Marshall's Washington, vol. ii. p. 370.

of the quarter's allowance; but that the aggregate fell within the allowance for the year.

At this time the General Assembly of Maryland made a unanimous resolution to the following effect: that "observing with deep concern, a series of efforts, by indirect insinuation or open invective, to detach from the first magistrate of the Union, the well-earned confidence of his fellow-citizens; they think it their duty to declare, and they do hereby declare their unabated reliance on the *integrity*, *judgment*, and *patriotism* of the President of the United States."

In a reply to the Governor of Maryland, Washington observed: "At any time the expression of such a sentiment would have been considered as highly honorable and flattering. At the present, when the voice of malignancy is so high-toned, and no attempts are left unessayed to destroy all confidence in the constituted authorities of this country, it is peculiarly grateful to my sensibility." * * *

"I have long since resolved, for the present time at least, to let my calumniators proceed without any notice being taken of their invectives by myself, or by any others, with my participation or knowledge. Their views, I dare say, are readily perceived by all the enlightened and well-disposed part of the community; and by the records of my administration, and not by the voice of faction, I expect to be acquitted or condemned hereafter."

The vindication which Mr. Randolph had been preparing, appeared in December. In this, he gave a narrative of the principal events relating to the case, his correspondence with the President, and the whole of the French minister's letter. He endeavord to explain those parts of the letter which had brought the purity of his conduct in question; but, as has been observed, "he

had a difficult task to perform, as he was obliged to prove a negative, and to explain vague expressions and insinuations connected with his name in Fauchet's letter."*

Fauchet himself furnished the best vindication in his certificate above mentioned; but it is difficult to reconcile his certificate with the language of his official letter to his government. We are rather inclined to attribute to misconceptions and hasty inferences of the French minister, the construction put by him in his letter, on the conversation he had held with Mr. Randolph.

The latter injured his cause by the embittered feelings manifested in his vindication, and the asperity with which he spoke of Washington there and elsewhere. He deeply regretted it in after life, and in a letter to the Hon. Bushrod Washington, written in 1810, he says: "I do not retain the smallest degree of that feeling which roused me fifteen years ago, against some individuals. * * * If I could now present myself before your venerated uncle, it would be my pride to confess my contrition, that I suffered my irritation, let. the cause be what it might, to use some of those expressions respecting him, which, at this moment of indifference to the ideas of the world, I wish to recall, as being inconsistent with my subsequent conviction. My life will, I hope, be sufficiently extended for the recording of my sincere opinion of his virtues and merit, in a style which is not the result of a mind merely debilitated by misfortune, but of that Christian philosophy on which alone I depend for inward tranquillity."†

* Note of Mr. Sparks. Washington's Writings, xi. 90.

† Marshall's Life of Washington, 2d edition, vol. ii. note xx.

After a considerable interval from the resignation of Randolph, Colonel Pickering was transferred to the Department of State, and Mr. James McHenry was appointed Secretary of War. The office of Attorney-General becoming vacant by the death of Mr. Bradford, was offered to Mr. Charles Lee of Virginia, and accepted by him on the last day of November.

During the late agitations, George Washington Lafayette, the son of the General, had arrived at Boston under the name of Motier, accompanied by his tutor, M. Frestel, and had written to Washington apprising him of his arrival. It was an embarrassing moment to Washington. The letter excited his deepest sensibility, bringing with it recollections of Lafayette's merits, services, and sufferings, and of their past friendship, and he resolved to become "father, friend, protector, and supporter" to his son. But he must proceed with caution; on account of his own official character as Executive of the United States, and of the position of Lafayette in regard to the French government. Caution, also, was necessary, not to endanger the situation of the young man himself, and of his mother and friends whom he had left behind. Philadelphia would not be an advisable residence for him at present, until it was seen what opinions would be excited by his arrival; as Washington would for some time be absent from the seat of government, while all the foreign functionaries were residing there, particularly those of his own nation. Washington suggested, therefore, that he should enter for the present as a student at the University in Cambridge, Massachusetts, and engaged to pay all the expenses for the residence there of himself and his tutor. These and other suggestions were made in a private and confidential letter to Mr. Gerge Cabot of Boston, Senator

of the United States, whose kind services he enlisted in the matter.

It was subsequently thought best that young Lafayette should proceed to New York, and remain in retirement, at the country house of a friend in its vicinity, pursuing his studies with his tutor, until Washington should direct otherwise.

CHAPTER XXIX.

MEETING OF CONGRESS—WASHINGTON'S OFFICIAL SUMMARY OF THE EVENTS OF THE YEAR—CORDIAL RESPONSE OF THE SENATE—PARTIAL DEMUR OF THE HOUSE—WASHINGTON'S POSITION AND FEELINGS WITH REGARD TO ENGLAND, AS SHOWN BY HIMSELF—MR. ADET PRESENTS THE COLORS OF FRANCE—THE TREATY RETURNED—PROCEEDINGS THEREUPON—THOMAS PINCKNEY RESIGNS AS MINISTER AT LONDON—RUFUS KING APPOINTED IN HIS PLACE—WASHINGTON'S VIEW OF THE POLITICAL CAMPAIGN—JEFFERSON'S FEARS OF AN ATTEMPT TO SOW DISSENSION BETWEEN HIM AND WASHINGTON—MR. MONROE RECALLED AND C. C. PINCKNEY APPOINTED IN HIS STEAD—RESENTFUL POLICY OF FRANCE.

In his speech at the opening of the session of Congress in December, Washington presented a cheerful summary of the events of the year. "I trust I do not deceive myself," said he, "while I indulge the persuasion, that I have never met you at any period when, more than at present, the situation of our public affairs has afforded just cause for mutual congratulation, and for inviting you to join with me in profound gratitude to the Author of all good, for the numerous and extraordinary blessings we enjoy."

And first he announced that a treaty had been concluded provisionally, by General Wayne, with the Indians northwest of the Ohio, by which the termination of the long, expensive, and dis-

tressing war with these tribes was placed at the option of the United States. "In the adjustment of the terms," said he, "the satisfaction of the Indians was deemed an object worthy no less of the policy than of the liberality of the United States, as the necessary basis of durable tranquillity. This object, it is believed, has been fully attained. The articles agreed upon will immediately be laid before the Senate, for their consideration." *

A letter from the Emperor of Morocco, recognizing a treaty which had been made with his deceased father, insured the continuance of peace with that power.

The terms of a treaty with the Dey and regency of Algiers had been adjusted in a manner to authorize the expectation of a speedy peace in that quarter, and the liberation of a number of American citizens from a long and grievous captivity.

A speedy and satisfactory conclusion was anticipated of a negotiation with the court of Madrid, "which would lay the foundation of lasting harmony with a power whose friendship," said Washington, "we have uniformly and sincerely desired to cherish."

Adverting to the treaty with Great Britain and its conditional ratification, the result on the part of his Britannic Majesty was yet unknown, but when ascertained, would immediately be placed before Congress.

"In regard to internal affairs, every part of the Union gave indications of rapid and various improvement. With burthens so light as scarcely to be perceived; with resources fully adequate to

* These preliminary articles were confirmed by a definitive treaty concluded on the 7th of August. Wayne received high testimonials of approbation both from Congress and the President, and made a kind of triumphal entry into Philadelphia amid the enthusiastic acclamations of the people.

present exigencies; with governments founded on the genuine principles of rational liberty; and with mild and wholesome laws, was it too much to say that our country exhibited a spectacle of national happiness never surpassed, if ever before equalled?"

In regard to the late insurrection: "The misled," observes he, "have abandoned their errors, and pay the respect to our constitution and laws which is due from good citizens to the public authorities. These circumstances have induced me to pardon generally the offenders here referred to, and to extend forgiveness to those who had been adjudged to capital punishment."

After recommending several objects to the attention of both Houses, he concludes by advising temperate discussion and mutual forbearance wherever there was a difference of opinion; advice sage and salutary on all occasions, but particularly called for by the excited temper of the times.

There was, as usual, a cordial answer from the Senate; but, in the present House of Representatives, as in the last one, the opposition were in the majority. In the response reported by a committee, one clause expressing undiminished confidence in the chief magistrate was demurred to; some members affirmed, that, with them, it had been considerably diminished by a late transaction. After a warm altercation, to avoid a direct vote, the response was recommitted, and the clause objected to modified. The following is the form adopted: "In contemplating that spectacle of national happiness which our country exhibits, and of which you, sir, have been pleased to make an interesting summary, permit us to acknowledge and declare the very great share which your zealous and faithful services have contributed to it, and to express the affectionate attachment which we feel for your character."

The feelings and position of Washington with regard to England at this juncture, may be judged from a letter dated December 22d, to Gouverneur Morris, then in London, and who was in occasional communication with Lord Grenville. Washington gives a detail of the various causes of complaint against the British government which were rankling in the minds of the American people, and which Morris was to mention, unofficially, should he converse with Lord Grenville on the subject. "I give you these details," writes he, "as evidences of the impolitic conduct of the British government towards these United States; that it may be seen how difficult it has been for the Executive, under such an accumulation of irritating circumstances, to maintain the ground of neutrality which had been taken; and at a time when the remembrance of the aid we had received from France in the Revolution was fresh in every mind, and while the partisans of that country were continually contrasting the affections of *that* people with the unfriendly disposition of the *British government*. And that, too, while *their own* sufferings, during the war with the latter, had not been forgotten.

"It is well known that peace has been (to borrow a modern phrase) the order of the day with me, since the disturbances in Europe first commenced. My policy has been, and will continue to be, while I have the honor to remain in the administration, to maintain friendly terms with, but be independent of, all the nations of the earth; to share in the broils of none; to fulfil our own engagements; to supply the wants and be carriers for them all. * * * Nothing short of self-respect, and that justice which is essential to a national character, ought to involve us in war.

* * * * * * * *

"By a firm adherence to these principles, and to the neutral policy which has been adopted, I have brought on myself a torrent of abuse in the factious papers of this country, and from the enmity of the discontented of all descriptions. But having no sinister objects in view, I shall not be diverted from my course by these, nor any attempts which are, or shall be, made to withdraw the confidence of my constituents from me. I have nothing to ask; and, discharging my duty, I have nothing to fear from invective. The acts of my administration will appear when I am no more, and the intelligent and candid part of mankind will not condemn my conduct without recurring to them."

The first day of January, being "a day of general joy and congratulation," had been appointed by Washington to receive the colors of France, sent out by the Committee of Safety. On that day they were presented by Mr. Adet with an address, representing, in glowing language, the position of France, "struggling not only for her own liberty, but for that of the human race. Assimilated to or rather identified with free people by the form of her government, she saw in them only friends and brothers. Long accustomed to regard the American people as her most faithful allies, she sought to draw closer the ties already formed in the fields of America, under the auspices of victory, over the ruins of tyranny."

Washington received the colors with lively sensibility and a brief reply, expressive of the deep solicitude and high admiration produced by the events of the French struggle, and his joy that the interesting revolutionary movements of so many years had issued in the formation of a constitution designed to give permanency to the great object contended for.

In February the treaty with Great Britain, as modified by

the advice of the Senate, came back ratified by the king of Great Britain, and on the last of the month a proclamation was issued by the President, declaring it to be the supreme law of the land.

The opposition in the House of Representatives were offended that Washington should issue this proclamation before the sense of that body had been taken on the subject, and denied the power of the President and Senate to complete a treaty without its sanction. They were bent on defeating it by refusing to pass the laws necessary to carry it into effect; and, as a preliminary, passed a resolution requesting the President to lay before the House the instruction to Mr. Jay, and the correspondence and other documents relative to the treaty.

Washington, believing that these papers could not be constitutionally demanded, resolved, he said, from the first moment, and from the fullest conviction of his mind, to *resist the principle*, which was evidently intended to be established by the call of the House; he only deliberated on the manner in which this could be done with the least bad consequences.

After mature deliberation and with the assistance of the heads of departments and the Attorney-General, he prepared and sent in to the House an answer to their request. In this he dwelt upon the necessity of caution and secrecy in foreign negotiations, as one cogent reason for vesting the power of making treaties in the President, with the advice and consent of the Senate, the principle on which that body was formed, confining it to a small number of members.

To admit a right in the House of Representatives to demand and have all the papers respecting a foreign negotiation would, he observed, be to establish a dangerous precedent.

"It did not occur to him," he added, "that the inspection of

the papers called for, could be relative to any purpose under the cognizance of the House of Representatives, except that of an impeachment, which the resolution had not expressed. He had no disposition to withhold any information which the duty of his station would permit, or the public good should require to be disclosed; and, in fact, all the papers affecting the negotiation with Great Britain had been laid before the Senate, when the treaty itself had been communicated for their consideration and advice."

After various further remarks, he concludes: "As, therefore, it is perfectly clear to my understanding that the assent of the House of Representatives is not necessary to the validity of a treaty; as the treaty with Great Britain exhibits itself in all the objects requiring legislative provision; and on these, the papers called for can throw no light; and as it is essential to the due administration of the government, that the boundaries fixed by the constitution between the different departments, should be observed, a just regard to the constitution and to the duty of my office, under all the circumstances of this case, forbid a compliance with your request."

A resolution to make provision for carrying the treaty into effect, gave rise to an animated and protracted debate. Meanwhile, the whole country became agitated on the subject; meetings were held throughout the United States, and it soon became apparent that the popular feeling was with the minority in the House of Representatives, who favored the making of the necessary appropriations. The public will prevailed, and, on the last day of April, the resolution was passed, though by a close vote of fifty-one to forty-eight.

For some months past, Mr. Thomas Pinckney had been so-

licitous to be relieved from his post of Minister Plenipotentiary at London, but the doubtful issue of the above dispute, and the difficulty of finding a fit substitute for him, had caused delay in the matter; for, as Mr. Hamilton observed: "The importance, to our security and commerce, of a good understanding with Great Britain, rendered it very important that a man able, and not disagreeable to that government, should be there." Such a man at length presented in Mr. Rufus King, of New York. He had vindicated the treaty with his pen in part of a series of papers signed Camillus; he had defended it by his manly and brilliant eloquence in the Senate; he was now about to quit his seat in that body. Hamilton, who knew him well, struck off his character admirably in a letter to the President. "Mr. King," writes he, "is a remarkably well-informed man, a very judicious one, a man of address, a man of fortune and economy, whose situation affords just ground of confidence; a man of unimpeachable probity where he is known, a firm friend of the government, a supporter of the measures of the President; a man who cannot but feel that he has strong pretensions to confidence and trust."

Mr. King was nominated to the Senate on the 19th of May, and his nomination was confirmed. On the 1st of June, this session of Congress terminated.

On the 12th of that month Washington, in a letter to Colonel Humphrey, then in Portugal, speaks of the recent political campaign: "The gazettes will give you a pretty good idea of the state of politics and parties in this country, and will show you, at the same time, if Bache's Aurora is among them, in what manner I am attacked for persevering steadily in measures which, to me, appear necessary to preserve us, during the conflicts of belligerent powers, in a state of tranquillity. But these attacks, unjust and

unpleasant as they are, will occasion no change in my conduct, nor will they produce any other effect in my mind than to increase the solicitude which long since has taken fast hold of my heart, to enjoy, in the shades of retirement, the consolation of believing that I have rendered to my country every service to which my abilities were competent—not from pecuniary or ambitious motives, nor from a desire to provide for any men, further than their intrinsic merit entitled them, and surely not with a view of bringing my own relations into office. Malignity, therefore, may dart its shafts, but no earthly power can deprive me of the satisfaction of knowing that I have not, in the whole course of my administration, committed an intentional error."

On the same day (June 12th) Jefferson, writing from his retirement at Monticello, to Mr. Monroe in Paris, showed himself sensitive to the influence of Washington's great popularity in countervailing party schemes. "Congress have risen," writes he. "You will have seen by their proceedings the truth of what I always observed to you, that one man outweighs them all in the influence over the people, who have supported his judgment against their own and that of their representatives. Republicanism must lie on its oars, resign the vessel to its pilot, and themselves to what course he thinks best for them."

In Bache's Aurora of June 9th, an anonymous article had appeared, disclosing queries propounded by Washington, in strict confidence, to the members of the cabinet in 1793, as to the conduct to be observed in reference to England and France. As soon as Jefferson saw this article he wrote to Washington (June 19th), disclaiming his having had any concern in that breach of official trust. "I have formerly mentioned to you," observes he, "that from a very early period of my life, I had laid it down as

a rule of conduct never to write a word for the public papers. From this I have never departed in a single instance."

Jefferson further intimates a suspicion that a third party had been endeavoring to sow tares between him and Washington, by representing him (Jefferson) as still engaged in the bustle of politics, and in turbulence and intrigue against the government.

This drew forth a noble reply from Washington. "If I had entertained any suspicions before," writes he, "that the queries, which have been published in Bache's paper, proceeded from you, the assurances you have given me of the contrary, would have removed them; but the truth is, I harbored none. * * *

"As you have mentioned the subject yourself, it would not be frank, candid, or friendly to conceal, that your conduct has been represented as derogating from that opinion I had conceived you entertained of me; that to your particular friends and connections you have described, and they have denounced me as a person under a dangerous influence; and that, if I would listen more to some other opinions, all would be well. My answer invariably has been, that I had never discovered any thing in the conduct of Mr. Jefferson to raise suspicions in my mind of his insincerity; that, if he would retrace my public conduct while he was in the administration, abundant proofs would occur to him, that truth and right decisions were the sole object of my pursuit; that there were as many instances within his own knowledge of my having decided *against* as in *favor* of the opinions of the person evidently alluded to; and, moreover, that I was no believer in the infallibility of the politics or measures of any man living. In short, that I was no party man myself, and the first wish of my heart was, if parties did exist, to reconcile them.

"To this I may add, and very truly, that, until within the

last year or two, I had no conception that parties would or even could, go the length I have been witness to; nor did I believe until lately, that it was within the bounds of probability, hardly within those of possibility, that, while I was using my utmost exertions to establish a national character of our own, independent, as far as our obligations and justice would permit, of every nation of the earth, and wished, by steering a steady course, to preserve this country from the horrors of a desolating war, I should be accused of being the enemy of one nation, and subject to the influence of another; and, to prove it, that every act of my administration would be tortured, and the grossest and most insidious misrepresentations of them be made, by giving one side only of a subject, and that, too, in such exaggerated and indecent terms as could scarcely be applied to a Nero, a notorious defaulter, or even to a common pickpocket. But enough of this; I have already gone further in the expression of my feelings than I intended."

Shortly after the recess of Congress another change was made in the foreign diplomacy. Mr. Monroe, when sent envoy to France, had been especially instructed to explain the views and conduct of the United States in forming the treaty with England; and had been amply furnished with documents for the purpose. From his own letters, however, it appeared that he had omitted to use them. Whether this rose from undue attachment to France, from mistaken notions of American interests, or from real dislike to the treaty, the result was the very evil he had been instructed to prevent. The French government misconceived the views and conduct of the United States, suspected their policy in regard to Great Britain, and when aware that the House of Representatives would execute the treaty made by Jay, became

bitter in their resentment. Symptoms of this appeared in the capture of an American merchantman by a French privateer. Under these circumstances it was deemed expedient by Washington and his cabinet, to recall Mr. Monroe, and appoint another American citizen in his stead.

The person chosen was Charles Cotesworth Pinckney of South Carolina, elder brother of the late minister to London. Immediately after this appointment, which took place in July, despatches were received from Mr. Monroe, communicating complaints which had been addressed to him, against the American government by M. De La Croix, French minister of exterior relations, and his reply to the same. His reply, though it failed to change the policy of the French Directory, was deemed able and satisfactory by the Executive. Somewhat later came a letter from Mr. Monroe, written on the 24th, by which it appeared that the long and confidential letter written by Washington on December 22d, and cited in a previous page of this chapter, had, by some chance, got into the hands of the French Directory, and "produced an ill effect."

In a reply to Monroe, dated August 25th, Washington acknowledged the authenticity of the letter, "but I deny," added he, "that there is any thing contained in it that the French government could take exception to, unless the expression of an ardent wish, that the United States might remain at peace with all the world, taking no part in the disputes of any part of it, should have produced this effect. I also gave it as my opinion, that the sentiments of the mass of the citizens of this country were in unison with mine."

And in conclusion, he observes: "My conduct in public and private life, as it relates to the important struggle in which the

latter nation [France] is engaged, has been uniform from the commencement of it, and may be summed up in a few words. I have always wished well to the French revolution; that I have always given it as my decided opinion, that no nation had a right to intermeddle in the internal concerns of another; that every one had a right to form and adopt whatever government they liked best to live under themselves; and that, if this country could, consistently with its engagements, maintain a strict neutrality, and thereby preserve peace, it was bound to do so by motives of policy, interest, and every other consideration, that ought to actuate a people situated as we are, already deeply in debt, and in a convalescent state from the struggle we have been engaged in ourselves.

"On these principles I have steadily and uniformly proceeded, bidding defiance to calumnies calculated to sow the seeds of distrust in the French nation, and to excite their belief of an influence possessed by Great Britain in the councils of this country, than which nothing is more unfounded and injurious." *

Still the resentful policy of the French continued, and, in October, they issued an *arret* ordering the seizure of British property found on board of American vessels, and of provisions bound for England—a direct violation of their treaty with the United States.

* For the entire letter see Washington's Writings, xi. 164.

CHAPTER XXX.

WASHINGTON'S FAREWELL ADDRESS—MEETS THE TWO HOUSES OF CONGRESS FOR THE LAST TIME—HIS SPEECH—REPLIES OF THE SENATE AND HOUSE—MR. GILES—ANDREW JACKSON—OFFENSIVE PUBLICATION OF THE FRENCH MINISTER—JOHN ADAMS DECLARED PRESIDENT—WASHINGTON'S LETTER TO KNOX ON THE EVE OF HIS RETIREMENT—THE SPURIOUS LETTERS—HIS FAREWELL DINNER—JOHN ADAMS TAKES THE OATH OF OFFICE—GREETINGS OF WASHINGTON AT THE CLOSE OF THE CEREMONY.

The period for the presidential election was drawing near, and great anxiety began to be felt that Washington would consent to stand for a third term. No one, it was agreed, had greater claim to the enjoyment of retirement, in consideration of public services rendered; but it was thought the affairs of the country would be in a very precarious condition should he retire before the wars of Europe were brought to a close.

Washington, however, had made up his mind irrevocably on the subject, and resolved to announce, in a farewell address, his intention of retiring. Such an instrument, it will be recollected, had been prepared for him from his own notes, by Mr. Madison, when he had thought of retiring at the end of his first term. As he was no longer in confidential intimacy with Mr. Madison, he

turned to Mr. Hamilton as his adviser and coadjutor, and appears to have consulted him on the subject early in the present year, for, in a letter dated New York, May 10th, Hamilton writes: "When last in Philadephia, you mentioned to me your wish that I should *re-dress* a certain paper which you had prepared. As it is important that a thing of this kind should be done with great care and much at leisure, touched and retouched, I submit a wish that, as soon as you have given it the body you mean it to have, it may be sent to me."

The paper was accordingly sent on the 15th of May, in its rough state, altered in one part since Hamilton had seen it. "If you should think it best to throw the *whole* into a different form," writes Washingon, "let me request, notwithstanding, that my draft may be returned to me (along with yours) with such amendments and corections as to render it as perfect as the formation is susceptible of; curtailed if too verbose, and relieved of all tautology not necessary to enforce the ideas in the original or quoted part. My wish is, that the whole may appear in a plain style; and be handed to the public in an honest, unaffected, simple garb."

We forbear to go into the vexed question concerning this address; how much of it is founded on Washington's original "notes and heads of topics;" how much was elaborated by Madison, and how much is due to Hamilton's recasting and revision. The whole came under the supervision of Washington; and the instrument, as submitted to the press, was in his handwriting, with many ultimate corrections and alterations. Washington had no pride of authorship; his object always was to effect the purpose in hand, and for that he occasionally invoked assistance, to ensure a plain and clear exposition of his thoughts and intentions. The

address certainly breathes his spirit throughout, is in perfect accordance with his words and actions, and "in an honest, unaffected, simple garb," embodies the system of policy on which he had acted throughout his administration. It was published in September, in a Philadelphia paper called the Daily Advertiser.*

The publication of the address produced a great sensation. Several of the State legislatures ordered it to be put on their journals. "The President's declining to be again elected," writes the elder Wolcott, "constitutes a most important epoch in our national affairs. The country meet the event with reluctance, but they do not feel that they can make any claim for the further services of a man who has conducted their armies through a successful war; has so largely contributed to establish a national government; has so long presided over our councils and directed the public administration, and in the most advantageous manner settled all national differences, and who can leave the administration where nothing but our folly and internal discord can render the country otherwise than happy."

The address acted as a notice, to hush the acrimonious abuse of him which the opposition was pouring forth under the idea that he would be a candidate for a renomination. "It will serve as a signal, like the dropping of a hat, for the party racers to start," writes Fisher Ames, "and I expect a great deal of noise, whipping and spurring."

Congress formed a quorum on the 5th day of December, the first day of the session which succeeded the publication of the

* The reader will find the entire Address in the Appendix to this volume.

Farewell Address. On the 7th, Washington met the two Houses of Congress for the last time.

In his speech he recommended an institution for the improvement of agriculture, a military academy, a national university, and a gradual increase of the navy. The disputes with France were made the subject of the following remarks: "While in our external relations some serious inconveniences and embarrassments have been overcome and others lessened, it is with much pain and deep regret I mention that circumstances of a very unwelcome nature have lately occurred. Our trade has suffered and is suffering extensive injuries in the West Indies from the cruisers and agents of the French Republic; and communications have been received from its minister here, which indicate the danger of a further disturbance of our commerce by its authority; and which are in other respects far from agreeable. It has been my constant, sincere, and earnest wish, in conformity with that of our nation, to maintain cordial harmony and a perfectly friendly understanding with that Republic. This wish remains unabated; and I shall persevere in the endeavor to fulfil it to the utmost extent of what shall be consistent with a just and indispensable regard to the rights and honor of our country; nor will I easily cease to cherish the expectation, that a spirit of justice, candor and friendship, on the part of the Republic, will eventually ensure success.

"In pursuing this course, however, I cannot forget what is due to the character of our government and nation; or to a full and entire confidence in the good sense, patriotism, self-respect, and fortitude of my countrymen."

In concluding his address he observes, "The situation in which I now stand for the last time in the midst of the repre-

sentatives of the people of the United States, naturally recalls the period when the administration of the present form of government commenced, and I cannot omit the occasion to congratulate you and my country on the success of the experiment, nor to repeat my fervent supplications to the Supreme Ruler of the universe and Sovereign Arbiter of nations, that his providential care may be still extended to the United States; that the virtue and happiness of the people may be preserved, and that the government which they have instituted for the protection of their liberties may be perpetual."

The Senate, in their reply to the address, after concurring in its views of the national prosperity, as resulting from the excellence of the constitutional system and the wisdom of the legislative provisions, added, that they would be deficient in gratitude and justice did they not attribute a great portion of these advantages to the virtue, firmness and talents of his administration, conspicuously displayed in the most trying times, and on the most critical occasions.

Recalling his arduous services, civil and military, as well during the struggles of the revolution as in the convulsive period of a later date, their warmest affections and anxious regards would accompany him in his approaching retirement.

"The most effectual consolation that can offer for the loss we are about to sustain, arises from the animating reflection, that the influence of your example will extend to your successors, and the United States thus continue to enjoy an able, upright, and energetic administration."

The reply of the House, after premising attention to the various subjects recommended to their consideration in the address, concluded by a warm expression of gratitude and admiration, in-

spired by the virtues and services of the President, by his wisdom, firmness, moderation, and magnanimity; and testifying to the deep regret with which they contemplated his intended retirement from office.

"May you long enjoy that liberty which is so dear to you, and to which your name will ever be so dear," added they "May your own virtue and a nation's prayers obtain the happiest sunshine for the decline of your days, and the choicest of future blessings. For our country's sake, and for the sake of republican liberty, it is our earnest wish that your example may be the guide of your successors; and thus, after being the ornament and safeguard of the present age, become the patrimony of our descendants."

Objections, however, were made to some parts of the reply by Mr. Giles, of Virginia. He was for expunging such parts as eulogized the present administration, spoke of the wisdom and firmness of Washington, and regretted his retiring from office. He disapproved, he said, of the measures of the administration with respect to foreign relations; he believed its want of wisdom and firmness had conducted the nation to a crisis threatening greater calamity than any that had before occurred. He did not regret the President's retiring from office. He believed the government of the United States was founded on the broad basis of the people, that they were competent to their own government, and the remaining of no man in office was necessary to the success of that government. The people would truly be in a calamitous situation, if one man were essential to the existence of the government. He was convinced that the United States produces a thousand citizens capable of filling the presidential chair, and he would trust to the discernment of the people for a proper choice. Though

the voice of all America should declare the President's retiring as a calamity, he could not join in the declaration, because he did not conceive it a misfortune. He hoped the President would be happy in his retirement, and he hoped he would retire.*

Twelve members voted for expunging those parts of the reply to which Mr. Giles had objected. Among the names of these members we find that of Andrew Jackson, a young man, twenty-nine years of age, as yet unknown to fame, and who had recently taken his seat as delegate from the newly admitted State of Tennessee. The vote in favor of the whole reply, however, was overwhelming.

The reverence and affection expressed for him in both Houses of Congress, and their regret at his intended retirement, were in unison with testimonials from various State legislatures and other public bodies, which were continually arriving since the publication of his Farewell Address.

During the actual session of Congress, Washington endeavored to prevent the misunderstandings, which were in danger of being augmented between the United States and the French Government. In the preceding month of November, Mr. Adet, the French minister, had addressed a letter to the Secretary of State, recapitulating the complaints against the government of the United States made by his predecessors and himself, denouncing the *insidious* proclamation of neutrality and the wrongs growing out of it, and using language calculated to inflame the partisans of France: a copy of which letter had been sent to the press for publication. One of the immediate objects he had in view in timing the publication, was supposed by Washington to be to

* See Mr. Giles' speech, as reported in the Aurora newspaper.

produce an effect on the presidential election; his ultimate object, to establish such an influence in the country as to sway the government and control its measures. Early in January, 1797, therefore, Washington requested Mr. Pickering, the Secretary of State, to address a letter to Mr. Pinckney, United States minister to France, stating all the complaints alleged by the French minister against the government, examining and reviewing the same, and accompanying the statement with a collection of letters and papers relating to the transactions therein adverted to.

"From a desire," writes he, "that the statements be full, fair, calm, and argumentative, without asperity or any thing more irritating in the comments that the narration of facts, which expose unfounded charges and assertions, does itself produce, I have wished that the letter to Mr. Pinckney may be revised over and over again. Much depends upon it, as it relates to ourselves and in the eyes of the world, whatever may be the effect, as it respects the governing powers of France."

The letter to Mr. Pinckney, with its accompanying documents, was laid before Congress on the 19th of January, (1797,) to be transmitted to that minister. "The immediate object of his mission," says Washington in a special message, "was to make that government such explanations of the principles and conduct of our own, as by manifesting our good faith, might remove all jealousy and discontent, and maintain that harmony and good understanding with the French Republic, which it has been my constant solicitude to preserve. A government which required only a knowledge of the *truth* to justify its measures, could but be anxious to have this fully and frankly displayed."

In the month of February the votes taken at the recent

election were opened and counted in Congress; when Mr. Adams, having the highest number, was declared President, and Mr. Jefferson, having the next number, Vice President; their term of four years to commence on the 4th of March next ensuing.

Washington now began to count the days and hours that intervened between him and his retirement. On the day preceding it, he writes to his old fellow-soldier and political coadjutor, Henry Knox: "To the wearied traveller, who sees a resting-place, and is bending his body to lean thereon, I now compare myself; but to be suffered to do this in peace, is too much to be endured by some. To misrepresent my motives, to reprobate my politics, and to weaken the confidence which has been reposed in my administration, are objects which cannot be relinquished by those who will be satisfied with nothing short of a change in our political system. The consolation, however, which results from conscious rectitude, and the approving voice of my country, unequivocally expressed by its representatives, deprive their sting of its poison, and place in the same point of view, both the weakness and malignity of their efforts.

"Although the prospect of retirement is most grateful to my soul, and I have not a wish to mix again in the great world, or to partake in its politics, yet I am not without my regrets at parting with (perhaps never more to meet) the few intimates whom I love, and among these, be assured, you are one. * * * The remainder of my life, which in the course of nature cannot be long, will be occupied in rural amusements; and though I shall seclude myself as much as possible from the noisy and bustling world, none would, more than myself, be regaled by the company of those I esteem, at Mount Vernon; more than twenty miles

from which, after I arrive there, it is not likely that I shall ever be."

On the morning of the 3d of March, the last day of his official career, Washington addressed a letter to the Secretary of State on the subject of the spurious letters, heretofore mentioned,* first published by the British in 1776, and subsequently republished during his administration, by some of his political enemies. He had suffered every attack on his executive conduct to pass unnoticed while he remained in public life, but conceived it a justice due to his character solemnly to pronounce those letters a base forgery, and he desired that the present letter might be "deposited in the office of the Department of State, as a testimony to the truth to the present generation and to posterity."

On the same day he gave a kind of farewell dinner to the foreign ministers and their wives, Mr. and Mrs. Adams, Mr. Jefferson, and other conspicuous personages of both sexes. "During the dinner much hilarity prevailed," says Bishop White, who was present. When the cloth was removed Washington filled his glass: "Ladies and gentlemen," said he, "this is the last time I shall drink your health as a public man; I do it with sincerity, wishing you all possible happiness."

The gaiety of the company was checked in an instant; all felt the importance of this leave-taking; Mrs. Liston, the wife of the British minister, was so much affected that tears streamed down her cheeks.

On the 4th of March, an immense crowd had gathered about Congress Hall. At eleven o'clock, Mr. Jefferson took the oath

* Life of Washington, vol. iii., 8vo. p. 360, 361.

as Vice President in the presence of the Senate; and proceeded with that body to the Chamber of the House of Representatives, which was densely crowded, many ladies occupying chairs ceded to them by members.

After a time, Washington entered amidst enthusiastic cheers and acclamations, and the waving of handkerchiefs. Mr. Adams soon followed and was likewise well received, but not with like enthusiasm. Having taken the oath of office, Mr. Adams, in his inaugural address, spoke of his predecessor as one "who, by a long course of great actions, regulated by prudence, justice, temperance, and fortitude, had merited the gratitude of his fellow-citizens, commanded the highest praises of foreign nations, and secured immortal glory with posterity."

At the close of the ceremony, as Washington moved toward the door to retire, there was a rush from the gallery to the corridor that threatened the loss of life or limb, so eager were the throng to catch a last look of one who had so long been the object of public veneration. When Washington was in the street he waved his hat in return for the cheers of the multitude, his countenance radiant with benignity, his gray hairs streaming in the wind. The crowd followed him to his door; there, turning round, his countenance assumed a grave and almost melancholy expression, his eyes were bathed in tears, his emotions were too great for utterance, and only by gestures could he indicate his thanks and convey his farewell blessing.*

In the evening a splendid banquet was given to him by the principal inhabitants of Philadelphia in the Amphitheatre, which

* From personal recollections of William A. Duer, late President of Columbia College.

was decorated with emblematical paintings. All the heads of departments, the foreign ministers, several officers of the late army, and various persons of note, were present. Among the paintings, one represented the home of his heart, the home to which he was about to hasten—Mount Vernon.

CHAPTER XXXI.

WASHINGTON AT MOUNT VERNON—INFLUX OF STRANGE FACES—LAWRENCE LEWIS—MISS NELLY CUSTIS—WASHINGTON'S COUNSEL IN LOVE MATTERS—A ROMANTIC EPISODE—RETURN OF GEORGE WASHINGTON LAFAYETTE.

His official career being terminated, Washington set off for Mount Vernon accompanied by Mrs. Washington, her granddaughter Miss Nelly Custis, and George Washington Lafayette, with his preceptors.

Of the enthusiastic devotion manifested towards him wherever he passed, he takes the following brief and characteristic notice: "The attentions we met with on our journey were very flattering, and to some, whose minds are differently formed from mine, would have been highly relished; but I avoided, in every instance where I had any previous notice of the intention, and could, by earnest entreaties, prevail, all parade and escorts."

He is at length at Mount Vernon, that haven of repose to which he had so often turned a wishful eye, throughout his agitated and anxious life, and where he trusted to pass quietly and serenely the remainder of his days. He finds himself, however, "in the situation of a new beginner; almost every thing about him required considerable repairs, and a house is im-

mediately to be built for the reception and safe keeping of his military, civil, and private papers." "In a word," writes he, "I am already surrounded by joiners, masons, and painters, and such is my anxiety to be out of their hands, that I have scarcely a room to put a friend into, or to sit in myself, without the music of hammers and the odoriferous scent of paint."

Still he is at Mount Vernon, and as the spring opens the rural beauties of the country exert their sweetening influence. In a letter to his friend Oliver Wolcott, who, as Secretary of the Treasury, was still acting on "the great theatre," he adverts but briefly to public affairs. "For myself," adds he, exultingly, "having turned aside from the broad walks of political into the narrow paths of private life, I shall leave it with those whose duty it is to consider subjects of this sort, and, as every good citizen ought to do, conform to whatsoever the ruling powers shall decide. To make and sell a little flour annually, to repair houses going fast to ruin, to build one for the security of my papers of a public nature, and to amuse myself in agricultural and rural pursuits, will constitute employment for the few years I have to remain on this terrestrial globe. If, also, I could now and then meet the friends I esteem, it would fill the measure and add zest to my enjoyments; but, if ever this happens, it must be under my own vine and fig-tree, as I do not think it probable that I shall go beyond twenty miles from them."

And again, to another friend he indulges in pleasant anticipations: "Retired from noise myself and the responsibility attached to public employment, my hours will glide smoothly on. My best wishes, however, for the prosperity of our country will always have the first place in my thoughts; while to repair buidings and to cultivate my farms, which require close atten-

tion, will occupy the few years, perhaps days, I may be a sojourner here, as I am now in the sixty-fifth year of my peregrination through life." *

A letter to his friend James McHenry, Secretary of War, furnishes a picture of his every-day life. "I am indebted to you," writes he, "for several unacknowledged letters; but never mind that; go on as if you had answers. You are at the source of information, and can find many things to relate, while I have nothing to say that could either inform or amuse a Secretary of War in Philadelphia. I might tell him that I begin my diurnal course with the sun; that, if my hirelings are not in their places at that time, I send them messages of sorrow for their indisposition; that, having put these wheels in motion, I examine the state of things further; that the more they are probed the deeper I find the wounds which my buildings have sustained, by an absence and neglect of eight years; that, by the time I have accomplished these matters, breakfast (a little after seven o'clock, about the time I preume you are taking leave of Mrs. McHenry) is ready; that, this being over, I mount my horse and ride round my farms, which employs me until it is time to dress for dinner, at which I rarely miss seeing strange faces, come, as they say, out of respect to me. Pray, would not the word curiosity answer as well? And how different this from having a few social friends at a cheerful board! The usual time of sitting at table, a walk, and tea bring me within the dawn of candle light; previous to which, if not prevented by company, I resolve that, as soon as the glimmering taper supplies the place of the great luminary, I will retire to my writing table and acknowledge the

* Letter to Wm. Heath. Writings, xi. 199.

letters I have received; but when the lights are brought I feel tired and disinclined to engage in this work, conceiving that the next night will do as well. The next night comes, and with it the same causes for postponement, and so on. Having given you the history of a day, it will serve for a year, and, I am persuaded, you will not require a second edition of it. But it may strike you that in this detail no mention is made of any portion of time allotted for reading. The remark would be just, for I have not looked into a book since I came home; nor shall I be able to do it until I have discharged my workmen; probably not before the nights grow longer, when possibly I may be looking in Doomsday Book."

In his solitary rides about Mount Vernon and its woodlands, fond and melancholy thoughts would occasionally sadden the landscape as his mind reverted to past times and early associates. In a letter to Mrs. S. Fairfax, now in England, he writes: "It is a matter of sore regret when I cast my eyes toward Belvoir, which I often do, to reflect that the former inhabitants of it, with whom we lived in such harmony and friendship, no longer reside there, and the ruins only can be viewed as the mementoes of former pleasures."

The influx of strange faces alluded to in the letter to Mr. McHenry, soon became overwhelming, and Washington felt the necessity of having some one at hand to relieve him from a part of the self-imposed duties of Virginia hospitality.

With this view he bethought him of his nephew, Lawrence Lewis, the same who had gained favor with him by volunteering in the Western expedition, and accompanying General Knox as aide-de-camp. He accordingly addressed a letter to him in which he writes: "Whenever it is convenient to you to make

this place your home, I shall be glad to see you. * * * As both your aunt and I are in the decline of life, and regular in our habits, especially in our hours of rising and going to bed, I require some person (fit and proper) to ease me of the trouble of entertaining company, particularly of nights, as it is my inclination to retire, (and unless prevented by very particular company, I always do retire,) either to bed or to my study soon after candle light. In taking those duties (which hospitality obliges one to bestow on company) off my hands, it would render me a very acceptable service." *

In consequence of this invitation, Lawrence thenceforward became an occasional inmate at Mount Vernon. The place at this time possessed attractions for gay as well as grave, and was often enlivened by young company. One great attraction was Miss Nelly Custis, Mrs. Washington's grand-daugher, who, with her brother George W. P. Custis, had been adopted by the General at their father's death, when they were quite children, and brought up by him with the most affectionate care. He was fond of children, especially girls; as to boys, with all his spirit of command, he found them at times somewhat ungovernable. I can govern men, would he say, but I cannot govern boys. Miss Nelly had grown up under the special eye of her grandmother, to whom she was devotedly attached, and who was particular in enforcing her observance of all her lessons, as well as instructing her in the arts of housekeeping. She was a great favorite with the General; whom, as we have before observed, she delighted with her gay whims and sprightly sallies, often overcoming his habitual gravity, and surprising him into a hearty laugh.

* MS. Letter.

She was now maturing into a lovely and attractive woman, and the attention she received began to awaken some solicitude in the General's mind. This is evinced in a half-sportive letter of advice written to her during a temporary absence from Mount Vernon, when she was about to make her first appearance at a ball at Georgetown. It is curious as a specimen of Washington' counsel in love matters. It would appear that Miss Nelly, to allay his solicitude, had already, in her correspondence, professed "a perfect apathy toward the youth of the present day, and a determination never to give herself a moment's uneasiness on account of any of them." Washington doubted the firmness and constancy of her resolves. "Men and women," writes he, "feel the same inclination towards each other *now* that they always have done, and which they will continue to do, until there is a new order of things; and you, as others have done, may find that the passions of your sex are easier raised than allayed. Do not, therefore, boast too soon, nor too strongly of your insensibility. * * * Love is said to be an involuntary passion, and it is, therefore, contended that it cannot be resisted. This is true in part only, for like all things else, when nourished and supplied plentifully with aliment, it is rapid in its progress; but let these be withdrawn, and it may be stifled in its birth, or much stinted in its growth. * * * Although we cannot avoid *first* impressions, we may assuredly place them under guard. * * * When the fire is beginning to kindle and your heart growing warm, propound these questions to it. Who is this invader? Have I a competent knowledge of him? Is he a man of good character? A man of sense? For, be assured, a sensible woman can never be happy with a fool. What has been his walk in life? * * * Is his fortune sufficient to maintain me in the manner I have been

accustomed to live, and as my sisters do live? And is he one to whom my friends can have no reasonable objection? If all these interrogatories can be satisfactorily answered, there will remain but one more to be asked; that, however, is an important one. Have I sufficient ground to conclude that his affections are engaged by me? Without this the heart of sensibility will struggle against a passion that is not reciprocated." *

The sage counsels of Washington, and the susceptible feelings of Miss Nelly, were soon brought to the test by the residence of Lawrence Lewis at Mount Vernon. A strong attachment for her grew up on his part, or perhaps already existed, and was strengthened by daily intercourse. It was favorably viewed by his uncle. Whether it was fully reciprocated was uncertain. A formidable rival to Lewis appeared in the person of young Carroll of Carrollton, who had just returned from Europe, adorned with the graces of foreign travel, and whose suit was countenanced by Mrs. Washington. These were among the poetic days of Mount Vernon, when its halls echoed to the tread of lovers. They were halcyon days with Miss Nelly, as she herself declared, in after years, to a lady, from whom we have the story: "I was young and romantic then," said she, "and fond of wandering alone by moonlight in the woods of Mount Vernon. Grandmamma thought it wrong and unsafe, and scolded and coaxed me into a promise that I would not wander in the woods again *unaccompanied*. But I was missing one evening, and was brought home from the interdicted woods to the drawing-room, where the General was walking up and down with his hands behind him, as was his wont. Grandmamma, seated in her great arm-chair, opened a severe reproof."

* MS. Letter.

Poor Miss Nelly was reminded of her promise, and taxed with her delinquency. She knew that she had done wrong—admitted her fault, and essayed no excuse; but, when there was a slight pause, moved to retire from the room. She was just shutting the door when she overheard the General attempting, in a low voice, to intercede in her behalf. "My dear," observed he, "I would say no more—perhaps she was not alone."

His intercession stopped Miss Nelly in her retreat. She reopened the door and advanced up to the General with a firm step. "Sir," said she, "you brought me up to speak the truth, and when I told Grandmamma I was alone, I hope you believed *I was alone.*"

The General made one of his most magnanimous bows. "My child," replied he, "I beg your pardon."

We will anticipate dates, and observe that the romantic episode of Miss Nelly Custis terminated to the General's satisfaction; she became the happy wife of Lawrence Lewis, as will be recorded in a future page.

Early in the autumn, Washington had been relieved from his constant solicitude about the fortunes of Lafayette. Letters received by George W. Lafayette from friends in Hamburg, informed the youth that his father and family had been liberated from Olmutz and were on their way to Paris, with the intention of embarking for America. George was disposed to sail for France immediately, eager to embrace his parents and sisters in the first moments of their release. Washington urged him to defer his departure until he should receive letters from the prisoners themselves, lest they should cross the ocean in different directions at the same time, and pass each other, which would be a great shock to both parties. George however, was not to be

persuaded, and "I could not withhold my assent," writes Washington, "to the gratification of his wishes, to fly to the arms of those whom he holds most dear."

George and his tutor, Mr. Frestel, sailed from New York on the 26th of October. Washington writes from Mount Vernon to Lafayette: "This letter, I hope and expect, will be presented to you by your son, who is highly deserving of such parents as you and your amiable lady.

"He can relate, much better than I can describe, my participation in your sufferings, my solicitude for your relief, the measures I adopted, though ineffectual, to facilitate your liberation from an unjust and cruel imprisonment, and the joy I experienced at the news of its accomplishment. I shall hasten, therefore, to congratulate you, and be assured that no one can do it with more cordiality, with more sincerity, or with greater affection on the restoration of that liberty which every act of your life entitles you to the enjoyment of; and I hope I may add, to the uninterrupted possession of your estates, and the confidence of your country."

The account which George W. Lafayette had received of the liberation of the prisoners of Olmutz was premature. It did not take place until the 19th of September, nor was it until in the following month of February that the happy meeting took place beween George and his family, whom he found residing in the chateau of a relative in Holstein.

CHAPTER XXXII.

PARTING ADDRESS OF THE FRENCH DIRECTORY TO MR. MONROE—THE NEW AMERICAN MINISTER ORDERED TO LEAVE THE REPUBLIC—CONGRESS CONVENED—MEASURES OF DEFENCE RECOMMENDED—WASHINGTON'S CONCERN—APPOINTMENT OF THREE ENVOYS EXTRAORDINARY—DOUBTS THEIR SUCCESS—HEARS OF AN OLD COMPANION IN ARMS—THE THREE MINISTERS AND TALLEYRAND—THEIR DEGRADING TREATMENT—THREATENED WAR WITH FRANCE—WASHINGTON APPOINTED COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF—ARRANGES FOR THREE MAJOR GENERALS—KNOX AGGRIEVED.

Washington had been but a few months at Mount Vernon, when he received intelligence that his successor in office had issued a proclamation for a special session of Congress. He was not long in doubt as to its object. The French government had declared, on the recall of Mr. Monroe, that it would not receive any new minister plenipotentiary from the United States until that power should have redressed the grievances of which the republic had complained. When Mr. Monroe had his audience of leave, Mr. Barras, the president of the Directory, addressed him in terms complimentary to himself, but insulting to his country. "The French Republic hopes," said he, "that the successors of Columbus, of Raleigh, and of Penn, ever proud of their liberty, will never forget that they owe it to France. * * * In

their wisdom, they will weigh the magnanimous benevolence of the French people with the artful caresses of perfidious designers, who meditate to draw them back to their ancient slavery. Assure, Mr. Minister, the good American people that, like them, we adore liberty; that they will always have our esteem, and that they will find in the French people the republican generosity which knows how to accord peace, as it knows how to make its sovereignty respected.

"As to you, Mr. Minister Plenipotentiary, you have fought for the principles, you have known the true interests of your country. Depart with our regrets. We give up, in you, a representative of America, and we retain the remembrance of the citizen whose personal qualities honor that title."

A few days afterwards, when Mr. Charles Cotesworth Pinckney presented himself as successor to Mr. Monroe, the Direcotry refused to receive him, and followed up the indignity by ordering him to leave the territories of the republic. Its next step was to declare applicable to American ships the rules in regard to neutrals, contained in the treaty which Washington had signed with England.

It was in view of these facts and of the captures of American vessels by French cruisers, that President Adams had issued a proclamation to convene Congress on the 15th of May. In his opening speech, he adverted especially to what had fallen from Mr. Barras in Monroe's audience of leave. "The speech of the President," said he, "discloses sentiments more alarming than the refusal of a minister, because more dangerous to our independence and union; and, at the same time, studiously marked with indignities towards the government of the United States. It evinces a disposition to separate the people from their government; to per-

suade them that they have different affections, principles, and interests from those of their fellow-citizens, whom they themselves have chosen to manage their common concerns, and thus to produce divisions fatal to our peace. Such attempts ought to be repelled with a decision which shall convince France and the world, that we are not a degraded people, humiliated under a colonial spirit of fear, and sense of inferiority, fitted to be the miserable instrument of foreign influence, and regardless of national honor, character, and interest."

Still he announced his intention to institute a fresh attempt by negotiation, to effect an amicable adjustment of differences, on terms compatible with the rights, duties, interests, and honor of the nation, but in the mean time he recommended to Congress to provide effectual measures of defence.

Though personally retired from public life, Washington was too sincere a patriot to be indifferent to public affairs, and felt acutely the unfriendly acts of the French Government, so repugnant to our rights and dignity. "The President's speech," writes he, "will, I conceive, draw forth, mediately or immediately, an expression of the public mind; and as it is the right of the people that this should be carried into effect, their sentiments ought to be unequivocally known, that the principles on which the government has acted, and which, from the President's speech, are likely to be continued, may either be changed, or the opposition that is endeavoring to embarrass every measure of the executive, may meet effectual discountenance. Things cannot and ought not to remain any longer in their present disagreeable state. Nor, should the idea that the government and the people have different views, be suffered any longer to prevail at home or abroad; for it is not only injurious to us, but disgraceful also, that a govern-

ment constituted as ours is, should be administered contrary to their interest, if the fact be so." *

In pursuance of the policy announced by Mr. Adams, three envoys extraordinary were appointed to the French republic, viz.: Charles Cotesworth Pinckney, John Marshall, and Elbridge Gerry; the two former federalists, the latter a democrat. The object of their mission, according to the President, was "to dissipate umbrages, remove prejudices, rectify errors, and adjust all differences by a treaty between the two powers."

Washington doubted an adjustment of the differences. "Candor," said he, "is not a more conspicuous trait in the character of governments than it is of individuals. It is hardly to be expected, then, that the Directory of France will acknowledge its errors and tread back its steps immediately. This would announce at once, that there has been precipitancy and injustice in the measures they have pursued; or that they were incapable of judging, and had been deceived by false appearances."

About this time he received a pamphlet on the "Military and Political Situation of France." It was sent to him by the author, General Dumas, who, in the time of our revolution, had been an officer in the army of the Count de Rochambeau. "Your Excellency," writes Dumas, "will observe in it (the pamphlet) the effect of your lessons." Then speaking of his old military chief: "General Rochambeau," adds he, "is still at his country seat near Vendome. He enjoys there tolerably good health considering his great age, and reckons, as well as his military family, amongst his most dear and glorious remembrances, that of the time we had the honor to serve under your command."

* Letter to Thomas Pinckney. Writings, xi. 202.

Some time had elapsed since Washington had heard of his old companion in arms, who had experienced some of the melodramatic vicissitudes of the French revolution. After the arrest of the king he had taken anew the oath of the constitution, and commanded the army of the north, having again received the baton of field marshal. Thwarted in his plans by the minister of war, he had resigned and retired to his estate near Vendome; but, during the time of terror had been arrested, conducted to Paris, thrown into the conciergerie, and condemned to death. When the car came to convey a number of the victims to the guillotine, he was about to mount it, but the executioner seeing it full, thrust him back. "Stand back, old marshal," cried he, roughly, "your turn will come by and bye." (Retire toi, vieux maréchal, ton tour viendra plus tard.) A sudden change in political affairs saved his life, and enabled him to return to his home near Vendome, where he now resided."

In a reply to Dumas, which Washington forwarded by the minister plenipotentiary about to depart for France, he sent his cordial remembrances to de Rochambeau.*

The three ministers met in Paris on the 4th of October, (1797,) but were approached by Talleyrand and his agents in a manner which demonstrated that the avenue to justice could only be opened by gold. Their official report† reveals the whole

* The worthy de Rochambeau survived the storms of the Revolution. In 1803 he was presented to Napoleon, who, pointing to Berthier and other generals who had once served under his orders, said: "Marshal, behold your scholars." "The scholars have surpassed their master," replied the modest veteran.

In the following year he received the cross of grand officer of the legion of honor, and a marshal's pension. He died full of years and honors, in 1807.

† American State Papers, vols. iii. and iv.

of this dishonorable intrigue. It states that Mr. Pinckney received a visit from Mr. Bellarni, the secret agent of Mr. Talleyrand, who assured him that Citizen Talleyrand had the highest esteem for America and the citizens of the United States, and was most anxious for their reconciliation with France. With that view some of the most offensive passages in the speech of President Adams (in May 1797) must be expunged, and a douceur of two hundred and fifty thousand dollars put at the disposal of Mr. Talleyrand for the use of the Directory, and a large loan made by America to France.

On the 20th of October, the same subject was resumed in the apartments of the plenipotentiary, and on this occasion, beside the secret agent, an intimate friend of Talleyrand was present. The expunging of the passages in the President's speech was again insisted on, and it was added that, after that, money was the principal object. "We must have money—a great deal of money!" were his words.

At a third conference, October 21st, the sum was fixed at 32,000,000 francs (6,400,000 dollars), as a loan secured on the *Dutch contributions*, and 250,000 dollars in the form of a *douceur* to the Directory.

At a subsequent meeting, October 27th, the same secret agent said, "Gentlemen, you mistake the point, *you say nothing of the money you are to give—you make no offer of money—on that point you are not explicit.*" "We are explicit enough," replied the American envoys. "We will not give you one farthing; and before coming here, we should have thought such an offer as you now propose, would have been regarded as a mortal insult."

On this indignant reply, the wily agent intimated that if they would only pay, by way of fees, just as they would to a lawyer,

who should plead their cause, the sum required for the private use of the Directory, they might remain at Paris until they should receive further orders from America as to the loan required for government.*

Being inaccessible to any such disgraceful and degrading propositions, the envoys remained several months in Paris unaccredited, and finally returned at separate times, without an official discussion of the object of their mission. †

During this residence of the envoys in Paris, the Directory, believing the *people* of the United States would not sustain their government in a war against France, proceeded to enact a law subjecting to capture and condemnation neutral vessels and their cargoes, if any portion of the latter was of British fabric or produce, although the entire property might belong to neutrals. As the United States were at this time the great neutral carriers of the world, this iniquitous decree struck at a vital point in their maritime power. ‡

When this act and the degrading treatment of the American envoys became known, the spirit of the nation was aroused, and war with France seemed inevitable.

The crisis was at once brought to Washington's own door. "You ought to be aware," writes Hamilton to him, May 19th, "that in the event of an open rupture with France, the public voice will again call you to command the armies of your country; and though all who are attached to you will, from attachment as

* See Life of Talleyrand, by the Rev. Charles K. McHarg, pp. 161, 162.

† Marshall left France April 16th, 1798; Gerry on the 26th of July. Pinckney, detained by the illness of his daughter, did not arrive in the United States until early in October.

‡ McHarg's Life of Talleyrand, 160.

well as public considerations, deplore an occasion which should once more tear you from that repose to which you have so good a right, yet it is the opinion of all those with whom I converse, that you will be compelled to make the sacrifice. All your past labors may demand, to give them efficacy, this farther, this very great sacrifice."

The government was resolved upon vigorous measures. Congress, on the 28th of May, authorized Mr. Adams to enlist ten thousand men as a provisional army, to be called by him into actual service, in case of hostilities.

Adams was perplexed by the belligerent duties thus suddenly devolved upon him. How should he proceed in forming an army? Should he call on all the old generals who had figured in the revolution, or appoint a young set? Military tactics were changed, and a new kind of enemy was to be met. "If the French come here," said he, "we will have to march with a quick step and attack, for in that way only they are said to be vulnerable."

These and other questions he propounded to Washington by letter, on the 22d of June. "I must tax you sometimes for advice," writes he. "We must have your name, if you will in any case permit us to use it. There will be more efficacy in it than in many an army."

And McHenry, the Secretary of War, writes, about the same time: "You see how the storm thickens, and that our vessel will soon require its ancient pilot. Will you—may we flatter ourselves, that, in a crisis so awful and important, you will—accept the command of all our armies? I hope you will, because you alone can unite all hearts and all hands, if it is possible that they can be united."

In a reply to the President's letter, Washington writes, on the 4th of July: "At the epoch of my retirement, an invasion of these States by any European power, or even the probability of such an event happening in my days, was so far from being contemplated by me, that I had no conception that that or any other occurrence would arise in so short a period, which could turn my eyes from the shade of Mount Vernon. * * * In case of *actual invasion*, by a formidable force, I certainly should not intrench myself under the cover of age and retirement, if my services should be required by my country to assist in repelling it."

And in his reply of the same date, to the Secretary of War, he writes: "I see, as you do, that clouds are gathering, and that a storm may ensue; and I find, too, from a variety of hints, that my quiet, under these circumstances, does not promise to be of long continuance.

* * * * * * *

"As my whole life has been dedicated to my country in one shape or another, for the poor remains of it, it is not an object to contend for ease and quiet, when all that is valuable is at stake, further than to be satisfied that the sacrifice I should make of these, is acceptable and desired by my country."

Before these letters were despatched he had already been nominated to the Senate (July 3d) commander-in-chief of all the armies raised or to be raised. His nomination was unanimously confirmed on the following day, and it was determined that the Secretary of War should be the bearer of the commission to Mount Vernon, accompanied by a letter from the President. "The reasons and motives," writes Mr. Adams in his instructions to the Secretary, "which prevailed with me to venture

upon such a step as the nomination of this great and illustrious character, whose voluntary resignation alone occasioned my introduction to the office I now hold, were too numerous to be detailed in this letter, and are too obvious and important to escape the observation of any part of America or Europe. But as it is a movement of great delicacy, it will require all your address to communicate the subject in a manner that shall be unoffensive to his feelings and consistent with all the respect that is due from me to him.

"If the General should decline the appointment, all the world will be silent and respectfully assent. If he should accept it, all the world, except the enemies of this country, will rejoice."

Mr. McHenry was instructed to consult Washington upon the organization of the army, and upon every thing relating to it. He was the bearer also of a letter from Hamilton. "I use the liberty," writes he, "which my attachment to you and to the public authorizes, to offer you my opinion, that you should not decline the appointment. It is evident that the public satisfaction at it is lively and universal. It is not to be doubted that the circumstances will give an additional spring to the public mind, will tend much to unite, and will facilitate the measures which the conjuncture requires."

It was with a heavy heart that Washington found his dream of repose once more interrupted; but his strong fidelity to duty would not permit him to hesitate. He accepted the commission, however, with the condition that he should not be called into the field until the army was in a situation to require his presence; or it should become indispensable by the urgency of circumstances.

"In making this reservation," added he, in his letter to the

President, "I beg it to be understood that I do not mean to withhold any assistance to arrange and organize the army, which you may think I can afford. I take the liberty, also, to mention that I must decline having my acceptance considered as drawing after it any immediate charge upon the public; or that I can receive any emoluments annexed to the appointment before entering into a situation to incur expense."

He made another reservation, through the Secretary of War, but did not think proper to embody it in his public letter of acceptance, as that would be communicated to the Senate, which was, that the principal officers in the line and of the staff, should be such as he could place confidence in.

As to the question which had perplexed Mr. Adams whether, in forming the army, to call on all the old generals or appoint a new set, Washington's idea was that, as the armies about to be raised were commencing *de novo*, the President had the right to make officers of citizens or soldiers at his discretion, availing himself of the best aid the country afforded. That no officer of the old army, disbanded fourteen years before, could *expect*, much less *claim*, an appointment on any other ground than superior experience, brilliant exploits, and general celebrity founded on merit.

It was with such views that, in the arrangements made by him with the Secretary of War, the three Major-Generals stood, Hamilton, who was to be Inspector-General, Charles Cotesworth Pinckney (not yet returned from Europe), and Knox: in which order he wished their commissions to be dated. The appointment of Hamilton as second in command was desired by the public, on account of his distinguished ability, energy, and fidelity. Pickering, in recommending it, writes: "The enemy whom we

are now preparing to encounter, veterans in arms, led by able and active officers, and accustomed to victory, must be met by the best blood, talents, energy, and experience, that our country can produce." Washington, speaking of him to the President, says: "Although Colonel Hamilton has never acted in the character of a general officer, yet, his opportunities as the principal and most confidential aid of the commander-in-chief, afforded him the means of viewing every thing on a larger scale than those whose attention was confined to divisions or brigades, who know nothing of the correspondences of the commander-in-chief, or of the various orders to, or transactions with, the general staff of the army. These advantages, and his having served with usefulness in the old Congress, in the general convention, and having filled one of the most important departments of government, with acknowledged abilities and integrity, have placed him on high ground, and made him a conspicuous character in the United States and in Europe. * * * *

"By some he is considered an ambitious man, and, therefore, a dangerous one. That he is ambitious, I shall readily grant, but it is of that laudable kind which prompts a man to excel in whatever he takes in hand. He is enterprising, quick in his perceptions, and his judgment intuitively great—qualities essential to a military character."

Charles Cotesworth Pinckney was placed next in rank, not solely on account of his military qualifications, which were great, but of his popularity and influence in the Southern States, where his connections were numerous and powerful; it being apprehended that, if the French intended an invasion in force, their operations would commence south of Maryland; in which case it

would be all-important to embark General Pinckney and his connections heartily in the active scenes that would follow.

By this arrangement Hamilton and Pinckney took precedence of Knox, an officer whom Washington declared he loved and esteemed; but he trusted the exigencies of the case would reconcile the latter to the position assigned to him. "Viewing things in this light," writes he to Knox, July 16th, "I would fain hope, as we are forming an army anew, which army, if needful at all, is to fight for every thing which ought to be dear and sacred to freemen, that former rank will be forgotten, and, among the fit and chosen characters, the only contention will be who shall be foremost in zeal at this crisis to serve his country, in whatever situation circumstances may place him."

The reply of Knox, written in the glow of the moment, bespoke how deeply his warm impulsive feelings were wounded. "I yesterday received your favor," writes he, "which I opened with all the delightful sensations of affection, which I always before experienced upon the receipt of your letters. But I found, on its perusal, a striking instance of that vicissitude of human affairs and friendships, which you so justly describe. I read it with astonishment, which, however, subsided in the reflection that few men know themselves, and therefore, that for more than twenty years I have been acting under a perfect delusion. Conscious myself of entertaining for you a sincere, active, and invariable friendship, I easily believed it was reciprocal. Nay more, I flattered myself with your esteem and respect in a military point of view. But I find that others, greatly my juniors in rank, have been, upon a scale of comparison, preferred before me. Of this, perhaps, the world may also concur with you that I have no just reason to complain. But every intelligent and just prin-

ciple of society required, either that I should have been previously consulted in an arrangement, in which my feelings and happiness have been so much wounded, or that I should not have been dragged forth to public view at all, to make the comparison so conspicuously odious."

After continuing in an expostulatory vein, followed by his own views of the probable course of invasion, he adds, toward the close of his letter,—"I have received no other notification of an appointment than what the newspapers announce. When it shall please the Secretary of War to give me the information, I shall endeavor to make him a suitable answer. At present, I do not perceive how it can possibly be to any other purport, than in the negative."

In conclusion, he writes: "In whatever situation I shall be, I shall always remember with pleasure and gratitude, the friendship and confidence with which you have heretofore honored me.

"I am, with the highest attachment, &c."

Washington was pained in the extreme at the view taken by General Knox of the arrangement, and at the wound which it had evidently given to his feelings and his pride. In a letter to the President (25th Sept.), he writes: "With respect to General Knox, I can say with truth there is no man in the United States with whom I have been in habits of greater intimacy, no one whom I have loved more sincerely, nor any for whom I have had a greater friendship. But esteem, love, and friendship can have no influence on my mind, when I conceive that the subjugation of our government and independence are the objects aimed at by the enemies of our peace, and when possibly our all is at stake."

In reply to Knox, Washington, although he thought the reasons assigned in his previous letter ought to have been sufficiently

explanatory of his motives; went into long details of the circumstances under which the military appointments had been made, and the important considerations which dictated them; and showing that it was impossible for him to consult Knox previously to the nomination of the general officers.

"I do not know," writes he, "that these explanations will afford you any satisfaction or produce any change in your determination, but it was just to myself to make them. If there has been any management in the business, it has been concealed from me. I have had no agency therein, nor have I conceived a thought on the subject that has not been disclosed to you with the utmost sincerity and frankness of heart. And now, notwithstanding the insinuations, which are implied in your letter, of the vicissitudes of friendship and the inconstancy of mine, I will pronounce with decision, that it ever has been, and, notwithstanding the unkindness of the charge, ever will be, for aught I know to the contrary, warm and sincere."

The genial heart of Knox was somewhat soothed and mollified by the "welcome and much esteemed letter of Washington, in which," said he, "I recognize fully all the substantial friendship and kindness which I have invariably experienced from you." Still he was tenacious of the point of precedence, and unwilling to serve in a capacity which would compromise his pride. "If an invasion shall take place," writes he, "I shall deeply regret all circumstances which would insuperably bar my having an active command in the field. But if such a measure should be my destiny, I shall fervently petition to serve as one of your aides-de-camp, which, with permission, I shall do with all the cordial devotion and affection of which my soul is capable."

On the 18th of October Washington learnt through the

Gazettes of the safe arrival of General Pinckney at New York, and was anxious lest there should be a second part of the difficulty created by General Knox. On the 21st he writes again to Knox, reiterating his wish to have him in the augmented corps a major-general.

"We shall have either *no war*, or a *severe contest* with France; in either case, if you will allow me to express my opinion, this is the most eligible time for you to come forward. In the first case, to assist with your counsel and aid in making judicious provisions and arrangements to avert it; in the other case, to share in the glory of defending your country, and, by making all secondary objects yield to that great and primary object, display a mind superior to embarrassing punctilios at so critical a moment as the present.

"After having expressed these sentiments with the frankness of undisguised friendship, it is hardly necessary to add, that, if you should finally decline the appointment of Major-General, there is none to whom I would give a more decided preference as an aide-de-camp, the offer of which is highly flattering, honorable, and grateful to my feelings, and for which I entertain a high sense. But, my dear General Knox, and here again I repeat to you, in the language of candor and friendship, examine well your own mind upon this subject. Do not unite yourself to the suite of a man, whom you may consider as the primary cause of what you call a degradation, with unpleasant sensations. This, while it is gnawing upon you, would, if I should come to the knowledge of it, make me unhappy; as my first wish would be that my military family, and the whole army, should consider themselves a band of brothers, willing and ready to die for each other."

Before Knox could have received this letter, he had on the 23d

of October, written to the Secretary of War, declining to serve under Hamilton and Pinckney, on the principle that "no officer can consent to his own degradation by serving in an inferior station." General Pinckney, on the contrary, cheerfully accepted his appointment, although placed under Hamilton, who had been of inferior rank to him in the last war. It was with the greatest pleasure he had seen that officer's name at the head of the list of major-generals, and applauded the discernment which had placed him there. He regretted that General Knox had declined his appointment, and that his feelings should be hurt by being outranked. "If the authority," adds he, "which appointed me to the rank of second major in the army, will review the arrangement, and place General Knox before me, I will neither quit the service nor be dissatisfied." *

* Letter to the Secretary of War.

CHAPTER XXXIII.

WASHINGTON TAXED ANEW WITH THE CARES OF OFFICE—CORRESPONDENCE WITH LAFAYETTE—A MARRIAGE AT MOUNT VERNON—APPOINTMENT OF A MINISTER TO THE FRENCH REPUBLIC—WASHINGTON'S SURPRISE—HIS ACTIVITY ON HIS ESTATE—POLITICAL ANXIETIES—CONCERN ABOUT THE ARMY.

Early in November (1798) Washington left his retirement and repaired to Philadelphia, at the earnest request of the Secretary of War, to meet that public functionary and Major-Generals Hamilton and Pinckney, and make arrangements respecting the forces about to be raised. The Secretary had prepared a series of questions for their consideration, and others were suggested by Washington, all bearing upon the organization of the provisional army. Upon these Washington and the two Major-Generals were closely engaged for nearly five weeks, at great inconvenience and in a most inclement season. The result of their deliberations was reduced to form, and communicated to the Secretary in two letters drafted by Hamilton, and signed by the Commander-in-chief. Not the least irksome of Washington's task, in his present position, was to wade through volumes of applications and recommendations for military appointments; a task which he performed

with extreme assiduity, anxious to avoid the influence of favor or prejudice, and sensitively alive to the evil of improper selections.

As it was a part of the plan on which he had accepted the command of the army to decline the occupations of the office until circumstances should require his presence in the field; and as the season and weather rendered him impatient to leave Philadelphia, he gave the Secretary of War his views and plans for the charge and direction of military affairs, and then set out once more for Mount Vernon. The cares and concerns of office, however, followed him to his retreat. "It is not the time nor the attention only," writes he, "which the public duties I am engaged in require, but their bringing upon me applicants, recommenders of applicants, and seekers of information, none of whom, perhaps, are my acquaintances, with their servants and horses to aid in the consumption of my forage, and what to me is more valuable, my time, that I most regard; for a man in the country, nine miles from any house of entertainment, is differently situated from one in a city, where none of these inconveniences are felt."

In a letter, recently received from Lafayette, the latter spoke feelingly of the pleasure he experienced in conversing incessantly with his son George about Mount Vernon, its dear and venerated inhabitants, of the tender obligations, so profoundly felt, which he and his son had contracted towards him who had become a father to both.

In the conclusion of his letter, Lafayette writes that, from the information he had received, he was fully persuaded that the French Directory desired to be at peace with the United States. "The aristocratical party," adds he, "whose hatred of America dates from the commencement of the European revolution, and the English government, which, since the Declaration of Inde-

pendence, have forgotten and forgiven nothing, will rejoice, I know, at the prospect of a rupture between two nations heretofore united in the cause of liberty, and will endeavor, by all the means in their power, to precipitate us into a war. * * * * But you are there, my dear General, independent of all parties, venerated by all, and if, as I hope, your information lead you to judge favorably of the disposition of the French government, your influence ought to prevent the breach from widening, and should insure a noble and durable reconciliation."

In his reply, Dec. 25th, Washington says: "You have expressed a wish worthy of the benevolence of your heart, that I would exert all my endeavors to avert the calamitous effects of a rupture between our countries. Believe me, my dear friend, that no man can deprecate an event of this sort more than I should. * * * You add, in another place, that the Executive Directory are disposed to an accommodation of all differences. If they are sincere in this declaration, let them evidence it by actions; for words, unaccompanied therewith, will not be much regarded now. I would pledge myself that the government and people of the United States will meet them heart and hand at a fair negotiation; having no wish more ardent than to live in peace with all the world, provided they are suffered to remain undisturbed in their just rights."

"Of the politics of Europe," adds he, in another part of his letter, "I shall express no opinion, nor make any inquiry who is right or who is wrong. I wish well to all nations and to all men. My politics are plain and simple. I think every nation has a right to establish that form of government under which it conceives it may live most happy; provided it infringes no right, or is not dangerous to others; and that no governments ought to

interfere with the internal concerns of another, except for the security of what is due to themselves."

Washington's national pride, however, had been deeply wounded by the indignities inflicted on his country by the French, and he doubted the propriety of entering into any fresh negotiations with them, unless overtures should be made on their part. As to any symptoms of an accommodation they might at present evince, he ascribed them to the military measures adopted by the United States, and thought those measures ought not to be relaxed.

We have spoken in a preceding chapter of a love affair growing up at Mount Vernon between Washington's nephew, Lawrence Lewis, and Miss Nelly Custis. The parties had since become engaged, to the General's great satisfaction, and their nuptials were celebrated at Mount Vernon on his birthday, the 22d of February (1799). Lawrence had recently received the commission of Major of cavalry in the new army which was forming; and Washington made arrangements for settling the newly married couple near him on a part of the Mount Vernon lands, which he had designated in his will to be bequeathed to Miss Nelly.

As the year opened, Washington continued to correspond with the Secretary of War and General Hamilton on the affairs of the provisional army. The recruiting business went on slowly, with interruptions, and there was delay in furnishing commissions to the officers who had been appointed. Washington, who was not in the secrets of the cabinet, was at a loss to account for this apparent torpor. "If the augmented force," writes he to Hamilton, "was not intended as an *in terrorem* measure, the delay in recruiting it is unaccountable, and baffles all conjecture on reasonable grounds."

The fact was, that the military measures taken in America had really produced an effect on French policy. Efforts had been made by M. Talleyrand, through unofficial persons, to induce an amicable overture on the part of the United States. At length that wily minister had written to the French Secretary of Legation at the Hague, M. Pichon, intimating that whatever plenipotentiary the United States might send to France to put an end to the existing differences between the two countries, would be undoubtedly received with the respect due to the representative of a free, independent, and powerful nation. M. Pichon communicated a copy of this letter to Mr. William Vans Murray, the American minister in Holland, who forthwith transmitted it to his government. Mr. Adams caught at the chance for an extrication from his belligerent difficulties, and laid this letter before the Senate on the 18th of February, at the same time nominating Mr. Murray to be minister plenipotentiary to the French Republic.

Washington expressed his extreme surprise when the news of this unexpected event reached him. "But far, very far indeed," writes he, "was that surprise short of what I experienced the next day, when, by a very intelligent gentleman immediately from Philadelphia, I was informed that there had been no *direct* overture from the government of France to that of the United States for a negotiation; on the contrary, that M. Talleyrand was playing the same loose and roundabout game he had attempted the year before with our envoys; and which, as in that case, might mean any thing or nothing, as would subserve his purposes best."

Before the Senate decided on the nomination of Mr. Murray, two other persons were associated with him in the mission, namely,

Oliver Ellsworth and Patrick Henry. The three envoys being confirmed, Mr. Murray was instructed by letter to inform the French Minister of Foreign Affairs of the fact, but to apprise him that his associate envoys would not embark for Europe until the Directory had given assurance, through their Minister for Foreign Affairs, that those envoys would be received in proper form and treated with on terms of equality. Mr. Murray was directed at the same time to have no further informal communications with any French agent.

Mr. Henry declined to accept his appointment on account of ill health, and Mr. William Richardson Davie was ultimately substituted for him.

Throughout succeeding months, Washington continued to superintend from a distance the concerns of the army, as his ample and minute correspondence manifests; and he was at the same time earnestly endeavoring to bring the affairs of his rural domain into order. A sixteen years' absence from home, with short intervals, had, he said, deranged them considerably, so that it required all the time he could spare from the usual avocations of life to bring them into tune again. It was a period of incessant activity and toil, therefore, both mental and bodily. He was for hours in his study occupied with his pen, and for hours on horseback, riding the rounds of his extensive estate, visiting the various farms, and superintending and directing the works in operation. All this he did with unfailing vigor, though now in his sixty-seventh year.

Occasional reports of the sanguinary conflict that was going on in Europe would reach him in the quiet groves of Mount Vernon, and awaken his solicitude. "A more destructive sword,"

said he, "was never drawn, at least in modern times, than this war has produced. It is time to sheathe it and give peace to mankind." *

Amid this strife and turmoil of the nations, he felt redoubled anxiety about the success of the mission to France. The great successes of the allies combined against that power; the changes in the Directory, and the rapidity with which every thing seemed verging towards a restoration of the monarchy, induced some members of the cabinet to advise a suspension of the mission; but Mr. Adams was not to be convinced or persuaded. Having furnished the commissioners with their instructions, he gave his final order for their departure, and they sailed in a frigate from Rhode Island on the 3d of November.

A private letter written by Washington shortly afterwards to the Secretary of War, bespeaks his apprehensions: "I have for some time past viewed the political concerns of the United States with an anxious and painful eye. They appear to me to be moving by hasty strides to a crisis; but in what it will result, that Being, who sees, foresees, and directs all things, alone can tell. The vessel is afloat, or very nearly so, and considering myself as a passenger only, I shall trust to the mariners (whose duty it is to watch) to steer it into a safe port."

His latest concern about the army was to give instructions for *hutting* the troops according to an idea originally suggested by Hamilton, and adopted in the revolutionary war. "Although I had determined to take no charge of any military operations," writes he, "unless the troops should be called into the field, yet, under the present circumstances, and considering that the ad-

* Letter to William Vans Murray.

vanced season of the year will admit of no delay in providing winter quarters for the troops, I have willingly given my aid in that business, and shall never decline any assistance in my power, *when necessary*, to promote the good of the service." *

* Washington's Writings, xi. 463.

CHAPTER XXXIV.

WASHINGTON DIGESTS A PLAN FOR THE MANAGEMENT OF HIS ESTATE—HIS VIEWS IN REGARD TO A MILITARY ACADEMY—LETTER TO HAMILTON—HIS LAST HOURS—THE FUNERAL—THE WILL—ITS PROVISIONS IN REGARD TO HIS SLAVES—PROCEEDINGS OF CONGRESS ON HIS DEATH—CONCLUSION.

WINTER had now set in, with occasional wind and rain and frost, yet Washington still kept up his active round of in-door and out-door avocations, as his diary records. He was in full health and vigor, dined out occasionally, and had frequent guests at Mount Vernon, and, as usual, was part of every day in the saddle, going the rounds of his estates, and, in his military phraseology, "visiting the outposts."

He had recently walked with his favorite nephew about the grounds, showing the improvements he intended to make, and had especially pointed out the spot where he purposed building a new family vault; the old one being damaged by the roots of trees which had overgrown it and caused it to leak. "This change," said he, "I shall make the first of all, for I may require it before the rest."

"When I parted from him," adds the nephew, "he stood on

the steps of the front door, where he took leave of myself and another. * * * * It was a bright frosty morning; he had taken his usual ride, and the clear healthy flush on his cheek, and his sprightly manner, brought the remark from both of us that we had never seen the General look so well. I have sometimes thought him decidedly the handsomest man I ever saw; and when in a lively mood, so full of pleasantry, so agreeable to all with whom he associated, that I could hardly realize he was the same Washington whose dignity awed all who approached him."*

For some time past Washington had been occupied in digesting a complete system on which his estate was to be managed for several succeeding years; specifying the cultivation of the several farms, with tables designating the rotations of the crops. It occupied thirty folio pages, and was executed with that clearness and method which characterized all his business papers. This was finished on the 10th of December, and was accompanied by a letter of that date to his manager or steward. It is a valuable document, showing the soundness and vigor of his intellect at this advanced stage of his existence, and the love of order that reigned throughout his affairs. "My greatest anxiety," said he on a previous occasion, "is to have all these concerns in such a clear and distinct form, that no reproach may attach itself to me when I have taken my departure for the land of spirits."†

It was evident, however, that full of health and vigor, he looked forward to his long-cherished hope, the enjoyment of a serene old age in this home of his heart.

According to his diary, the morning on which these volumi-

* Paulding's Life of Washington, vol. ii. p. 196.

† Letter to James McHenry. Writings, xi. 407.

nous instructions to his steward were dated was clear and calm, but the afternoon was lowering. The next day (11th), he notes that there was wind and rain, and "at night *a large circle round the moon.*"

The morning of the 12th was overcast. That morning he wrote a letter to Hamilton, heartily approving of a plan for a military academy, which the latter had submitted to the Secretary of War. "The establishment of an institution of this kind upon a respectable and extensive basis," observes he, "has ever been considered by me an object of primary importance to this country; and while I was in the chair of government I omitted no proper opportunity of recommending it in my public speeches and otherwise, to the attention of the legislature. But I never undertook to go into a detail of the organization of such an academy, leaving this task to others, whose pursuit in the path of science and attention to the arrangement of such institutions, had better qualified them for the execution of it. * * * I sincerely hope that the subject will meet with due attention, and that the reasons for its establishment which you have clearly pointed out in your letter to the secretary, will prevail upon the legislature to place it upon a permanent and respectable footing." He closes his letter with an assurance of "very great esteem and regard," the last words he was ever to address to Hamilton.

About ten o'clock he mounted his horse, and rode out as usual to make the rounds of the estate. The ominous ring round the moon, which he had observed on the preceding night, proved a fatal portent. "About one o'clock," he notes, "it began to snow, soon after to hail, and then turned to a settled cold rain." Having on an over-coat, he continued his ride without regarding the weather, and did not return to the house until after three.

His secretary approached him with letters to be franked, that they might be taken to the post-office in the evening. Washington franked the letters, but observed that the weather was too bad to send a servant out with them. Mr. Lear perceived that snow was hanging from his hair, and expressed fears that he had got wet; but he replied, "No, his great-coat had kept him dry." As dinner had been waiting for him he sat down to table without changing his dress. "In the evening," writes his secretary, "he appeared as well as usual."

On the following morning the snow was three inches deep and still falling, which prevented him from taking his usual ride. He complained of a sore throat, and had evidently taken cold the day before. In the afternoon the weather cleared up, and he went out on the grounds between the house and the river, to mark some trees which were to be cut down. A hoarseness which had hung about him through the day grew worse towards night, but he made light of it.

He was very cheerful in the evening, as he sat in the parlor with Mrs. Washington and Mr. Lear, amusing himself with the papers which had been brought from the post-office. When he met with any thing interesting or entertaining, he would read it aloud as well as his hoarseness would permit, or he listened and made occasional comments, while Mr. Lear read the debates of the Virginia Assembly.

On retiring to bed, Mr. Lear suggested that he should take something to relieve the cold. "No," replied he, "you know I never take any thing for a cold. Let it go as it came."

In the night he was taken extremely ill with ague and difficulty of breathing. Between two and three o'clock in the morning he awoke Mrs. Washington, who would have risen to call a

servant; but he would not permit her, lest she should take cold. At daybreak, when the servant woman entered to make a fire, she was sent to call Mr. Lear. He found the general breathing with difficulty, and hardly able to utter a word intelligibly. Washington desired that Dr. Craik, who lived in Alexandria, should be sent for, and that in the mean time Rawlins, one of the overseers, should be summoned, to bleed him before the doctor could arrive.

A gargle was prepared for his throat, but whenever he attempted to swallow any of it, he was convulsed and almost suffocated. Rawlins made his appearance soon after sunrise, but when the general's arm was ready for the operation, became agitated. "Don't be afraid," said the general, as well as he could speak. Rawlins made an incision. "The orifice is not large enough," said Washington. The blood, however, ran pretty freely, and Mrs. Washington, uncertain whether the treatment was proper, and fearful that too much blood might be taken, begged Mr. Lear to stop it. When he was about to untie the string the general put up his hand to prevent him, and as soon as he could speak, murmured, "more—more;" but Mrs. Washington's doubts prevailed, and the bleeding was stopped, after about half a pint of blood had been taken. External applications were now made to the throat, and his feet were bathed in warm water, but without affording any relief.

His old friend, Dr. Craik, arrived between eight and nine, and two other physicians, Drs. Dick and Brown, were called in. Various remedies were tried, and additional bleeding, but all of no avail.

"About half past four o'clock," writes Mr. Lear, "he desired me to call Mrs. Washington to his bedside, when he requested

her to go down into his room and take from his desk two wills, which she would find there, and bring them to him, which she did. Upon looking at them, he gave her one, which he observed was useless, as being superseded by the other, and desired her to burn it, which she did, and took the other and put it into her closet.

"After this was done, I returned to his bedside and took his hand. He said to me: 'I find I am going, my breath cannot last long. I believed from the first, that the disorder would prove fatal. Do you arrange and record all my late military letters and papers. Arrange my accounts and settle my books, as you know more about them than any one else; and let Mr. Rawlins finish recording my other letters which he has begun.' I told him this should be done. He then asked if I recollected any thing which it was essential for him to do, as he had but a very short time to continue with us. I told him that I could recollect nothing; but that I hoped he was not so near his end. He observed, smiling, that he certainly was, and that, as it was the debt which we must all pay, he looked to the event with perfect resignation."

In the course of the afternoon he appeared to be in great pain and distress from the difficulty of breathing, and frequently changed his posture in the bed. Mr. Lear endeavored to raise him and turn him with as much ease as possible. "I am afraid I fatigue you too much," the general would say. Upon being assured to the contrary, "Well," observed he gratefully, "it is a debt we must pay to each other, and I hope when you want aid of this kind you will find it."

His servant, Christopher, had been in the room during the

day, and almost the whole time on his feet. The general noticed it in the afternoon, and kindly told him to sit down.

About five o'clock his old friend, Dr. Craik, came again into the room, and approached the bedside. "Doctor," said the general, "I die hard, but I am not afraid to go. I believed, from my first attack, that I should not survive it—my breath cannot last long." The doctor pressed his hand in silence, retired from the bedside, and sat by the fire absorbed in grief.

Between five and six the other physicians came in, and he was assisted to sit up in his bed. "I feel I am going," said he; "I thank you for your attentions, but I pray you to take no more trouble about me; let me go off quietly; I cannot last long." He lay down again; all retired excepting Dr. Craik. The general continued uneasy and restless, but without complaining, frequently asking what hour it was.

Further remedies were tried without avail in the evening. He took whatever was offered him, did as he was desired by the physicians, and never uttered sigh or complaint.

"About ten o'clock," writes Mr. Lear, "he made several attempts to speak to me before he could effect it. At length he said, 'I am just going. Have me decently buried, and do not let my body be put into the vault in less than three days after I am dead.' I bowed assent, for I could not speak. He then looked at me again and said, 'Do you understand me?' I replied, 'Yes.' ''Tis well,' said he.

"About ten minutes before he expired (which was between ten and eleven o'clock) his breathing became easier. He lay quietly; he withdrew his hand from mine and felt his own pulse. I saw his countenance change. I spoke to Dr. Craik, who sat by the fire. He came to the bedside. The general's hand fell from

his wrist. I took it in mine and pressed it to my bosom. Dr. Craik put his hands over his eyes, and he expired without a struggle or a sigh.

"While we were fixed in silent grief, Mrs. Washington, who was seated at the foot of the bed, asked with a firm and collected voice, 'Is he gone?' I could not speak, but held up my hand as a signal that he was no more. ''Tis well,' said she in the same voice. 'All is now over; I shall soon follow him; I have no more trials to pass through.'"

We add from Mr. Lear's account a few particulars concerning the funeral. The old family vault on the estate had been opened, the rubbish cleared away, and a door made to close the entrance, which before had been closed with brick. The funeral took place on the 18th of December. About eleven o'clock the people of the neighborhood began to assemble. The corporation of Alexandria, with the militia and Free Masons of the place, and eleven pieces of cannon, arrived at a later hour. A schooner was stationed off Mount Vernon to fire minute guns.

About three o'clock the procession began to move, passing out through the gate at the left wing of the house, proceeding round in front of the lawn and down to the vault, on the right wing of the house; minute guns being fired at the time. The troops, horse and foot, formed the escort; then came four of the clergy. Then the general's horse, with his saddle, holsters, and pistols, led by two grooms in black. The body was borne by the Free Masons and officers; several members of the family and old friends, among the number Dr. Craik, and some of the Fairfaxes, followed as chief mourners. The corporation of Alexandria and numerous private persons closed the procession. The Rev. Mr. Davis read the funeral service at the vault, and pronounced a

short address; after which the Masons performed their ceremonies, and the body was deposited in the vault.

Such were the obsequies of Washington, simple and modest, according to his own wishes; all confined to the grounds of Mount Vernon, which, after forming the poetical dream of his life, had now become his final resting-place.

On opening the will which he had handed to Mrs. Washington shortly before his death, it was found to have been carefully drawn up by himself in the preceding July; and by an act in conformity with his whole career, one of its first provisions directed the emancipation of his slaves on the decease of his wife. It had long been his earnest wish that the slaves held by him *in his own right* should receive their freedom during his life, but he had found that it would be attended with insuperable difficulties on account of their intermixture by marriage with the "dower negroes," whom it was not in his power to manumit under the tenure by which they were held.

With provident benignity he also made provision in his will for such as were to receive their freedom under this devise, but who, from age, bodily infirmities, or infancy, might be unable to support themselves, and he expressly forbade, under any pretence whatsoever, the sale or transportation out of Virginia, of any slave of whom he might die possessed. Though born and educated a slave-holder, this was all in consonance with feelings, sentiments and principles which he had long entertained.

In a letter to Mr. John F. Mercer, in September, 1786, he writes, "I never mean, unless some particular circumstances should compel me to it, to possess another slave by purchase, it being among my first wishes to see some plan adopted by which slavery in this country may be abolished by law." And eleven

years afterwards, in August, 1797, he writes to his nephew, Lawrence Lewis, in a letter which we have had in our hands, "I wish from my soul that the legislature of this State could see the policy of a gradual abolition of slavery. It might prevent much future mischief."

A deep sorrow spread over the nation on hearing that Washington was no more. Congress, which was in session, immediately adjourned for the day. The next morning it was resolved that the Speaker's chair be shrouded with black: that the members and officers of the House wear black during the session, and that a joint committee of both Houses be appointed to consider on the most suitable manner of doing honor to the memory of the man, "first in war, first in peace, and first in the hearts of his fellow-citizens."

Public testimonials of grief and reverence were displayed in every part of the Union. Nor were these sentiments confined to the United States. When the news of Washington's death reached England, Lord Bridport, who had command of a British fleet of nearly sixty sail of the line, lying at Torbay, lowered his flag half-mast, every ship following the example; and Bonaparte, First Consul of France, on announcing his death to the army, ordered that black crape should be suspended from all the standards and flags throughout the public service for ten days.

In the preceding volumes of our work, we have traced the career of Washington from early boyhood to his elevation to the

presidential chair. It was an elevation he had neither sought nor wished; for when the independence of his country was achieved, the modest and cherished desire of his heart had been "to live and die a private citizen on his own farm;" * and he had shaped out for himself an ideal elysium in his beloved shades of Mount Vernon. But power sought him in his retirement. The weight and influence of his name and character were deemed all essential to complete his work; to set the new government in motion, and conduct it through its first perils and trials. With unfeigned reluctance he complied with the imperative claims of his country, and accepted the power thus urged upon him: advancing to its exercise with diffidence, and aiming to surround himself with men of the highest talent and information whom he might consult in emergency; but firm and strong in the resolve in all things to act as his conscience told him was "right as it respected his God, his country, and himself." For he knew no divided fidelity, no separate obligation; his most sacred duty to himself was his highest duty to his country and his God.

In treating of his civil administration in this closing volume, we have endeavored to show how truly he adhered to this resolve, and with what inflexible integrity and scrupulous regard to the public weal he discharged his functions. In executing our task, we have not indulged in discussions of temporary questions of controverted policy which agitated the incipient establishment of our government, but have given his words and actions as connected with those questions, and as illustrative of his character. In this volume, as in those which treat of his military career, we

* Writings, ix. p. 412.

have avoided rhetorical amplification and embellishments, and all gratuitous assumptions, and have sought, by simple and truthful details, to give his character an opportunity of developing itself, and of manifesting those fixed principles and that noble consistency which reigned alike throughout his civil and his military career.

The character of Washington may want some of those poetical elements which dazzle and delight the multitude, but it possessed fewer inequalities, and a rarer union of virtues than perhaps ever fell to the lot of one man. Prudence, firmness, sagacity, moderation, an overruling judgment, an immovable justice, courage that never faltered, patience that never wearied, truth that disdained all artifice, magnanimity without alloy. It seems as if Providence had endowed him in a preëminent degree with the qualities requisite to fit him for the high destiny he was called upon to fulfil—to conduct a momentous revolution which was to form an era in the history of the world, and to inaugurate a new and untried government, which, to use his own words, was to lay the foundation "for the enjoyment of much purer civil liberty, and greater public happiness, than have hitherto been the portion of mankind."

The fame of Washington stands apart from every other in history; shining with a truer lustre and a more benignant glory. With us his memory remains a national property, where all sympathies throughout our widely-extended and diversified empire meet in unison. Under all dissensions and amid all the storms of party, his precepts and example speak to us from the grave with a paternal appeal; and his name—by all revered—forms a universal tie of brotherhood—a watchword of our Union.

"It will be the duty of the historian and the sage of all na-

tions," writes an eminent British statesman, (Lord Brougham,) "to let no occasion pass of commemorating this illustrious man, and until time shall be no more, will a test of the progress which our race has made in wisdom and virtue, be derived from the veneration paid to the immortal name of Washington."

APPENDIX.

EXITUS ACTA PROBAT
George Washington

APPENDIX.

I.

PORTRAITS OF WASHINGTON.

[The following notices of the various representations of Washington, which have been prepared by the publisher for the illustrated edition of this work, are kindly furnished by Mr. H. T. Tuckerman, from a volume which he has now in press.]

* * * * *

The earliest portraits of Washington are more interesting, perhaps, as memorials than as works of art; and we can easily imagine that associations endeared them to his old comrades. The dress (blue coat, scarlet facings, and underclothes) of the first portrait, by Peale, and the youthful face, make it suggestive of the first experience of the future commander, when, exchanging the surveyor's implements for the colonel's commission, he bivouacked in the wilderness of Ohio, the leader of a motley band of hunters, provincials and savages, to confront wily Frenchmen, cut forest roads, and encounter all the perils of Indian ambush, inclement skies, undisciplined followers, famine, and woodland skirmish. It recalls his calm authority and providential escape amid the dismay of Braddock's defeat, and his pleasant sensation at the first whistling of bullets in the weary march to Fort Necessity. To Charles Wilson Peale, we owe this precious relic of the chieftain's youth. His own career partook of the vicissitudes and was impressed with the spirit of the revolutionary era; a captain of volunteers at the battles of Trenton and Germantown, and a State representative of Pennsylvania, a favorite pupil of West, an ingenious mechanician, and a warrior, he always cherished the instinct and the

faculty for art; and even amid the bustle and duties of the camp, never failed to seize auspicious intervals of leisure, to depict his brother officers. This portrait was executed in 1772, and is now at Arlington House.

The resolution of Congress by which a portrait by this artist was ordered, was passed before the occupation of Philadelphia. Its progress marks the vicissitudes of the revolutionary struggle; commenced in the gloomy winter and half-famished encampment at Valley Forge, in 1778, the battles of Trenton, Princeton, and Monmouth intervened before its completion. At the last place Washington suggested that the view from the window of the farm-house opposite to which he was sitting, would form a desirable background. Peale adopted the idea, and represented Monmouth Court House and a party of Hessians under guard, marching out of it.* The picture was finished at Princeton, and Nassau Hall is a prominent object in the background; but Congress adjourned without making an appropriation, and it remained in the artist's hands. Lafayette desired a copy for the King of France; and Peale executed one in 1779, which was sent to Paris; but the misfortunes of the royal family occasioned its sale, and it became the property of the Count de Menou, who brought it again to this country and presented it to the National Institute, where it is now preserved. Chapman made two copies at a thousand dollars each; and Dr. Craik, one of the earliest and warmest personal friends of Washington, their commissions as officers in the French war having been signed on the same day, (1754,) declared it a most faithful likeness of him as he appeared in the prime of his life.†

There is a tradition in the Peale family, honorably represented

* MS. Letter of Titian R. Peale to George Livermore, Esq.

† Philadelphia, *Feb.* 4.—His Excellency General Washington set off from this city to join the army in New Jersey. During the course of his short stay, the only relief he has enjoyed from service since he first entered it, he has been honored with every mark of esteem, &c. The Council of this State being desirous of having his picture in full length, requested his sitting for that purpose, which he politely complied with, and a striking likeness was taken by Mr. Peale, of this city. The portrait is to be placed in the council chamber. Don Juan Marrailes, the Minister of France, has ordered five copies, four of which, we hear, are to be sent abroad.—*Penn. Packet*, Feb. 11, 1779. Peale's first portrait was executed for Col. Alexander; his last is now in the Bryan Gallery, New York. He painted one in 1776 for John Hancock, and besides that for New Jersey, others for Pennsylvania and Maryland.

through several generations, by public spirit and artistic gifts, that intelligence of one of the most important triumphs of the American arms was received by Washington in a despatch he opened while sitting to Wilson Peale for a miniature intended for his wife, who was also present. The scene occurred one fine summer afternoon; and there is something attractive to the fancy in the association of this group quietly occupied in one of the most beautiful of the arts of peace, and in a commemorative act destined to gratify conjugal love and a nation's pride, with the progress of a war and the announcement of a victory fraught with that nation's liberty and that leader's eternal renown.

The characteristic traits of Peale's portraits of Washington now at the National Institute and Arlington House, and the era of our history and of Washington's life they embalm, make them doubly valuable in a series of pictorial illustrations, each of which, independent of the degree of professional skill exhibited, is essential to our Washingtonian gallery. Before Trumbull and Stuart had caught from the living man his aspect in maturity and age—the form knit to athletic proportions by self-denial and activity, and clad in the garb of rank and war, and the countenance open with truth and grave with thought, yet rounded with the contour and ruddy with the glow of early manhood—was thus genially delineated by the hand of a comrade, and in the infancy of native art. Of the fourteen portraits by Peale, that exhibiting Washington as a Virginia colonel in the colonial force of Great Britain, is the only entire portrait before the revolution extant.* One was painted for the college of New Jersey, at Princeton, in 1780, to occupy a frame in which a portrait of George the Third had been destroyed by a cannon ball during the battle at that place on the 3d of January, 1777. It still remains in the possession of the College, and was saved fortunately from the fire which a few years ago consumed Nassau Hall. Peale's last portrait of Washington, executed in 1783, he retained until his death, and two years since, it was sold with the rest of the collection known as the "Peale Gallery," at Philadelphia. There is a pencil sketch also by this artist, framed with the wood of the tree in front of the famous Chew's house, around which centred the battle of Germantown.†

* A miniature, said to have been painted in 1757, at the age of 25, has been engraved for Irving's Washington.

† "The Editor of the *Cincinnati Enquirer* was lately shown a pencil sketch of General Washington, taken from life by Charles Wilson Peale, in the year

A few octogenarians in the city of brotherly love, used to speak, not many years since, of a diminutive family, the head of which manifested the sensitive temperament, if not the highest capabilities of artistic genius. This was Robert Edge Pine. He brought to America the earliest cast of the Venus de Medici, which was privately exhibited to the select few—the manners and morals of the Quaker city forbidding its exposure to the common eye. He was considered a superior colorist, and was favorably introduced into society in Philadelphia by his acknowledged sympathy for the American cause, and by a grand project such as was afterwards partially realized by Trumbull; that of a series of historical paintings, illustrative of the American Revolution, to embrace original portraits of the leaders, both civil and military, in that achievement, including the statesmen who were chiefly instrumental in framing the Constitution and organizing the Government. He brought a letter of introduction to the father of the late Judge Hopkinson, whose portrait he executed, and its vivid tints and correct resemblance, still attest to his descendants the ability of the painter. He left behind him in London, creditable portraits of George the Second, Garrick, and the Duke of Northumberland. In the intervals of his business as a teacher of drawing and a votary of portraiture in general, he collected, from time to time, a large number of "distinguished heads," although, as in the case of Ceracchi, the epoch and country were unfavorable to his ambitious project; of these portraits the heads of General Gates, Charles Carroll, Baron Steuben, and Washington, are the best known and most highly prized. Pine remained three weeks at Mount Vernon, and his portrait bequeathes some features with great accuracy; artists find in it certain merits not discoverable in those of a later date; it has the permanent interest of a representation from life, by a painter of established reputation; yet its tone is cold and its effect unimpressive, beside the more bold and glowing pencil of Stuart. It has repose and dignity. In his letter to Washington, asking his co-operation in the design he meditated, Pine says, "I have been some time at Annapolis painting the portraits of patriots, legislators, heroes and beauties, in order to adorn my large picture;" and he seems to have commenced his enterprise with san-

1777. It was framed from a part of the elm-tree then standing in front of Chew's house, on the Germantown battle-ground, and the frame was made by a son of Dr. Craley, of Revolutionary fame."

guine hopes of one day accomplishing his object, which, however, it was reserved for a native artist eventually to complete. That his appeal to Washington was not neglected, however, is evident from an encouraging allusion to Pine and his scheme, in the correspondence of the former. "Mr. Pine," he says, "has met a favorable reception in this country, and may, I conceive, command as much business as he pleases. He is now preparing materials for historical representations of the most important events of the war."* Pine's picture is in the possession of the Hopkinson family at Philadelphia. The fac-simile of Washington's letter proves that it was taken in 1785. A large copy was purchased at Montreal, in 1817, by the late Henry Brevoort, of New York, and is now in the possession of his son, J. Carson Brevoort, at Bedford, L. I.†

The profile likeness of Washington by SHARPLESS, is a valuable item of the legacy which Art has bequeathed of those noble and benign features; he evidently bestowed upon it his greatest skill, and there is no more correct facial outline of the immortal subject in existence; a disciple of Lavater would probably find it the most available side-view for physiognomical inference; it is remarkably adapted to the burin, and has been once, at least, adequately engraved; it also has the melancholy attraction of being the last portrait of Washington taken from life.

One of Canova's fellow-workmen, in the first years of his artistic life, was a melancholy enthusiast, whose thirst for the ideal was deepened by a morbid tenacity of purpose and sensitiveness of heart;—a form of character peculiar to Italy; in its voluptuous phase illustrated by Petrarch, in its stoical by Alfieri, and in its combination of patriotic and tender sentiments by Foscolo's "Letters of Jacopo Ortis." The political confusion that reigned in Europe for a time, seriously interfered with the pursuit of art; and this was doubtless a great motive with GUISEPPE CERACCHI for visiting America; but not less inciting was the triumph of freedom, of which that land had recently become the scene—a triumph that so enlisted the sympathies and fired the imagination of the republican sculptor, that he designed a grand national monument, commemorative of American Independence, and

* Sparks' Writings of Washington.

† This portrait is now in the engraver's hands for the illustrated edition of this work.

sought the patronage of the newly organized government in its behalf. Washington, individually, favored his design, and the model of the proposed work received the warm approval of competent judges; but taste for art, especially for grand monumental statuary, was quite undeveloped on this side of the Atlantic, and the recipient of Papal orders found little encouragement in a young republic, too busy in laying the foundation of her civil polity, to give much thought to any memorials of her nascent glory. It was, however, but a question of time. His purpose is even now in the process of achievement. Washington's native State voluntarily undertook the enterprise for which the general government, in its youth, was inadequate; and it was auspiciously reserved for a native artist, and a single member of the original confederacy, to embody, in a style worthy of more than Italian genius, the grand conception of a representative monument, with Washington in a colossal equestrian statue as the centre, and the Virginia patriots and orators of the Revolution, grouped around his majestic figure. Ceracchi, however, in aid of his elaborate project, executed the only series of marble portraitures from life of the renowned founders of the national government: his busts of Hamilton, Jay, Trumbull, and Governor George Clinton, were long the prominent ornaments of the Academy of Fine Arts, in New York; the latter, especially, was remarkable, both in regard to its resemblance to the original, and as a work of art. His most important achievement, however, was a bust of Washington, generally considered the most perfect representation of the man and the hero combined, after Stuart's and Houdon's masterpieces. It is in the heroic style, with a fillet. The fate of this valuable effigy was singular. It was purchased by the Spanish Ambassador, as a gift to the Prince of Peace, then at the height of his power at Madrid; before the bust reached Spain, Godoy was exiled, and the minister recalled, who, on his arrival, transferred it, unpacked, to Richard Meade, Esq., of Philadelphia, in whose family it remained until two years ago, when, at the administrators' sale of that gentleman's fine collection of paintings, it was purchased by Governeur Kemble, and can now be seen at his hospitable mansion, on the banks of the Hudson.

The zeal of Ceracchi in his cherished purpose, is indicated by the assurance he gave Dr. Hugh Williamson—the historian of North Carolina, and author of the earliest work on the American climate, and one of the first advocates of the canal policy—when inviting him

to sit for his bust—that he did not pay him the compliment in order to secure his vote for the national monument, but only to perpetuate the "features of the American Cato." With characteristic emphasis, the honest Doctor declined, on the ground that posterity would not care for his lineaments; adding that, "if he were capable of being lured into the support of any scheme whatever, against his conviction of right, wood, and not stone, ought to be the material of his image."*

Baffled, as Ceracchi ultimately was, in the realization of hopes inspired alike by his ambition as a sculptor and his love of republican institutions, he carried to Europe the proud distinction of having taken the initiative in giving an enduring shape to the revered and then unfamiliar features of Washington. He executed two busts, one colossal, a cast of which was long in the New York Academy of Fine Arts. Impoverished, the darling scheme of his life frustrated in America, and his own patriotic hopes crushed by the victories of Bonaparte in Italy, and his rapid advances towards imperial sway, the enthusiastic artist brooded, with intense disappointment, over the contrast between the fresh and exuberant national life, of which he had partaken here, and the vassalage to which Europe was again reduced. Napoleon and Washington stood revealed, as it were, side by side—the selfish aggrandizement of the one, who trampled on humanity under the prestige of military fame, and the magnanimity of the other, content to be the immaculate agent of a free people, after sacrificing all for their welfare. Imbued with the principles and a witness of the self control which consummated our revolutionary triumph, Ceracchi beheld, with an impatience that caution only restrained, the steady and unscrupulous encroachment of Bonaparte on all that is sacred in nationality and freedom. Somewhat of the deep indignation and the sacrificial will that nerved the hand of Charlotte Corday, somewhat of the fanaticism that moved the student-assassin of Kotzebue, and, perhaps, a little of the vengeful ire of Ravaillac, at length kindled the Italian blood of the sculptor. He became one of the most determined secret conspirators against the now established usurper. The memoirs of the time speak of his "exaggerated notions," his disdain of life, of the profound gloom that often clouded his soul, of the tears he alternately shed of admiration at the brilliant exploits of the conqueror, and of grief at the wrongs inflicted on the beautiful land of his nativity.

* Dr. Hosack's Essays.

'This man," says one fair chronicler of those exciting times, "has a soul of fire." A plot, which is stigmatized as nefarious, and, according to rumor, was of the Fieschi stamp, aimed at the life of Bonaparte, when First Consul, was finally discovered, and Ceracchi became legally compromised as one of those pledged to its execution. He was tried, boldly acknowledged his murderous intention, and was condemned to death. Among his fellow-conspirators were two or three republican artists with whom he had become intimate at Rome; they were arrested at the opera, and daggers found upon their persons: the plot is designated in the annals of the time as the Arena Conspiracy. Ceracchi was a Corsican by birth; and, from an ardent admirer, thus became the deadly foe of his great countryman; and the gifted artist, the enthusiastic republican, the vindictive patriot, and the sculptor of Washington—perished on the scaffold.

His bust gives Washington a Roman look, but has been declared to exhibit more truly the expression of the mouth than any other work. Those of Hamilton and Governor Clinton, by this artist, are deemed, by their respective families, as correct as portraits, as they are superior as pieces of statuary. And this is presumptive evidence in favor of the belief that Ceracchi's attachment to the heroic style did not seriously interfere with the general truth of his portraiture.

The design of a statue was, therefore, only realized on the arrival of Houdon. The history of this sculptor is a striking contrast to that of Ceracchi. A native of Versailles, he flourished at an epoch remarkably prolific of original characters in all departments of letters and art. Many of these, especially his own countrymen, have been represented by his chisel. He enjoyed a long and prosperous existence, having survived the taste he initiated, and the friends of his youth, but maintaining a most creditable reputation to his death, which occurred in his eighty-eighth year. He rose to distinction by a new style, which appears to have exhibited, according to the subject, a remarkable simplicity on the one hand, and elaboration on the other. An over-estimate of the effect of details marred his more labored creations; but he had a faculty of catching the air, and a taste in generalizing the conception, both of a real and fanciful subject, which manifested unusual genius. There was an individuality about his best works that won attention and established his fame. Of the ideal kind, two were the subjects of much critical remark, though for different reasons. One of them was intended to exhibit the effect of cold

—an idea almost too melo-dramatic and physical for sculpture, but quite in character for a Frenchman, aiming, even in his severe and limited art, at theatrical effect. The other was a statue of Diana—the object of numerous *bon mots*, first, because it was ordered by Catharine of Russia, who, it was generally thought, had no special affinity with the chaste goddess; and, secondly, on account of the voluptuous character given it by the artist, which procured for his Diana the name of Venus. Houdon's bust of Voltaire gained him renown at once in this department of his pursuit, and is a memorable example of his success. How various the characters whose similitudes are perpetuated by his chisel—Gluck and Buffon, Rousseau and D'Alembert, Mirabeau and Washington! Jefferson, in behalf of the State of Virginia, arranged with Houdon at Paris, to undertake the latter commission; and he accompanied Dr. Franklin to the United States. He remained at Mount Vernon long enough to execute a model of Washington's head, and familiarize himself with every detail of his features and the traits of his natural language; but that implicit fidelity, now evident in the busts of our own leading sculptors, was not then in vogue, and the artists of the day were rather adepts in idealizing than in precise imitation of nature; therefore, the result of Houdon's labors, though, in general, satisfactory, cannot be used with the mathematical exactitude, as a guide, which greater attention to minutiæ would have secured. There is a sketch by Stuart indicating some minute errors in the outline of Houdon's bust. On leaving, he presented Washington with the bas-relief which used to hang over his chair in the library at Mount Vernon. He completed the statue after his return to Paris, and in the diary of Gouverneur Morris, is an entry noting his attendance at the artist's studio, to stand for the figure of his illustrious friend, whom, before he became corpulent, he is said to have resembled. He alludes to the circumstance as "being the humble employment of a mannikin;" and adds, "this is literally taking the advice of St. Paul, to be all things to all men." The original cast of the head of this statue is still at Mount Vernon, and the statue itself is the cherished ornament of the Capitol at Richmond, and has been declared, by one of Washington's biographers, to be "as perfect a resemblance, in face and figure, as the art admits;" while, on the other hand, a critic of large and studious observation, who was well acquainted with the appearance of the original, says that, as a likeness, the head is inferior to Ceracchi's bust. The costume is authentic, that Washington wore

as commander-in-chief; it has been assailed with the usual arguments —its want of classical effect, and its undignified style; but less conservative reasoners applaud the truth of the drapery, and the work is endeared as a faithful and unique representation of the man—the only one from life, bequeathed by the art of the sculptor. "Judge Marshall," says Dr. Sparks in a letter to us, "once told me that the head of Houdon's statue at Richmond, seen at a point somewhat removed towards the side, from the front, presented as perfect a resemblance of the living man as he could conceive possible in marble."

Rembrandt Peale, when quite young, became the companion of his father's artistic labors. In compliment to the latter, Washington sat for a likeness to the novice of eighteen, who says the honor agitated more than it inspired him, and he solicited his father's intercession and countenance on the memorable occasion. Of the precise value of his original sketch it is difficult to form an accurate opinion, but the mature result of his efforts to produce a portrait of Washington has attained a high and permanent fame. He availed himself of the best remembered points, and always worked with Houdon's bust before him. This celebrated picture is the favorite portrait of a large number of amateurs. It is more dark and mellowed in tint, more elaborately worked up, and, in some respects, more effectively arranged, than any of its predecessors. Enclosed in an oval of well-imitated stone fretwork, vigorous in execution, rich in color, the brow, eyes, and mouth, full of character—altogether it is a striking and impressive delineation. That it was thus originally regarded we may infer from the unanimous resolution of the U. S. Senate, in 1832, appropriating two thousand dollars for its purchase, and from the numerous copies of the original, in military costume, belonging to the artist, which have been and are still ordered. Rembrandt Peale is said to be the only living artist who ever saw Washington. In the pamphlet which he issued to authenticate the work, we find the cordial testimony to its fidelity and other merits of Lawrence Lewis, the eldest nephew of Washington: of the late venerable John Vaughan, of Bishop White, Rufus King, Charles Carroll, Edward Livingston, General Smith, Dr. James Thatcher, and Judge Cranch. Chief Justice Marshall says of it: "It is more Washington himself than any portrait I have ever seen;" and Judge Peters explains his approval by declaring "I judge from its effect on my heart."

* * * * * * *

No artist enjoyed the opportunities of Colonel Trumbull as the portrayer of Washington. As aide-de-camp he was familiar with his appearance in the prime of his life and its most exciting era. At the commencement of the Revolutionary struggle, this officer was among the most active, and essentially promoted the secure retreat of the American forces, under General Sullivan, from Rhode Island; he, therefore, largely partook of the spirit of those days, came freely under the influence of Washington's character as it prevaded the camp, and had ample time and occasion to observe the Commander-in-Chief in his military aspect, and in social intercourse, on horseback, in the field, and at the hospitable board, in the councils of war, when silently meditating his great work, when oppressed with anxiety, animated by hope, or under the influence of those quick and strong feelings he so early learned to subdue. After Trumbull's resignation, and when far away from the scene of Washington's glory, he painted his head from recollection, so distinctly was every feature and expression impressed upon his mind. In the autumn of 1789 he returned from Europe, and began his sketches of the chiefs and statesmen of the Revolution, afterwards embodied in the pictures that adorn the Rotunda of the Capitol, and the originals of which, invaluable for their authenticity, may now be seen in the gallery at New Haven. Here is preserved the most spirited portrait of Washington that exists—the only reflection of him as a soldier of freedom worthy of the name, drawn from life. The artist's own account of this work is given in his memoirs: "In 1792 I was again in Philadelphia, and there painted the portrait of General Washington, now placed in the gallery at New Haven, the best, certainly, of those that I painted, and the best, in my estimation, which exists in his heroic and military character. The city of Charleston, S. C., instructed Mr. W. R. Smith, one of the representatives of South Carolina, to employ me to paint for them a portrait of the great man, and I undertook it *con amore*, as the commission was unlimited, meaning to give his military character at the most sublime moment of its exertion—the evening previous to the battle of Trenton, when, viewing the vast superiority of his approaching enemy, the impossibility of again crossing the Delaware or retreating down the river, he conceives the plan of returning by a night march into the country from which he had been driven, thus cutting off the enemy's communication and destroying the depot of stores at Brunswick." There is a singular felicity in this choice of the moment to represent Washington, for it

combines all the most desirable elements of expression characteristic of the man. It is a moment, not of brilliant achievement, but of intrepid conception, when the dignity of thought is united with the sternness of resolve, and the enthusiasm of a daring experiment kindles the habitual mood of self-control into an unwonted glow. As the artist unfolded his design to Washington, the memory of that eventful night thrilled him anew; he rehearsed the circumstances, described the scene, and his face was lighted up as the memorable crisis in his country's fate and his own career was renewed before him. He spoke of the desperate chance, the wild hope, and the hazardous but fixed determination of that hour; and, as the gratified painter declares, "looked the scene." "The result," he says, "was, in my own opinion, eminently successful, and the General was satisfied." Whether the observer of the present day accedes to the opinion, that he "happily transferred to the canvas the lofty expression of his animated countenance, the resolve to conquer or perish;" whether the picture comes up to his preconceived ideal of the heroic view of Washington or not, he must admit that it combines great apparent fidelity, with more spirit and the genius of action, than all other portraits.

Although not so familiar as Stuart's, numerous good copies of Trumbull's Washington, some from his own, ond others by later pencils, have rendered it almost as well known in this country. Contemporaries give it a decided preference; it recalled the leader of the American armies, the man who was "first in the hearts of his countrymen," ere age relaxed the facial muscles and modified the decisive lines of the mouth; it was associated in their minds with the indignant rebuke at Monmouth, the brilliant surprise at Trenton, and the heroic patience at Valley Forge; it was the Washington of their youth who led the armies of freedom, the modest, the brave, the vigilant and triumphant chief. Ask an elderly Knickerbocker what picture will give you a good idea of Washington, and he will confidently refer you, as the testimony his father has taught him, to Trumbull's portrait in the City Hall. When Lafayette first beheld a copy of this picture, in a gentleman's house in New Jersey, on his visit to this country, a few years before his death, he uttered an exclamation of delight at its resemblance. An excellent copy, by Vanderlyn, adorns the U. S. House of Representatives, for the figure in which, Geo. B. Rapalye, Esq., a highly respected citizen of New York, stood with exemplary patience, for many days, wearing a coat, perhaps the first specimen of American

broadcloth, that had been worn by Washington. The air of the figure is as manly and elegant, the look as dignified and commanding, and the brow as practical in its moulding, as in Stuart's representation of him at a more advanced period; but the face is less round, the profile more aquiline, the complexion has none of the fresh and ruddy hue, and the hair is not yet blanched. It is, altogether, a keener, more active, less thoughtful, but equally graceful and dignified man. He stands in an easy attitude, in full uniform, with his hand on his horse's neck; and the most careless observer, though ignorant of the subject, would recognize, at a glance, the image of a brave man, an intelligent officer, and an honorable gentleman. The excellent engraving of Durand has widely disseminated Trumbull's spirited head of Washington.

Although the concurrent testimony of those best fitted to judge, give the palm to Trumbull's portrait, now in the gallery at New Haven, as the most faithful likeness of Washington in his prime, this praise seems to refer rather to the general expression and air, than to the details of the face. Trumbull often failed in giving a satisfactory likeness; he never succeeded in rendering the complexion, as is obvious by comparing that of his picture in the New York City Hall with any or all of Stuart's heads; the former is yellow, and gives the idea of a bilious temperament, while the latter, in every instance, have the florid, ruddy tint, which, we are assured, was characteristic of Washington, and indicative of his active habits, constant exposure to the elements, and Saxon blood. The best efforts of Trumbull were his first, careful sketches; he never could elaborate with equal effect; the collection of small, original heads, from which his historical pictures were drawn, are invaluable, as the most authentic resemblances in existence of our revolutionary heroes. They have a genuine look and a spirited air, seldom discoverable in the enlarged copies.

"Washington," says Trumbull, in describing the picture, "is represented standing on elevated ground, on the south side of the Creek at Trenton, a little below the stone-bridge and mill. He has a reconnoitring glass in his hand, with which he is supposed to have been examining the strength of the hostile army, pouring into and occupying Trenton, which he has just abandoned at their appearance; and, having ascertained their great superiority, as well in numbers as discipline, he is supposed to have been meditating how to avoid the apparently impending ruin, and to have just formed the plan which he executed

during the night. This led to the splendid success at Princeton on the following morning; and, in the estimation of the great Frederic, placed his military character on a level with that of the greatest commanders of ancient or modern times. Behind, and near, an attendant holds his horse. Every minute article of dress, down to the buttons and spurs, and the buckles and straps of the horse furniture, were carefully painted from the different objects."

The gentleman who was the medium of this commission to Trumbull, praised his work; but aware of the popular sentiment, declared it not calm and peaceful enough to satisfy those for whom it was intended. With reluctance, the painter asked Washington, overwhelmed as he was with official duty, to sit for another portrait, which represents him in his every-day aspect, and, therefore, better pleased the citizens of Charleston. "Keep this picture," said Washington to the artist, speaking of the first experiment, "and finish it to your own taste." When the Connecticut State Society of Cincinnati dissolved, a few of the members purchased it as a gift to Yale College.

Gilbert Stuart's most cherished anticipation when he left England for America, was that of executing a portrait of Washington. A consummate artist in a branch which his own triumphs had proved could be rendered of the highest interest, he eagerly sought illustrious subjects for his pencil. This enthusiasm was increased in the present case, by the unsullied fame and the exalted European reputation of the American hero, by the greatest personal admiration of his character, and by the fact that no satisfactory representation existed abroad of a man whose name was identical with more than Roman patriotism and magnanimity. Stuart, by a series of masterly portraits, had established his renown in London; he had mingled in the best society; his vigorous mind was cognizant of all the charms that wit and acumen lend to human intercourse, and he knew the power which genius and will may so readily command. His own nature was more remarkable for strength than refinement; he was eminently fitted to appreciate practical talents and moral energy; the brave truth of nature rather than her more delicate effects, were grasped and reproduced by his skill; he might not have done justice to the ideal contour of Shelley, or the gentle features of Mary of Scotland, but could have perfectly reflected the dormant thunder of Mirabeau's countenance, and the argumentative abstraction that knit the brows of Samuel Johnson. He was a votary of truth in her boldest manifestations, and a delineator of character in

its normal and sustained elements. The robust, the venerable, the moral picturesque, the mentally characteristic, he seized by intuition; those lines of physiognomy which channelled by will the map of inward life, which years of consistent thought and action trace upon the countenance, the hue that, to an observant eye, indicates almost the daily vocation, the air suggestive of authority or obedience, firmness or vacillation, the glance of the eye, which is the measure of natural intelligence and the temper of the soul, the expression of the mouth that infallibly betrays the disposition, the tint of hair and mould of features, not only attesting the period of life but revealing what that life has been, whether toilsome or inert, self-indulgent or adventurous, care-worn or pleasurable—these, and such as these records of humanity, Stuart transferred, in vivid colors and most trustworthy outlines, to the canvas. Instinctive, therefore, was his zeal to delineate Washington; a man, who, of all the sons of fame, most clearly and emphatically wrote his character in deeds upon the world's heart, whose traits required no imagination to give them effect and no metaphysical insight to unravel their perplexity, but were brought out by the exigencies of the time in distinct relief, as bold, fresh, and true as the verdure of spring and the lights of the firmament, equally recognized by the humblest peasant and the most gifted philosopher.

To trace the history of each of Stuart's portraits of Washington would prove of curious interest. One of his letters to a relative, dated the second of November, 1794, enables us to fix the period of the earliest experiment. "The object of my journey," he says, "is only to secure a portrait of the President and finish yours." One of the succeeding pictures was bought from the artist's studio by Mr. Tayloe, of Washington, and is, at peesent, owned by his son, B. Ogle Tayloe, Esq.; another was long in the possession of Madison, and is now in that of Gov. E. Coles, of Philadelphia. The full-length, in the Presidential mansion, at the seat of Government, was saved through the foresight and care of the late Mrs. Madison, when the city was taken by the British in the last war. Stuart, however, always denied that this copy was by him. Another portrait of undoubted authenticity was offered to and declined by Congress, a few years ago, and is owned by a Boston gentleman; and one graced the hospitable dwelling of Samuel Williams, the London banker. For a long period artistic productions on this side of the water were subjects of ridicule. Tudor not inaptly called the New England country meeting-houses "wooden

lanterns;" almost every town boasted an architectural monstrosity, popularly known as somebody's "folly;" the rows of legs in Trumbull's picture of the Signing of the Declaration, obtained for it the sarcastic name, generally ascribed to John Randolph, of "the shin piece;" and Stuart's full length, originally painted for Lord Lansdowne, with one arm resting on his sword hilt, and the other extended, was distinguished among artists by the title of the "tea-pot portrait," from the resemblance of the outline to the handle and spout of that domestic utensil. The feature, usually exaggerated in poor copies, and the least agreeable in the original, is the mouth, resulting from the want of support of those muscles consequent on the loss of teeth, a defect which Stuart vainly attempted to remedy by inserting cotton between the jaw and the lips; and Wilson Peale more permanently, but not less ineffectually, sought to relieve by a set of artificial teeth.

We have seen in western New York, a cabinet head of Washington which bears strong evidence of Stuart's pencil, and is traced directly by its present owner to his hand, which was purchased of the artist and presented to Mr. Gilbert, a member of Congress from Columbia County, New York, a gentleman who held the original in such veneration that he requested, on his death-bed, to have the picture exhibited to his fading gaze, as it was the last object he desired to behold on earth. The remarks of the latter artist indicate what a study he made of his illustrious sitter: "There were," he said, "features in his face totally different from what he had observed in any other human being; the sockets of the eyes, for instance, were larger than what he ever met with before, and the upper part of the nose broader. All his features were indicative of the strongest passions; yet, like Socrates, his judgment and great self-command made him appear a man of a different cast in the eyes of the world." The color of his eyes were a light grayish blue, but according to Mr. Custis, Stuart painted them of a deeper blue, saying, "in a hundred years they will have faded to the right color."

While Congress was in session at Philadelphia, in 1794, Stuart went thither with a letter of introduction to Washington, from John Jay. He first met his illustrious subject on a reception evening, and was spontaneously accosted by him with a greeting of dignified urbanity. Familiar as was the painter with eminent men, he afterwards declared that no human being ever awakened in him the sentiment of reverence to such a degree. For a moment, he lost his self-possession

—with him an experience quite unprecedented—and it was not until several interviews that he felt himself enough at home with his sitter to give the requisite concentration of mind to his work. This was owing not less to the personal impressiveness of Washington—which all who came in contact with him felt and acknowledged—than to the profound respect and deep interest which the long anticipations of the artist had fostered in his own mind. He failed, probably from this cause, in his first experiment. No portrait-painter has left such a reputation for the faculty of eliciting expression by his social tact, as Stuart. He would even defer his task upon any pretext until he succeeded in making the sitter, as he said, "look like himself." To induce a natural, unconscious, and characteristic mood, was his initiative step in the execution of a portrait. Innumerable are the anecdotes of his ingenuity and persistence in carrying out this habit. More or less conversant with every topic of general interest, and endowed with rare conversational ability and knowledge of character, he seldom failed to excite the ruling passion, magnetize the prominent idiosyncrasy, or awaken the professional interest of the occupant of his throne, whether statesman, farmer, actor, judge, or merchant; and his fund of good stories, narrated with dramatic effect, by enchaining the attention or enlisting the sympathies, usually made the delighted listener self-oblivious and demonstrative, when, with an alertness and precision like magic, the watchful limner transferred the vital identity of his pre-occupied and fascinated subject, with almost breathing similitude. In Washington, however, he found a less flexible character upon which to scintillate his wit and open his anecdotical battery. Facility of adaptation seldom accompanies great individuality; and a man whose entire life has been oppressed with responsibility, and in whom the prevalent qualities are conscience and good sense, can scarcely be expected to possess humor and geniality in the same proportion as self-control and reflection. On the professional themes of agriculture and military science, Washington was always ready to converse, if not with enthusiasm, at least in an attentive and intelligent strain; but the artillery of repartee, and the sallies of fancy, made but a slight impression upon his grave and reserved nature. He was deficient in language —far more a man of action than of words—and had been obliged to think too much on vast interests, to "carry America in his brain," as one of his eulogists has aptly said, to readily unbend in colloquial diversion. By degrees, however, the desirable relation was established

between himself and the artist, who, of several portraits, justly gave the preference to the Lansdowne picture and the unfinished one now possessed by the Boston Athenæum. They, doubtless, are the most perfect representations of Washington, as he looked at the time they were executed, and will ever be the standards and resource of subsequent delineators. The latter, supposed by many to have been his original "study," engaged his attention for months. The freshness of color, the studious modelling of the brow, the mingling of clear purpose and benevolence in the eye, and a thorough nobleness and dignity in the whole head, realize all the most intelligent admirer of the original has imagined—not, indeed, when thinking of him as the intrepid leader of armies, but in the last analysis and complete image of the hero in retirement, in all the consciousness of a sublime career, unimpeachable fidelity to a national trust, and the eternal gratitude of a free people. It is this masterpiece of Stuart that has not only perpetuated, but distributed over the globe the resemblance of Washington. It has been sometimes lamented, that so popular a work does not represent him in the aspect of a successful warrior, or in the flush of youth; but there seems to be a singular harmony between this venerable image—so majestic, benignant, and serene—and the absolute character and peculiar example of Washington, separated from what was purely incidental and contingent in his life. Self-control, endurance, dauntless courage, loyalty to a just but sometimes desperate cause, hope through the most hopeless crisis, and a tone of feeling the most exalted, united to habits of candid simplicity, are better embodied in such a calm, magnanimous, mature image, full of dignity and sweetness, than if portrayed in battle array or melodramatic attitude. Let such pictures as David's Napoleon —with prancing steed, flashing eye, and waving sword—represent the mere victor and military genius; but he who spurned a crown, knew no watchword but duty, no goal but freedom and justice, and no reward but the approval of conscience and the gratitude of a country, lives more appropriately, both to memory and in art, under the aspect of a finished life, crowned with the harvest of honor and peace, and serene in the consummation of disinterested purpose.

A letter of Stuart's which appeared in the New York *Evening Post*, in 1853,* attested by three gentlemen of Boston, with one from Wash-

* Extract *from article in Evening Post, N. Y., March 15th*, 1853:—

It may set this question at rest to state, that Stuart himself has given an account of all the portraits of Washington that he painted.

ington making the appointment for a sitting, proves the error long current in regard both to the dates and the number of this artist's original portraits. He there distinctly states that he never executed but three from life, the first of which was so unsatisfactory that he destroyed it; the second was the picture for Lord Lansdowne; and the third, the one now belonging to the Boston Athenæum. Of these originals he made twenty-six copies. The finishing touches were put to the one in September, 1795, and to the other, at Philadelphia, in the spring of 1796. This last, it appears by a letter of Mr. Custis, which we have examined, was undertaken against the desire of Washington,

A gentleman of Philadelphia has in his possession the originals of the following documents. [*Edit. Post.*]—

Sir :—I am under promise to Mrs. Bingham, to sit for you to-morrow at nine o'clock, and wishing to know if it be convenient to you that I should do so, and whether it shall be at your own house, (as she talked of the State-House.) I send this note to you to ask information.—I am, Sir, your obedient servt.,

GEO. WASHINGTON.

Monday Evening, 11*th April*, 1796.

This letter was endorsed in Washington's handwriting,—"Mr. Stuart, Chestnut Street." At the foot of the manuscript are the following certificates :—

In looking over my papers to find one that had the signature of George Washington, I found this, asking me when he should sit for his portrait, which is now owned by Samuel Williams, of London. I have thought it proper it should be his, especially as he owns the only original painting I ever made of Washington, except one I own myself. I painted a third, but rubbed it out. I now present this to his brother, Timo Williams, for said Samuel.

Boston, 9*th day of March*, 1823. GT. STUART.

Attest—J. P. Davis.
W. Dutton.
L. Baldwin.

N.B.—Mr. Stuart painted in ye *winter season* his first portrait of Washington, but destroyed it. The next painting was ye one owned by S. Williams; the third Mr. S. now has—two only remain, as above stated. T. W.

The picture alluded to in the above note of the late Timo Williams, as being then in Mr. Stuart's possession, is the one now in the Boston Athenæum; and that which belonged to the late Samuel Williams, Esq., alluded to in Mr. Stuart's note above quoted, is yet extant and owned by the son of an American gentleman, (*John D. Lewis, Esq.*,) who died in London some years since, where it still remains. Mr. Williams had paid for it at the sale of the personal effects of the Marquis of Lansdowne,—to whom it was originally presented by Mr. Bingham, of Philadelphia,—two thousand guineas.

It is this portrait, full length and life size, from which the bad engraving was made by Heath, so many copies of which are still to be seen in this country.

and at the earnest solicitation of his wife, who wished a portrait from life of her illustrious husband, to be placed among the other family pictures at Mount Vernon. For this express purpose, and to gratify her, the artist commenced the work, and Washington agreed to sit once more. It was left, intentionally, unfinished, and when subsequently claimed by Mr. Custis, who offered a premium upon the original price, Stuart excused himself, much to the former's dissatisfaction, on the plea that it was a requisite legacy for his children. Simultaneously with the Lansdowne portrait the artist executed for William Constable that now in the possession of his grandson, Henry E. Pierrepont, Esq., of Brooklyn, L. I. Motives of personal friendship induced the artist to exert his best skill in this instance; it is a fac-simile of its prototype, and the expression has been thought even more noble and of higher significance, more in accordance with the traditional character of the subject, than the Athenæum picture. It has the eyes looking off, and not at the spectator, as in the latter. Mr. Constable, the original proprietor, was aid to General Washington; and when Lafayette visited this country in 1824, upon entering the drawing-room at Brooklyn Heights, where the picture hangs, he exclaimed, "That is my old friend, indeed!" Colonel Nicholson Fish, and General Van Rensselaer, joined in attesting the superior correctness of the likeness.

The usual objection to Stuart's Washington is a certain feebleness about the lines of the mouth, which does not correspond with the distinct outline of the frontal region, the benign yet resolved eye, and the harmonious dignity of the entire head; but this defect was an inevitable result of the loss of teeth, and their imperfect substitution by a false set. In view of the state of the arts in this country at the period, and the age of Washington, we cannot but congratulate ourselves that we have so pleasing and satisfactory a portrait, and exclaim, with Leslie, "how fortunate it was that a painter existed in the time of Washington, who could hand him down looking like a gentleman!" Dr. Marshall, brother of the Chief Justice, said that Washington did not resemble Pine's portrait, when he knew him, that Wertmuller's had too French a look, another by Wertmuller had eyes too light, but that Stuart's was prodigiously "like."

Opinions are quite diverse in regard to the Wertmuller portrait. There are many points of executive merit in the original not completely rendered in the engraving; the air of the head, the grave and refined look, well-arranged hair, neat ruffles, and old-fashioned coat,

sprinkled at the shoulders with powder, at once gave the somewhat vague yet unmistakable impression of "the portrait of a gentleman." There is an expression of firmness and clear-sightedness, and an erect, brave attitude which reveals the soldier; and there is more animation than we are accustomed to see in portraits of Washington. The latter trait is probably that which led to the selection of this picture as an illustration to Irving's Biography.

Adolphe Ulric Wertmuller was a devoted student of art, but his taste and style were chiefly formed under the influence of the old French Academy—and long before the delicate adherence to nature which now redeems the best modern pictures of French artists, had taken the place of a certain artificial excellence and devotion to mere effect. The career of this accomplished painter was marked by singular vicissitudes;—a native of Stockholm, after preparatory studies there, he went to Paris, and remained several years acquiring both fame and fortune by his pencil; the latter, however, was nearly all lost by the financial disasters at the outbreak of the Revolution, and Wertmuller embarked for America, and arrived in Philadelphia in 1794. He was well received and highly estimated; Washington sat to him;* in 1796 he returned to Europe, but, after a brief period, the failure of a commercial house at Stockholm, in whose care he had placed his funds, so vexed him, that he returned to Philadelphia in 1800, where he soon after exhibited his large and beautiful picture of "Danæ"—which, while greatly admired for the executive talent it displayed, was too exceptionable a subject to meet with the approbation of the sober citizens, whose sense of propriety was so much more vivid than their enthusiasm for art. Wertmuller soon after married a lady of Swedish descent, purchased a farm in Delaware county, Penn. and resided there in much comfort and tranquillity, until his death in 1812. His pictures were sold at auction; and a small copy of the "Danæ" brought $500; the original, some years after, being purchased in New York for three times that sum. In an appreciative notice of him, which appeared soon after his death in a leading literary journal, there is the following just reference to his portrait of Washington: "It has been much praised and frequently copied on the continent of Europe; but it has a forced and foreign air, into which the

* See notice of Wertmuller in *Analectic Magazine*, 1815.

painter seems to have fallen by losing sight of the noble presence before him, in an attempt after ideal dignity." *

Wertmuller was eminent in his day for miniatures and oil portraits. Our first knowledge of him was derived from the superb picture of Danæ, which, for some time, occupied a nook, curtained from observation, in the studio of the late Henry Inman, of New York, and it was exhibited in Washington City, thirty years ago. There was fine drawing and rich color in this voluptuous creation—enough to convey a high idea of the skill and grace of the artist. With this picture vividly in the mind, it is difficult to realize that the chaste, subdued portrait of Washington was from the same hand.

It was confidently asserted, that Washington invariably noted in his diary his sittings to portrait painters, and that no entry appears in reference to this picture. Its claim to originality was, therefore, questioned. With the impatience of the whole subject, however, that Washington confessed at last, he may have ceased to record what became a penance; and were the picture satisfactory in other respects, we should not be disposed to complain that it was skilfully combined from other portraits. But, in our view, the engraving, at least, has intrinsic faults. It is neither the Washington familiar to observation as portrayed, nor to fancy as idealized. There is a self-conscious expression about the mouth, not visible in Stuart's or Trumbull's heads, and out of character in itself; the eyebrows are raised so as to indicate either a supercilious or a surprised mood, both alien to Washington's habitual state of mind; it is impossible for the brows to be knit between the eyes, and arched over them at the same time, as in this engraving; the eyes themselves have a staring look; the animation so much wanted is here obtained at the expense of that serenity which was a normal characteristic of the man; we miss the modesty, the latent power, the placid strength, so intimately associated with the looks as well as the nature of Washington; the visage is too elongated; compared with the Athenæum portrait this picture has a commonplace expression; it does not approach it in moral elevation; we should pass it by in a gallery as the likeness of a gentleman and a brave officer, but not linger over it as the incarnation of disinterested, magnanimous, loyal courage, such as lent a certain unconscious, im-

* Analectic Magazine.

pressive, and superior aspect to Washington, and divided him, by an infinite distance, from the mob of vulgar heroes.

* * * * * * * *

The latest and most triumphant attempt to embody and illustrate the features, form and character of Washington in statuary, was made by the late American sculptor—THOMAS CRAWFORD. How well he studied, and how adequately he reproduced the head of his illustrious subject, may be realized by a careful examination of the noble and expressive marble bust of Washington from his chisel, now in the possession of John Ward, Esq., of New York. Essentially, and as far as contour and proportions are concerned, based upon the model of Houdon,—this beautiful and majestic effigy is instinct with the character of its subject, so that while satisfactory in detail as a resemblance caught from nature, it, at the same time, is executed in a spirit perfectly accordant with the traditional impressions and the instinctive ideas whence we derive our ideal of the man, the chieftain, and the patriot; the moulding of the brow, the *pose* of the head, and especially the expression of the mouth, are not less authentic than effective. But the crowning achievement of this artist is his equestrian statue executed for the State of Virginia, and now the grand trophy and ornament of her Capitol. "When on the evening of his arrival, Crawford went to see, for the first time, his Washington in bronze at the Munich foundry, he was surprised at the dusky precincts of the vast area; suddenly torches flashed illumination on the magnificent horse and rider, and simultaneously burst forth from a hundred voices a song of triumph and jubilee; thus the delighted Germans congratulated their gifted brother and hailed the sublime work—typical to them of American freedom, patriotism, and genius. The Bavarian king warmly recognized its original merits and consummate effect; the artists would suffer no inferior hands to pack and despatch it to the sea-side; peasants greeted its triumphal progress; the people of Richmond were emulous to share the task of conveying it from the quay to Capitol Hill; mute admiration followed by ecstatic cheers, hailed its unveiling, and the most gracious native eloquence inaugurated its erection. We might descant upon the union of majesty and spirit in the figure of Washington, and the vital truth of action in the horse, the air of command and of rectitude, the martial vigor and grace, so instantly felt by the popular heart, and so critically praised by the adept in sculpture cognizant of the difficulties to overcome, and the

impression to be absolutely conveyed by such a work in order to make it at once true to nature and to character; we might repeat the declaration that no figure ancient or modern, so entirely illustrates the classical definition of oratory, as consisting in action, as the statue of Patrick Henry, one of the grand accessories of the work,—which seems instinct with that memorable utterance, "Give me liberty, or give me death!" By a singular and affecting coincidence, the news of Crawford's death reached the United States simultaneously with the arrival of the ship containing this colossal bronze statue of Washington—his "crowning achievement." In this work, the first merit is *naturalness;* although full of equine ardor, the graceful and noble animal is evidently subdued by his rider; calm power is obvious in the man; restrained eagerness in the horse; Washington's left hand is on the snaffle bridle, which is drawn back; he sits with perfect ease and dignity, the head and face a little turned to the left, as if his attention had just been called in that direction, either in expectancy, or to give an order; he points forward and a little upwards; the figure is erect, the chest thrown forward, the knees pressed to the saddle, the heel nearly beneath the shoulder, and the sole of the foot almost horizontal. The seat is a military and not a hunting seat; the horse is recognized by one acquainted with breeds, as "a charger of Arab blood.

* * * * * * * *

His hands were large, as became one inured to practical achievement; his forehead was of that square mould that accompanies an executive mind, not swelling at the temples, as in the more ideal conformation of poetical men; a calm and benevolent light usually gleamed from his eyes, and they flashed, at times, with valorous purpose or stern indignation; but they were not remarkably large as in persons of more fluency, and foretold Washington's natural deficiency in language, proclaiming the man of deeds, not words; neither had they the liquid hue of extreme sensibility, nor the varying light of an unsubdued temperament; their habitual expression was self-possessed, serene and thoughtful. There was a singular breadth to the face, invariably preserved by Stuart, but not always by Trumbull, who often gives an aquiline and somewhat elongated visage: no good physiognomist can fail to see in his nose that dilation of the nostril and prominence of the ridge which belong to resolute and spirited characters; the distance between the eyes marks a capacity to measure distances

and appreciate form and the relation of space; but these special traits are secondary to the carriage of the body, and the expression of the whole face, in which appear to have blended an unparalleled force of impression. When fully possessed of the details of his remarkable countenance, and inspired by the record of his career, we turn from the description of those who beheld the man, on horseback, at the head of an army, presiding over the national councils, or seated in the drawing-room, to any of the portraits, we feel that no artist ever caught his best look, or transmitted his features when kindled by that matchless soul. If we compare any selection of engravings with each other, so inferior are the greater part extant, we find such glaring discrepancies, that doubts multiply; and we realize that art never did entire justice to the idea, the latent significance, and the absolute character of Washington. There is dignity in Houdon's bust, an effective facial angle in the crayon of Sharpless, and elegance, wisdom and benignity in Stuart's head; but what are they, each and all, in contrast with the visage we behold in fancy, and revere in heart? It has been ingeniously remarked, that the letters received by an individual indicate his character better than those he writes, because they suggest what he elicits from others, and thereby furnish the best key to his scope of mind and temper of soul; on the same principle the likeness drawn, not from the minute descriptions, but the vivid impressions of those brought into intimate contact with an illustrious character, are the most reliable materials for his portrait; they reflect the man in the broad mirror of humanity, and are the faithful daguerreotypes which the vital radiance of his nature leaves on the consciousness of mankind.

* * * * * * * *

II.

WASHINGTON'S FAREWELL ADDRESS.

[The original MS. of the Farewell Address, in Washington's handwriting, and with his revisions and alterations, having been purchased by JAMES LENOX, Esq., of New York, that gentleman caused a few copies of it, with some illustrative documents, to be printed for private distribution. By permission of Mr. Lenox it is here reprinted, with the alterations, and with his explanatory remarks.]

PREFACE.

THIS reprint of Washington's Farewell Address to the people of the United States, is made from the original manuscript recently sold in Philadelphia by the Administrators of the late Mr. David C. Claypoole, in whose possession it had been from the date of its first publication. The paper is *entirely* in the autograph of Washington: no one acquainted with his handwriting can inspect it, and doubt for a moment the statements to that effect made by Mr. Claypoole and Mr. Rawle.

Upon examining the manuscript, it was found that, in addition to its importance as an historical document, and its value from being in the autograph of Washington, it was of great interest as a literary curiosity, and threw light upon the disputed question of the authorship of the Address. It clearly shows the process by which that paper was wrought into the form in which it was first given to the public; and notes written on the margin of passages and paragraphs, which have been erased, prove, almost beyond a doubt, that this draft was submitted to the judgment of other persons. Such memoranda were unnecessary either for Washington's own direction on a subsequent revision, or for the guidance of the printer; but he might very naturally thus note the reasons which had led him to make the alterations before he asked the advice and opinion of his friends. It seems probable, therefore, that this is the very draft sent to General Hamilton and Chief Justice Jay, as related in the letter of the latter. Some of

the alterations, however, were evidently made during the writing of the paper; for in a few instances a part, and even the whole, of a sentence is struck out, which afterwards occurs in the body of the address.

Mr. Claypoole's description of the appearance of the manuscript is very accurate. There are many alterations, corrections, and interlineations: and whole sentences and paragraphs are sometimes obliterated. All these, however, have been deciphered without much trouble, and carefully noted.

It was thought best to leave the text in this edition as it was first printed: only two slight verbal variations were found between the corrected manuscript, and the common printed copies. All the interlineations and alterations are inserted in brackets [ ], and where, in any case, words or sentences have been struck out, either with or without corrections in the text to supply their place, these portions have been deciphered and are printed in notes at the foot of the page. The reader will thus be enabled to perceive at a glance the changes made in the composition of the address; and if the draft made by General Hamilton, and read by him to Mr. Jay, should be published, it will be seen how far Washington adopted the modifications and suggestions made by them.

When this preface was thus far prepared for the press, an opportunity was afforded, through the kindness of John C. Hamilton, Esq., to examine several letters which passed between Washington and General Hamilton relating to the Address, and also a copy of it in the handwriting of the latter. It appears from these communications that the President, both in sending to him a rough draft of the document, and at subsequent dates, requested him to prepare such an Address as he thought would be appropriate to the occasion; that Washington consulted him particularly, and most minutely, on many points connected with it; and that at different times General Hamilton did forward to the President three drafts of such a paper. The first was sent back to him with suggestions for its correction and enlargement: from the second draft thus altered and improved, the manuscript now printed may be supposed to have been prepared by Washington, and transmitted for final examination to General Hamilton and Judge Jay; and with it the third draft was returned to the President, and may probably yet be found among his papers.

The copy in the possession of Mr. Hamilton is probably the second of these three drafts: it is very much altered and corrected throughout. In comparing it with that in Washington's autograph, the sentiments are found to be the same, and the words used are very frequently identical. Some of the passages erased in the manuscript are in the draft: three paragraphs, viz. those on pages 50, 51, and 52 have nothing corresponding to them in the draft; but a space is left in it, evidently for the insertion of additional

matter. The comparison of these two papers is exceedingly curious. It is difficult to conceive how two persons could express the same ideas in substantially the same language, and yet with much diversity in the construction of the sentences, and the position of the words.

J. L.

New York, *April* 12, 1850.

FAREWELL ADDRESS.

Friends, and Fellow-Citizens:

The period for a new election of a Citizen, to administer the Executive Government of the United States, being not far distant, and the time actually arrived, when your thoughts must be employed in designating the person, who is to be clothed with that important trust [*], it appears to me proper, especially as it may conduce to a more distinct expression of the public voice, that I should now apprise you of the resolution I have formed, to decline being considered among the number of those, out of whom a choice is to be made.

I beg you, at the same time, to do me the justice to be assured, that this resolution has not been taken, without a strict regard to all the considerations appertaining to the relation, which binds a dutiful citizen to his country—and that, in withdrawing the tender of service which silence in my situation might imply, I am influenced by no diminution of zeal for your future interest, no deficiency of grateful respect for your past kindness; but [am supported by] † a full conviction that the step is compatible with both.

The acceptance of, and continuance hitherto in, the office to which your suffrages have twice called me, have been a uniform sacrifice of inclination to the opinion of duty, and to a deference for what appeared to be your desire.—I constantly hoped, that it would have been much earlier in my power, consistently with motives which I was not at liberty to disregard, to return to that retirement, from which I had been reluctantly drawn.—The strength of my inclination to do this, previous to the last election, had even led to the preparation of an address to declare it to you; but mature reflection on the then per-

* for another term

† act under

plexed and critical posture of our affairs with foreign Nations, and the unanimous advice of persons entitled to my confidence, impelled me to abandon the idea.—

I rejoice that the state of your concerns, external as well as internal, no longer renders the pursuit of inclination incompatible with the sentiment of duty, or propriety; and [am persuaded] * whatever partiality [may be retained] † for my services, [that] ‡ in the present circumstances of our country [you] will not disapprove my determination to retire.

The impressions, [with] § which I first [undertook] ‖ the arduous trust, were explained on the proper occasion. In the discharge of this trust, I will only say that I have, with good intentions, contributed [towards] ¶ the organization and administration of the government, the best exertions of which a very fallible judgment was capable. Not unconscious, in the outset, of the inferiority of my qualifications, experience in my own eyes, [perhaps] still more in the eyes of others, has [strengthened] ** the motives to diffidence of myself; and every day the increasing weight of years admonishes me more and more, that the shade of retirement is as necessary to me as it will be welcome.—Satisfied that if any circumstances have given peculiar value to my services, they were temporary, I have the consolation to believe, that, while choice and prudence invite me to quit the political scene, patriotism does not forbid it. [††]

In looking forward to the moment, which is [intended] to terminate the career of my public life, my feelings do not permit me to suspend the deep acknowledgment [of] ‡‡ that debt of gratitude which I owe to my beloved country,—for the many honors it has conferred upon me; still more for the stedfast confidence with which it has supported me;

* that	† any portion of you may yet retain	‡ even they	
§ under	‖ accepted	¶ to	** not lessened

†† May I also have that of knowing in my retreat, that the involuntary errors, I have probably committed, have been the sources of no serious or lasting mischief to our country. I may then expect to realize, without alloy, the sweet enjoyment of partaking, in the midst of my fellow-citizens, the benign influence of good laws under a free government; the ever favorite object of my heart, and the happy reward, I trust, of our mutual cares, dangers and labours.

In the margin opposite this paragraph is the following note in Washington's Autograph also erased, "obliterated to avoid the imputation of affected modesty."

‡‡ demanded by

and for the opportunities I have thence enjoyed of manifesting my inviolable attachment, by services faithful and persevering, though [in usefulness unequal] * to my zeal.—If benefits have resulted to our country from these services, let it always be remembered to your praise, and as an instructive example in our annals, that [†] under circumstances in which the Passions agitated in every direction were liable to [mislead],‡ amidst appearances sometimes dubious, vicissitudes of fortune often discouraging—in situations in which not unfrequently want of success has countenanced the spirit of criticism [the constancy of your support] was the essential prop of the efforts and [a] § guarantee of the plans by which they were effected. Profoundly penetrated with this idea, I shall carry it with me to the grave, as a strong incitement to unceasing vows [‖] that Heaven may continue to you the choicest tokens of its beneficence—that your union and brotherly affection may be perpetual—that the free constitution, which is the work of your hands, may be sacredly maintained—that its administration in every department may be stamped with wisdom and virtue—that, in fine, the happiness of the people of these States, under the auspices of liberty, may be made complete, by so careful a preservation and so prudent a use of this blessing as will acquire to them the glory [¶] of recommending it to the applause, the affection, and adoption of every nation which is yet a stranger to it.

Here, perhaps, I ought to stop.—But a solicitude for your welfare which cannot end but with my life, and the apprehension of danger, natural to that solicitude, [urge me, on an occasion like the present, to offer] ** to your solemn contemplation, and to recommend to your frequent review, some sentiments which are the result of much reflection, of no inconsiderable observation [††], and which appear to me all important to the permanency of your felicity as a people.—These will be offered to you with the more freedom as you can only see in them, the disinterested warnings of a departing friend, who can [possibly] have no personal motive to bias his counsels.—[Nor can I forget, as an

* unequal in usefulness
† the constancy of your support
‡ wander and fluctuate
§ the
‖ the only return I can henceforth make
¶ or satisfaction
** encouraged by the remembrance of your indulgent reception of my sentiments on an occasion not dissimilar to the present, urge me to offer
†† and experience

encouragement to it your indulgent reception of my sentiments on a former and not dissimilar occasion.]

Interwoven as is the love of liberty with every ligament of your hearts, no recommendation of mine is necessary to fortify or confirm the attachment.——

The Unity of Government which constitutes you one people, is also now dear to you.—It is justly so;—for it is a main Pillar in the Edifice of your real independence; [the support] of your tranquillity at home; your peace abroad; of your safety; [*] of your prosperity [†]; of that very Liberty which you so highly prize.—But, as it is easy to foresee, that from [different] ‡ causes, and from different quarters, much pains will be taken, many artifices employed, to weaken in your minds the conviction of this truth:—as this is the point in your [political] fortress against which the batteries of internal and external enemies will be most constantly and actively (though often covertly and insidiously) directed, it is of infinite moment, that you should properly estimate the immense value of your national Union to your collective and individual happiness;—that you should cherish [§] a cordial, habitual, and immoveable attachment [to it, accustoming yourselves to think and speak of it as of the Palladium of your political safety and prosperity; watching for its preservation with jealous anxiety; discountenancing whatever may suggest even a suspicion that it can in any event be abandoned, and indignantly frowning upon the first dawning of every attempt to alienate any portion of our Country from the rest, or to enfeeble the sacred ties which now link together the various parts.] ‖—

For this you have every inducement of sympathy and interest.—Citizens [by birth or choice of a common country],¶ that country has a right to concentrate your affections.—The name of American, which belongs to you, in your national capacity, must always exalt the just

* in every relation † in every shape ‡ various § towards it

‖ that you should accustom yourselves to reverence it as the Palladium of your political safety and prosperity, adapting constantly your words and actions to that momentous idea; that you should watch for its preservation with jealous anxiety, discountenance whatever may suggest a suspicion that it can in any event be abandoned; and frown upon the first dawning of any attempt to alienate any portion of our Country from the rest, or to enfeeble the sacred ties which now link together the several parts.

¶ of a common country by birth or choice

pride of Patriotism, more than any appellation [*] derived from local discriminations.—With slight shades of difference, you have the same Religion, Manners, Habits, and political Principles.—You have in a common cause fought and triumphed together.—The Independence and Liberty you possess are the work of joint councils and joint efforts—of common dangers, sufferings and successes.—

But these considerations, however powerfully they address themselves to your sensibility, are greatly outweighed by those which apply more immediately to your Interest.—Here every portion of our country finds the most commanding motives for carefully guarding and preserving the Union of the whole.

The *North* in an [unrestrained] † intercourse with the *South*, protected by the equal Laws of a common government, finds in the productions of the latter [‡] great additional resources of maritime and commercial enterprise—and precious materials of manufacturing industry.—The *South*, in the same intercourse, benefiting by the agency of the *North*, sees its agriculture grow and its commerce expand. Turning partly into its own channels the seamen of the *North*, it finds its particular navigation envigorated;—and while it contributes, in different ways, to nourish and increase the general mass of the national navigation, it looks forward to the protection of a maritime strength to which itself is unequally adapted.—The *East*, in a like intercourse with the *West*, already finds, and in the progressive improvement of interior communications, by land and water, will more and more find, a valuable vent for the commodities which it brings from abroad, or manufactures at home.—The *West* derives from the *East* supplies requisite to its growth and comfort, and what is perhaps of still greater consequence, it must of necessity owe the *secure* enjoyment of indispensable *outlets* for its own productions to the weight, influence, and the future maritime strength of the Atlantic side of the Union, directed by an indissoluble community of interest, as *one Nation*. [Any other] § tenure by which the *West* can hold this essential advantage, [whether derived] ‖ from its own separate strength or from an apostate and unnatural connection with any foreign Power, must be intrinsically precarious. [¶]

* to be † unfettered ‡ many of the peculiar
§ The ‖ either
¶ liable every moment to be disturbed by the fluctuating combinations of the

[*] While [then] every part of our Country thus [feels] † an immediate and particular interest in Union, all the parts ‡ [combined cannot fail to find] in the united mass of means and efforts [§] greater strength, greater resource, proportionably greater security from external danger, a less frequent interruption of their peace by foreign Nations; and, [what is] ‖ of inestimable value! they must derive from Union an exemption from those broils and wars between themselves, which [so frequently] ¶ afflict neighbouring countries, not tied together by the same government; which their own rivalships alone would be sufficient to produce; but which opposite foreign alliances, attachments and intrigues would stimulate and embitter.—Hence likewise they will avoid the necessity of those overgrown Military establishments, which under any form of Government are inauspicious to liberty, and which [are to be regarded] ** as particularly hostile to Republican Liberty: In this sense it is, that your Union ought to be considered as a main prop of your liberty, and that the love of the one ought to endear to you the preservation of the other.

These considerations speak a persuasive language to [every] †† reflecting and virtuous mind,—[and] ‡‡ exhibit the continuance of the Union as a primary object of Patriotic desire.—Is there a doubt, whether a common government can embrace so large a sphere? Let experience solve it.—To listen to mere speculation in such a case were criminal.—[We are authorised] §§ to hope that a proper organization of the whole, with the auxiliary agency of governments for the respective subdivisions, will afford a happy issue to the experiment. 'Tis well worth a fair and full experiment. [‖‖] With such powerful and obvious motives to Union, [affecting] ¶¶ all parts of our country [***], while experience shall not have demonstrated its impracticability, there will

primary interests of Europe, which must be expected to regulate the conduct of the Nations of which it is composed.

* And † finds ‡ of it § cannot fail to find
‖ which is an advantage ¶ inevitably
** there is reason to regard †† any ‡‡ they §§ 'Tis natural

‖‖ It may not impossibly be found, that the spirit of party, the machinations of foreign powers, the corruption and ambition of individual citizens are more formidable adversaries to the Unity of our Empire than any inherent difficulties in the scheme. Against these the mounds of national opinion, national sympathy and national jealousy ought to be raised.

¶¶ as *** have

always be [reason] * to distrust the patriotism of those, who in any quarter may endeavour to weaken its bands. [†]—

In contemplating the causes which may disturb our Union, it occurs as matter of serious concern, that [any ground should have been furnished for characterizing parties by] ‡ *Geographical* discriminations—*Northern* and *Southern*—*Atlantic* and *Western*; [whence designing men may endeavor to excite a belief that there is a real difference of local interests and views.] § One of the expedients of Party to acquire influence, within particular districts, is to misrepresent the opinions and aims of other districts.—You cannot shield yourselves too much against the jealousies and heartburnings which spring from these misrepresentations;—They tend to render alien to each other those who ought

* cause in the effect itself

† Besides the more serious causes already hinted as threatening our Union, there is one less dangerous, but sufficiently dangerous to make it prudent to be upon our guard against it. I allude to the petulance of party differences of opinion. It is not uncommon to hear the irritations which these excite vent themselves in declarations that the different parts of the United States are ill affected to each other, in menaces that the Union will be dissolved by this or that measure. Intimations like these are as indiscreet as they are intemperate. Though frequently made with levity and without any really evil intention, they have a tendency to produce the consequence which they indicate. They teach the minds of men to consider the Union as precarious;—as an object to which they ought not to attach their hopes and fortunes;—and thus chill the sentiment in its favour. By alarming the pride of those to whom they are addressed, they set ingenuity at work to depreciate the value of the thing, and to discover reasons of indifference towards it. This is not wise.—It will be much wiser to habituate ourselves to reverence the Union as the palladium of our national happiness; to accommodate constantly our words and actions to that idea, and to discountenance whatever may suggest a suspicion that it can in any event be abandoned. (In the margin opposite this *paragraph* are the words, "Not important enough.")

‡ our parties for some time past have been too much characterized by

§ These discriminations,———the mere contrivance of the spirit of Party, (always dexterous to seize every handle by which the passions can be wielded, and too skilful not to turn to account the sympathy of neighbourhood), have furnished an argument against the Union as evidence of a real difference of local interests and views; and serve to hazard it by organizing larger districts of country, under the leaders of contending factions; whose rivalships, prejudices and schemes of ambition, rather than the true interests of the Country, will direct the use of their influence. If it be possible to correct this poison in the habit of our body politic, it is worthy the endeavours of the moderate and the good to effect it.

to be bound together by fraternal affection.—The inhabitants of our Western country have lately had a useful lesson on this [head.] *—They have seen, in the negotiation by the Executive, and in the unanimous ratification by the Senate, of the Treaty with Spain, and in the universal satisfaction at that event, throughout the United States, a decisive proof how unfounded were the suspicions propagated among them of a policy in the General Government and in the Atlantic States unfriendly to their interests in regard to the Mississippi.—They have been witnesses to the formation of two Treaties, that with G. Britain, and that with Spain, which secure to them every thing they could desire, in respect to our foreign Relations towards confirming their prosperity.—Will it not be their wisdom to rely for the preservation of these advantages on the Union by which they were procured ?—Will they not henceforth be deaf to those advisers, if such there are, who would sever them from their Brethren, and connect them with Aliens ?—

To the efficacy and permanency of your Union, a Government for the whole is indispensable.—No alliances however strict between the parts can be an adequate substitute.—They must inevitably experience the infractions and interruptions which all alliances in all times have experienced.—Sensible of this momentous truth, you have improved upon your first essay, by the adoption of a Constitution of Government, better calculated than your former for an intimate Union, and for the efficacious management of your common concerns.—This government, the offspring of our own choice, uninfluenced and unawed, adopted upon full investigation and mature deliberation, completely free in its principles, in the distribution of its powers, uniting security with energy, and containing within itself a provision for its own amendment, has a just claim to your confidence and your support.—Respect for its authority, compliance with its Laws, acquiescence in its measures, are duties enjoined by the fundamental maxims of true Liberty. The basis of our political systems is the right of the people to make and to alter their Constitutions of Government.—But the Constitution which at any time exists, 'till changed by an explicit and authentic act of the whole People, is sacredly obligatory upon all.—The very idea of the power and the right of the People to establish

* subject

Government, presupposes the duty of every individual to obey the established Government.

All obstructions to the execution of the Laws, all combinations and associations, under whatever plausible character, with [the real] design to direct, controul, counteract, or awe the regular deliberation and action of the constituted authorities, are destructive of this fundamental principle, and of fatal tendency.—They serve to organize faction, to give it an artificial and extraordinary force—to put, [*] in the place of the delegated will of the Nation, the will of a party;—often a small but artful and enterprising minority of the community;—and, according to the alternate triumphs of different parties, to make the public administration the mirror of the ill-concerted and incongruous projects of faction, rather than the organ of consistent and wholesome plans, digested by common councils and modified by mutual interests. —However combinations or associations of the above description may now and then answer popular ends, [†] they are likely, in the course of time and things, to become potent engines, by which cunning, ambitious and unprincipled men will be enabled to subvert the power of the People, and to usurp for themselves the reins of Government; destroying afterwards the very engines which have lifted them to unjust dominion.—

Towards the preservation of your Government and the permanency of your present happy state, it is requisite, not only that you steadily discountenance irregular opposition to its acknowledged authority, but also that you resist with care [the] ‡ spirit of innovation upon its principles however specious the pretexts.—One method of assault may be to effect, in the forms of the Constitution, alterations which will impair the energy of the system, [and thus to] § undermine what cannot be directly overthrown. In all the changes to which you may be invited, remember that time and habit are at least as necessary to fix the true character of Governments, as of other human institutions—that experience is the surest standard, by which to test the real tendency of the existing Constitution of a Country—that facility in changes upon the credit of mere hypothesis and opinion exposes to perpetual change, from the endless variety of hypothesis and opinion:—and remember, especially, that for the efficient management of your common interests in a country so extensive as ours, a Government of as much

* it † and purposes ‡ a § to

vigour as is consistent with the perfect security of Liberty is indispensable—Liberty itself will find in such a Government, with powers properly distributed and adjusted, its surest guardian.—[It is indeed little else than a name, where the Government is too feeble to withstand the enterprises of faction, to confine each member of the Society within the limits prescribed by the laws, and to maintain all in the secure and tranquil enjoyment of the rights of person and property.]*

I have already intimated to you the danger of Parties in the State, with particular reference to the founding of them on Geographical discriminations.—Let me now take a more comprehensive view, and warn you in the most solemn manner against the baneful effects of the Spirit of Party, generally.

This Spirit, unfortunately, is inseparable from [our]† nature, having its root in the strongest passions of the [human] mind.—It exists under different shapes in all Governments, more or less stifled, controuled or repressed; but in those of the popular form it is seen in its greatest rankness, and is truly their worst enemy.—[‡]

The alternate domination of one faction over another, sharpened by the spirit of revenge natural to party dissension, which in different ages and countries has perpetrated the most horrid enormities, is itself a frightful despotism.—But this leads at length to a more formal and

* Owing to you as I do a frank and free disclosure of my heart, I shall not conceal from you the belief I entertain, that your Government as at present constituted is far more likely to prove too feeble than too powerful.

† human

‡ In Republics of narrow extent, it is not difficult for those who at any time hold the reins of Power, and command the ordinary public favor, to overturn the established [constitution]* in favor of their own aggrandizement.—The same thing may likewise be too often accomplished in such Republics, by partial combinations of men, who though not in office, from birth, riches or other sources of distinction, have extraordinary influence and numerous [adherents.]†—By debauching the Military force, by surprising some commanding citadel, or by some other sudden and unforeseen movement the fate of the Republic is decided.—But in Republics of large extent, usurpation can scarcely make its way through these avenues.—The powers and opportunities of resistance of a wide extended and numerous nation, defy the successful efforts of the ordinary Military force, or of any collections which wealth and patronage may call to their aid.—In such Republics, it is safe to assert, that the conflicts of popular factions are the chief, if not the only inlets, of usurpation and Tyranny.

* order

† retainers

permanent despotism.—The disorders and miseries, which result, gradually incline the minds of men to seek security and repose in the absolute power of an Individual: and sooner or later the chief of some prevailing faction, more able or more fortunate than his competitors, turns this disposition to the purposes of his own elevation, on the ruins of Public Liberty.

Without looking forward to an extremity of this kind, (which nevertheless ought not to be entirely out of sight), the common and continual mischiefs of the spirit of Party are sufficient to make it the interest and the duty of a wise People to discourage and restrain it.—

It serves always to distract the Public Councils and enfeeble the Public administration.—It agitates the community with ill-founded jealousies and false alarms, kindles the animosity of one part against another, foments occasionally riot and insurrection.—It opens the door to foreign influence and corruption, which find a facilitated access [to the Government itself through the channels of party passions. Thus, the policy and the will of one country, are subjected to the policy and will of another.] *

There is an opinion that parties in free countries are useful checks upon the Administration of the Government, and serve to keep alive the Spirit of Liberty.—This within certain limits is probably true—and in Governments of a Monarchical cast, Patriotism may look with indulgence, if not with favour, upon the spirit of party.—But in those of the popular character, in Governments purely elective, it is a spirit not to be encouraged.—From their natural tendency, it is certain there will always be enough of that spirit for every salutary purpose,—and there being constant danger of excess, the effort ought to be, by force of public opinion, to mitigate and assuage it.—A fire not to be quenched; it demands a uniform vigilance to prevent its bursting into a flame, lest, [instead of warming, it should] † consume.—

It is important, likewise, that the habits of thinking in a free country should inspire caution in those entrusted with its administration, to confine themselves within their respective constitutional spheres; avoiding in the exercise of the powers of one department to

* through the channels of party passions. It frequently subjects the policy of our own country to the policy of some foreign country, and even enslaves the will of our Government to the will of some foreign Government.

† it should not only warm, but

encroach upon another.—The spirit of encroachment tends to consolidate the powers of all the departments in one, and thus to create, [*] whatever [the form of government, a real] † despotism.—A just estimate of that love of power, and [‡] proneness to abuse it, which predominates in the human heart, is sufficient to satisfy us of the truth of this position.—The necessity of reciprocal checks in the exercise of political power, by dividing and distributing it into different depositories, and constituting each the Guardian of the Public Weal [against]§ invasions by the others, has been evinced by experiments ancient and modern; some of them in our country and under our own eyes.—To preserve them must be as necessary as to institute them.—If in the opinion of the People, the distribution or modification of the Constitutional powers be in any particular wrong, let it be corrected by an amendment in the way which the Constitution designates.—But let there be no change by usurpation; for though this, in one instance, may be the instrument of good, it is the [customary]‖ weapon by which free governments are destroyed.—The precedent [¶] must always greatly overbalance in permanent evil any partial or [transient] ** benefit which the use [††] can at any time yield.—

Of all the dispositions and habits which lead to political prosperity, Religion and morality are indispensable supports.—In vain would that man claim the tribute of Patriotism, who should labour to subvert these great Pillars of human happiness, these firmest props of the duties of Men and Citizens.—The mere Politician, equally with the pious man, ought to respect and to cherish them.—A volume could not trace all their connections with private and public felicity.—Let it simply be asked where is the security for property, for reputation, for life, if the sense of religious obligation *desert* the oaths, which are the instruments of investigation in Courts of Justice? And let us with caution indulge the supposition, that morality can be maintained without religion.—Whatever may be conceded to the influence of refined education on minds of peculiar structure—reason and experience both forbid us to expect that national morality can prevail in exclusion of religious principle.—

'Tis substantially true that virtue or morality is a necessary spring

* under
§ from
** temporary
† forms, a
‖ usual and natural
†† itself
‡ the
¶ of its use

of popular government.—The rule indeed extends with more or less force to every species of Free Government.—Who that is a sincere friend to it, can look with indifference upon attempts to shake the foundation of the fabric?—

[Promote then as an object of primary importance, institutions for the general diffusion of knowledge.—In proportion as the structure of a government gives force to public opinion, it is essential that public opinion should be enlightened.]—*

As a very important source of strength and security, cherish public credit.—One method of preserving it is to use it as [sparingly]† as possible:—avoiding occasions of expense by cultivating peace, but remembering also that timely disbursements to prepare for danger frequently prevent much greater disbursements to repel it—avoiding likewise the accumulation of debt, not only by [shunning] ‡ occasions of expense, but by vigorous exertions in time of Peace to discharge the debts which unavoidable wars may have occasioned, not ungenerously throwing upon posterity the burthen which we ourselves ought to bear. The execution of these maxims belongs to your Representatives, but it is necessary that public opinion should [co-operate.]§—To facilitate to them the performance of their duty, it is essential that you should practically bear in mind, that towards the payment of debts there must be Revenue—that to have Revenue there must be taxes—that no taxes can be devised which are not more or less inconvenient and unpleasant—that the intrinsic embarrassment inseparable from the selection of the proper objects (which is always a choice of difficulties) ought to be a decisive motive for a candid construction of the conduct of the Government in making it, and for a spirit of acquiescence in the measures for obtaining Revenue which the public exigencies may at any time dictate.—

* Cultivate industry and frugality, as auxiliaries to good morals and sources of private and public prosperity.—Is there not room to regret that our propensity to expense exceeds our means for it? Is there not more luxury among us and more diffusively, than suits the actual stage of our national progress? Whatever may be the apology for luxury in a country, mature in the Arts which are its ministers, and the cause of national opulence—can it promote the advantage of a young country, almost wholly agricultural, in the infancy of the Arts, and certainly not in the maturity of wealth?

(Over this paragraph in the original a piece of paper is wafered, on which the passage is written as printed in the text.)

† little ‡ avoiding § coincide

Observe good faith and justice towards all Nations. [*] Cultivate peace and harmony with all.—Religion and morality enjoin this conduct; and can it be that good policy does not equally enjoin it?—It will be worthy of a free, enlightened, and, at no distant period, a great nation, to give to mankind the magnanimous and too novel example of a People always guided by an exalted justice and benevolence.—Who can doubt that in the course of time and things, the fruits of such a plan would richly repay any temporary advantages which might be lost by a steady adherence to it? Can it be, that Providence has not connected the permanent felicity of a Nation with its virtue? The experiment, at least, is recommended by every sentiment which ennobles human nature.—Alas! is it rendered impossible by its vices?

In the execution of such a plan nothing is more essential than that [permanent, inveterate] † antipathies against particular nations and passionate attachments for others should be excluded; and that in place of them just and amicable feelings towards all should be cultivated.—The Nation, which indulges towards another [an] ‡ habitual hatred or [an] § habitual fondness, is in some degree a slave. It is a slave to its animosity or to its affection, either of which is sufficient to lead it astray from its duty and its interests.—Antipathy in one Nation against another [‖] disposes each more readily to offer insult and injury, to lay hold of slight causes of umbrage, and to be haughty and intractable, when accidental or trifling occasions of dispute occur.—Hence frequent collisions, obstinate, envenomed and bloody contests.—The Nation prompted by ill-will and resentment sometimes impels to War the Government, contrary to [the best] ¶ calculations of policy. The Government sometimes participates in the [national] propensity, and adopts through passion what reason would reject;—at other times, it makes the animosity of the Nation subservient to projects of hostility instigated by pride, ambition, and other sinister and pernicious motives.—The peace often sometimes perhaps the Liberty, of Nations has been the victim.—

So likewise a passionate attachment of one Nation for another produces a variety of evils.—Sympathy for the favourite nation, facilitat-

* and cultivate peace and harmony with all, for in public as well as in private transactions, I am persuaded that honesty will always be found to be the best policy.

† rooted ‡ a § a

‖ begets of course a similar sentiment in that other, ¶ its own

ing the illusion of an imaginary common interest in cases where no real common interest exists, and infusing into one [*] the enmities of the other, betrays the former into a participation in the quarrels and wars of the latter, without adequate inducement or justification: It leads also to concessions to the favourite Nation of privileges denied to others, which is apt doubly to injure the Nation making the concessions; [†] by unnecessarily parting with what ought to have been retained,‡ and by exciting jealousy, ill-will, and a disposition to retaliate in the parties from whom equal privileges are withheld; and it gives to ambitious, corrupted, or deluded citizens (who devote themselves to the favourite Nation) facility to betray, or sacrifice the interests of their own country without odium, sometimes even with popularity:—gilding with the appearances of a virtuous sense of obligation, a commendable deference for public opinion, or a laudable zeal for public good, the base or foolish compliances of ambition, corruption, or infatuation.—

As avenues to foreign influence in innumerable ways, such attachments are particularly alarming to the truly enlightened and independent patriot.—How many opportunities do they afford to tamper with domestic factions, to practise the arts of seduction, to mislead public opinion, to influence or awe the public councils! Such an attachment of a small or weak, towards a great and powerful nation, dooms the former to be the satellite of the latter.

Against the insidious wiles of foreign influence, [I conjure you to] believe me, [fellow citizens], § the jealousy of a free people ought to be [constantly] ‖ awake, since history and experience prove that foreign influence is one of the most baneful foes of Republican Government.—But that jealousy to be useful must be impartial; else it becomes the instrument of the very influence to be avoided, instead of a defence against it.—Excessive partiality for one foreign nation and excessive dislike of another, cause those whom they actuate to see danger only on one side, and serve to veil and even second the arts of influence on the other.—Real Patriots, who may resist the intrigues of the favourite, are liable to become suspected and odious; while its tools and dupes usurp the applause and confidence of the people, to surrender their interests.—

The great rule of conduct for us, in regard to foreign Nations is, [in

* another † 1stly ‡ 2dly
§ my friends, ‖ incessantly

extending our commercial relations,] to have with them as little *Political* connection as possible. So far as we have already formed engagements let them be fulfilled with [*] perfect good faith.—Here let us stop.—

Europe has a set of primary interests, which to us have none, or a very remote relation.—Hence she must be engaged in frequent controversies, the causes of which are essentially foreign to our concerns.—Hence therefore it must be unwise in us to implicate ourselves by [†] artificial [ties]‡ in the ordinary vicissitudes of her politics, [or] § the ordinary combinations and collisions of her friendships, or enmities.

Our detached and distant situation invites and enables us to pursue a different course.—If we remain one People, under an efficient government, the period is not far off, when we may defy material injury from external annoyance; when we may take such an attitude as will cause the neutrality we may at any time resolve [upon] ‖ to be scrupulously respected.—When [¶] belligerent nations, under the impossibility of making acquisitions upon us, will [not] lightly hazard the giving us provocation [**]; when we may choose peace or war, as our interest guided by [††] justice shall counsel.—

Why forego the advantages of so peculiar a situation?—Why quit our own to stand upon foreign ground?—Why, by interweaving our destiny with that of any part of Europe, entangle our peace and prosperity in the toils of European ambition, rivalship, interest, humour or caprice?—

'Tis our true policy to steer clear of permanent alliances [‡‡] with any portion of the foreign world;—so far, I mean, as we are now at liberty to do it—for let me not be understood as capable of patronizing infidelity to [existing] §§ engagements, ([I hold the maxim no less applicable to public than to private affairs] ‖‖, that honesty is [always] the best policy).—[I repeat it therefore let those engagements] ¶¶ be observed in their genuine sense.—But in my opinion it is unnecessary and would be unwise to extend them.—

* circumspection indeed, but with
† an ‡ connection § in ‖ to observe • neither of two
** to throw our weight into the opposite scale; †† our
‡‡ intimate connections §§ pre-existing
‖‖ for I hold it to be as true in public as in private transactions,
¶¶ those must

Taking care always to keep ourselves, by suitable establishments, on a respectably defensive posture, we may safely trust to [temporary] * alliances for extraordinary emergencies.——

Harmony, liberal intercourse with all nations, are recommended by policy, humanity and interest.—But even our commercial policy should hold an equal and impartial hand:—neither seeking nor granting exclusive favours or preferences;—consulting the natural course of things;—diffusing and diversifying by gentle means the streams of commerce, but forcing nothing;—establishing with Powers so disposed—in order to give to trade a stable course, to define the rights of our Merchants and to enable the Government to support them—conventional rules of intercourse, the best that present circumstances and mutual opinion will permit; but temporary, and liable to be from time to time abandoned or varied, as experience and circumstances shall dictate; constantly keeping in view, that 'tis folly in one nation to look for disinterested favors [from] † another,—that it must pay with a portion of its independence for whatever it may accept under that character—that by such acceptance, it may place itself in the condition of having given equivalents for nominal favours and yet of being reproached with ingratitude for not giving more.—There can be no greater error than to expect, or calculate upon real favours from Nation to Nation.—'Tis an illusion which experience must cure, which a just pride ought to discard.

In offering to you, my Countrymen, these counsels of an old and affectionate friend, I dare not hope they will make the strong and lasting impression, I could wish,—that they will controul the usual current of the passions or prevent our Nation from running the course which has hitherto marked the destiny of Nations.—But if I may even flatter myself, that they may be productive of some partial benefit; some occasional good; that they may now and then recur to moderate the fury of party spirit, to warn against the mischiefs of foreign intrigue, to guard against the impostures of pretended patriotism, this hope will be a full recompense for the solicitude for your welfare, by which they have been dictated.—

How far in the discharge of my official duties, I have been guided by the principles which have been delineated, the public Records and other evidences of my conduct must witness to You, and to the World.

* occasional † at

—To myself, the assurance of my own conscience is, that I have at least believed myself to be guided by them.

In relation to the still subsisting War in Europe, my Proclamation of the 22d of April 1793 is the index to my plan.—Sanctioned by your approving voice and by that of Your Representatives in both Houses of Congress, the spirit of that measure has continually governed me: —uninfluenced by any attempts to deter or divert me from it.

After deliberate examination with the aid of the best lights I could obtain, [*] I was well satisfied that our country, under all the circumstances of the case, had a right to take, and was bound in duty and interest, to take a Neutral position.—Having taken it, I determined, as far as should depend upon me, to maintain it, with moderation, perseverance and firmness.—

[The considerations which respect the right to hold this conduct, [it is not necessary] † on this occasion [to detail.] I will only observe, that according to my understanding of the matter, that right, so far from being denied by any of the Belligerent Powers, has been virtually admitted by all.—] ‡

The duty of holding a neutral conduct may be inferred, without anything more, from the obligation which justice and humanity impose on every Nation, in cases in which it is free to act, to maintain inviolate the relations of Peace and Amity towards other Nations.—

(* and from men disagreeing in their impressions of the origin, progress, and nature of that war,)

† some of them of a delicate nature, would be improperly the subject of explanation.

‡ The considerations which respect the right to hold this conduct, some of them of a delicate nature, would be improperly the subject of explanation on this occasion. I will barely observe that according to my understanding of the matter, that right so far from being denied by any belligerent Power, has been virtually admitted by all.—

This paragraph is then erased from the word "conduct," and the following sentence interlined, "would be improperly the subject of particular discussion on this occasion. I will barely observe that to me they appear to be warranted by well-established principles of the Laws of Nations as applicable to the nature of our alliance with France in connection with the circumstances of the War and the relative situation of the contending Parties."

A piece of paper is afterwards wafered over both, on which the paragraph as it stands in the text is written, and on the margin is the following note: "This is the first draft, and it is questionable which of the two is to be preferred."

The inducements of interest for observing that conduct, will best be referred to your own reflections and experience.——With me, a predominant motive has been to endeavour to gain time to our country to settle and mature its yet recent institutions, and to progress without interruption to that degree of strength and consistency, which is necessary to give it, humanly speaking, the command of its own fortunes.

Though in reviewing the incidents of my Administration, I am unconscious of intentional error—I am nevertheless too sensible of my defects not to think it probable that I [may] have committed many errors.—[Whatever they may be I]* fervently beseech the Almighty to avert or mitigate [the evils to which they may tend.]†—I shall also carry with me the hope that my country will never cease to view them with indulgence; and that after forty-five years of my life dedicated to its service, with an upright zeal, the faults of incompetent abilities will be consigned to oblivion, as myself must soon be to the mansions of rest. [‡]

Relying on its kindness in this as in other things, and actuated by that fervent love towards it, which is so natural to a man, who views in it the native soil of himself and his progenitors for [several] § generations;—I anticipate with pleasing expectation that retreat, in which I promise myself to realize, without alloy, the sweet enjoyment of partaking, in the midst of my fellow citizens, the benign influence of good Laws under a free Government,—the ever favourite object of

* I deprecate the evils to which they may tend, and † them

‡ May I without the charge of ostentation add, that neither ambition nor interest has been the impelling cause of my actions—that I have never designedly misused any power confided to me nor hesitated to use one, where I thought it could redound to your benefit? May I without the appearance of affectation say, that the fortune with which I came into office is not bettered otherwise than by the improvement in the value of property which the quick progress and uncommon prosperity of our country have produced? May I still further add without breach of delicacy, that I shall retire without cause for a blush, with no sentiments alien to the force of those vows for the happiness of his country so natural to a citizen who sees in it the native soil of his progenitors and himself for four generations?

On the margin opposite this paragraph is the following note: "This paragraph may have the appearance of self-distrust and mere vanity."

§ four

my heart, and the happy reward, as I trust, of our mutual cares, labours and dangers.*

GO. WASHINGTON.

UNITED STATES,
19*th September*, } 1796.

* The paragraph beginning with the words, "May I without the charge of ostentation add," having been struck out, the following note is written on the margin of that which is inserted in its place in the text:—"Continuation of the paragraph preceding the last ending with the word 'rest.'"

III.

PROCEEDINGS OF CONGRESS IN CONSEQUENCE OF THE DEATH OF WASHINGTON.

SPEECH OF JOHN MARSHALL IN THE HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES, AND RESOLUTIONS ADOPTED BY THE HOUSE, DECEMBER 19TH, 1799.*

MR. SPEAKER,

The melancholy event, which was yesterday announced with doubt, has been rendered but too certain. Our Washington is no more! The hero, the patriot, and the sage of America; the man on whom in times of danger every eye was turned, and all hopes were placed, lives now only in his own great actions, and in the hearts of an affectionate and afflicted people.

If, Sir, it had even not been usual openly to testify respect for the memory of those whom Heaven has selected as its instruments for dispensing good to man, yet such has been the uncommon worth, and such the extraordinary incidents, which have marked the life of him whose loss we all deplore, that the whole American nation, impelled by the same feelings, would call with one voice for a public manifestation of that sorrow, which is so deep and so universal.

More than any other individual, and as much as to one individual was possible, has he contributed to found this our wide-spreading empire, and to give to the western world independence and freedom.

Having effected the great object for which he was placed at the

* The intelligence of the death of Washington had been received the preceding day, and the House immediately adjourned. The next morning Mr. Marshall addressed this speech to the House.

head of our armies, we have seen him convert the sword into the ploughshare, and sink the soldier in the citizen.

When the debility of our federal system had become manifest, and the bonds which connected this vast continent were dissolving, we have seen him the chief of those patriots who formed for us a constitution, which, by preserving the union, will, I trust, substantiate and perpetuate those blessings which our Revolution had promised to bestow.

In obedience to the general voice of his country, calling him to preside over a great people, we have seen him once more quit the retirement he loved, and, in a season more stormy and tempestuous than war itself, with calm and wise determination pursue the true interests of the nation, and contribute, more than any other could contribute, to the establishment of that system of policy, which will, I trust, yet preserve our peace, our honor, and our independence.

Having been twice unanimously chosen the chief magistrate of a free people, we have seen him, at a time when his re-election with universal suffrage could not be doubted, afford to the world a rare instance of moderation, by withdrawing from his station to the peaceful walks of private life.

However the public confidence may change, and the public affections fluctuate with respect to others, with respect to him they have, in war and in peace, in public and in private life, been as steady as his own firm mind, and as constant as his own exalted virtues.

Let us, then, Mr. Speaker, pay the last tribute of respect and affection to our departed friend. Let the grand council of the nation display those sentiments which the nation feels. For this purpose I hold in my hand some resolutions, which I take the liberty of offering to the house.

Resolved, That this house will wait on the President, in condolence of this mournful event.

Resolved, That the Speaker's chair be shrouded with black, and that the members and officers of the house wear black during the session.

Resolved, That a committee, in conjunction with one from the Senate, be appointed to consider on the most suitable manner of paying honor to the memory of the man, first in war, first in peace, and first in the hearts of his fellow-citizens.

LETTER FROM THE SENATE TO THE PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES.

23 December, 1799.

Sir,

The Senate of the United States respectfully take leave to express to you their deep regret for the loss their country sustains in the death of General George Washington.

This event, so distressing to all our fellow-citizens, must be peculiarly heavy to you, who have long been associated with him in deeds of patriotism. Permit us, Sir, to mingle our tears with yours. On this occasion it is manly to weep. To lose such a man, at such a crisis, is no common calamity to the world. Our country mourns a father. The Almighty Disposer of human events has taken from us our greatest benefactor and ornament. It becomes us to submit with reverence to him "who maketh darkness his pavilion."

With patriotic pride we review the life of our Washington, and compare him with those of other countries who have been pre-eminent in fame. Ancient and modern times are diminished before him. Greatness and guilt have too often been allied; but his fame is whiter than it is brilliant. The destroyers of nations stood abashed at the majesty of his virtues. It reproved the intemperance of their ambition, and darkened the splendor of victory. The scene is closed, and we are no longer anxious lest misfortune should sully his glory; he has travelled on to the end of his journey, and carried with him an increasing weight of honor; he has deposited it safely, where misfortune cannot tarnish it, where malice cannot blast it. Favored of Heaven, he departed without exhibiting the weakness of humanity. Magnanimous in death, the darkness of the grave could not obscure his brightness.

Such was the man whom we deplore. Thanks to God, his glory is consummated. Washington yet lives on earth in his spotless example; his spirit is in Heaven.

Let his countrymen consecrate the memory of the heroic general, the patriotic statesman, and the virtuous sage. Let them teach their children never to forget, that the fruits of his labors and his example are their inheritance.

THE PRESIDENT'S ANSWER.

23 December, 1799.

GENTLEMEN OF THE SENATE,

I receive with the most respectful and affectionate sentiments, in this impressive address, the obliging expressions of your regret for the loss our country has sustained in the death of her most esteemed, beloved, and admired citizen.

In the multitude of my thoughts and recollections on this melancholy event, you will permit me to say, that I have seen him in the days of adversity, in some of the scenes of his deepest distress and most trying perplexities. I have also attended him in his highest elevation and most prosperous felicity, with uniform admiration of his wisdom, moderation, and constancy.

Among all our original associates in that memorable league of this continent, in 1774, which first expressed the sovereign will of a free nation in America, he was the only one remaining in the general government. Although with a constitution more enfeebled than his, at an age when he thought it necessary to prepare for retirement, I feel myself alone, bereaved of my last brother, yet I derive a strong consolation from the unanimous disposition which appears in all ages and classes, to mingle their sorrows with mine, on this common calamity to the world.

The life of our Washington cannot suffer by a comparison with those of other countries who have been most celebrated and exalted by fame. The attributes and decorations of royalty could only have served to eclipse the majesty of those virtues which made him, from being a modest citizen, a more resplendent luminary. Misfortune, had he lived, could hereafter have sullied his glory only with those superficial minds, who, believing that character and actions are marked by success alone, rarely deserve to enjoy it. Malice could never blast his honor, and envy made him a singular exception to her universal rule. For himself, he had lived long enough to life and to glory; for his fellow-citizens, if their prayers could have been answered, he would have been immortal; for me, his departure is at a most unfortunate moment. Trusting, however, in the wise and righteous dominion of Providence over the passions of men and the results of their actions, as well as over their lives, nothing remains for me but humble resignation.

His example is now complete; and it will teach wisdom and virtue to magistrates, citizens, and men, not only in the present age, but in future generations, as long as our history shall be read. If a Trajan found a Pliny, a Marcus Aurelius can never want biographers, eulogists, or historians.

JOHN ADAMS.

JOINT RESOLUTIONS ADOPTED BY BOTH HOUSES OF CONGRESS.

December 23d. Resolved, by the Senate and House of Representatives of the United States of America, in Congress assembled, That a marble monument be erected by the United States at the Capitol of the city of Washington, and that the family of General Washington be requested to permit his body to be deposited under it, and that the monument be so designed as to commemorate the great events of his military and political life.

And be it further resolved, That there be a funeral procession from Congress Hall, to the German Lutheran Church, in memory of General George Washington, on Thursday the 26th instant, and that an oration be prepared at the request of Congress, to be delivered before both Houses that day; and that the President of the Senate, and Speaker of the House of Representatives, be desired to request one of the members of Congress to prepare and deliver the same.

And be it further resolved, That it be recommended to the people of the United States, to wear crape on their left arm, as mourning, for thirty days.

And be it further resolved, That the President of the United States be requested to direct a copy of these resolutions to be transmitted to Mrs. Washington, assuring her of the profound respect Congress will ever bear for her person and character, of their condolence on the late afflicting dispensation of Providence; and entreating her assent to the interment of the remains of General Washington in the manner expressed in the first resolution.

Resolved, That the President of the United States be requested to issue his proclamation, notifying to the people throughout the United States the recommendation contained in the third resolution.

December 30th. Resolved, That it be recommended to the people

of the United States to assemble, on the twenty-second day of February next, in such numbers and manner as may be convenient, publicly to testify their grief for the death of General George Washington, by suitable eulogies, orations, and discourses, or by public prayers.

And it is further resolved, That the President be requested to issue a proclamation, for the purpose of carrying the foregoing resolution into effect.

IV.

WASHINGTON'S WILL.

IN THE NAME OF GOD, AMEN.

I, GEORGE WASHINGTON, of Mount Vernon, a citizen of the United States, and lately President of the same, do make, ordain, and declare this instrument, which is written with my own hand, and every page thereof subscribed with my name,* to be my last WILL and TESTAMENT, revoking all others.

Imprimis.—All my debts, of which there are but few, and none of magnitude, are to be punctually and speedily paid, and the legacies, herein after bequeathed, are to be discharged as soon as circumstances will permit, and in the manner directed.

Item.—To my dearly beloved wife, *Martha Washington*, I give and bequeath the use, profit, and benefit of my whole estate real and personal, for the term of her natural life, except such parts thereof as are specially disposed of hereafter. My improved lot in the town of Alexandria, situated on Pitt and Cameron streets, I give to her and her heirs for ever; as I also do my household and kitchen furniture of every sort and kind, with the liquors and groceries which may be on hand at the time of my decease, to be used and disposed of as she may think proper.

Item.—Upon the decease of my wife, it is my will and desire that all the slaves whom I hold *in my own right* shall receive their freedom. To emancipate them during her life would, though earnestly wished by me, be attended with such insuperable difficulties, on account of

* In the original manuscript, GEORGE WASHINGTON's name was written at the bottom of every page.

their intermixture by marriage with the dower negroes, as to excite the most painful sensations, if not disagreeable consequences to the latter, while both descriptions are in the occupancy of the same proprietor; it not being in my power, under the tenure by which the dower negroes are held, to manumit them. And whereas, among those who will receive freedom according to this devise, there may be some, who, from old age, or bodily infirmities, and others, who, on account of their infancy, will be unable to support themselves, it is my will and desire, that all, who come under the first and second description, shall be comfortably clothed and fed by my heirs while they live; and that such of the latter description as have no parents living, or, if living, are unable or unwilling to provide for them, shall be bound by the court until they shall arrive at the age of twenty-five years; and, in cases where no record can be produced, whereby their ages can be ascertained, the judgment of the court, upon its own view of the subject, shall be adequate and final. The negroes thus bound, are (by their masters or mistresses) to be taught to read and write, and to be brought up to some useful occupation, agreeably to the laws of the Commonwealth of Virginia, providing for the support of orphan and other poor children. And I do hereby expressly forbid the sale or transportation out of the said Commonwealth, of any slave I may die possessed of, under any pretence whatsoever. And I do, moreover, most pointedly and most solemnly enjoin it upon my executors hereafter named, or the survivors of them, to see that this clause respecting slaves, and every part thereof, be religiously fulfilled at the epoch at which it is directed to take place, without evasion, neglect, or delay, after the crops which may then be on the ground are harvested, particularly as it respects the aged and infirm; seeing that a regular and permanent fund be established for their support, as long as there are subjects requiring it; not trusting to the uncertain provision to be made by individuals. And to my mulatto man, *William*, calling himself *William Lee*, I give immediate freedom, or, if he should prefer it, (on account of the accidents which have befallen him, and which have rendered him incapable of walking, or of any active employment,) to remain in the situation he now is, it shall be optional in him to do so; in either case, however, I allow him an annuity of thirty dollars, during his natural life, which shall be independent of the victuals and clothes he has been accustomed to receive, if he chooses the last alternative; but in full with his freedom, if he prefers the first; and this I

give him, as a testimony of my sense of his attachment to me, and for his faithful services during the revolutionary war.

Item.—To the trustees (governors, or by whatsoever other name they may be designated) of the Academy in the town of Alexandria, I give and bequeath, in trust, four thousand dollars, or in other words, twenty of the shares which I hold in the Bank of Alexandria, towards the support of a free school, established at and annexed to, the said Academy, for the purpose of educating such orphan children, or the children of such other poor and indigent persons, who are unable to accomplish it with their own means, and who, in the judgment of the trustees of the said seminary, are best entitled to the benefit of this donation. The aforesaid twenty shares I give and bequeath in perpetuity; the dividends only of which are to be drawn for and applied, by the said trustees for the time being, for the uses above mentioned; the stock to remain entire and untouched, unless indications of failure of the said bank should be so apparent, or a discontinuance thereof, should render a removal of this fund necessary. In either of these cases, the amount of the stock here devised is to be vested in some other bank or public institution, whereby the interest may with regularity and certainty be drawn and applied as above. And to prevent misconception, my meaning is, and is hereby declared to be, that these twenty shares are in lieu of, and not in addition to, the thousand pounds given by a missive letter some years ago, in consequence whereof an annuity of fifty pounds has since been paid towards the support of this institution.

Item.—Whereas by a law of the Commonwealth of Virginia, enacted in the year 1785, the Legislature thereof was pleased, as an evidence of its approbation of the services I had rendered the public during the Revolution, and partly, I believe, in consideration of my having suggested the vast advantages which the community would derive from the extension of its inland navigation under legislative patronage, to present me with one hundred shares, of one hundred dollars each, in the incorporated Company, established for the purpose of extending the navigation of James River from the tide water to the mountains; and also with fifty shares, of £100 sterling each, in the corporation of another company, likewise established for the similar purpose of opening the navigation of the River Potomac from the tide water to Fort Cumberland; the acceptance of which, although the offer was highly honorable and grateful to my feelings, was refused, as inconsistent with

a principle which I had adopted and had never departed from, viz., not to receive pecuniary compensation for any services I could render my country in its arduous struggle with Great Britain for its rights, and because I had evaded similar propositions from other States in the Union; adding to this refusal, however, an intimation, that, if it should be the pleasure of the legislature to permit me to appropriate the said shares to *public uses*, I would receive them on those terms with due sensibility; and this it having consented to, in flattering terms, as will appear by a subsequent law, and sundry resolutions, in the most ample and honorable manner;—I proceed after this recital, for the more correct understanding of the case, to declare; that, as it has always been a source of serious regret with me, to see the youth of these United States sent to foreign countries for the purpose of education, often before their minds were formed, or they had imbibed any adequate ideas of the happiness of their own; contracting too frequently, not only habits of dissipation and extravagance, but principles unfriendly to republican government, and to the true and genuine liberties of mankind, which thereafter are rarely overcome; for these reasons it has been my ardent wish to see a plan devised on a liberal scale, which would have a tendency to spread systematic ideas through all parts of this rising empire, thereby to do away local attachments and State prejudices, as far as the nature of things would, or indeed ought to admit, from our national councils. Looking anxiously forward to the accomplishment of so desirable an object as this is (in my estimation), my mind has not been able to contemplate any plan more likely to effect the measure, than the establishment of a UNIVERSITY in a central part of the United States, to which the youths of fortune and talents from all parts thereof may be sent for the completion of their education, in all the branches of polite literature, in arts and sciences, in acquiring knowledge in the principles of politics and good government, and, as a matter of infinite importance in my judgment, by associating with each other and forming friendships in juvenile years, be enabled to free themselves in a proper degree from those local prejudices and habitual jealousies which have just been mentioned, and which, when carried to excess, are never-failing sources of disquietude to the public mind, and pregnant of mischievous consequences to this country. Under these impressions, so fully dilated,

Item.—I give and bequeath, in perpetuity, the fifty shares which I hold in the Potomac company, (under the aforesaid acts of the Legis-

lature of Virginia,) towards the endowment of a University, to be established within the limits of the District of Columbia, under the auspices of the general government, if that government should incline to extend a fostering hand towards it; and, until such seminary is established, and the funds arising on these shares shall be required for its support, my further will and desire is, that the profit accruing therefrom shall, whenever the dividends are made, be laid out in purchasing stock in the bank of Columbia, or some other bank, at the discretion of my executors, or by the Treasurer of the United States for the time being under the direction of Congress, provided that honorable body should patronize the measure; and the dividends proceeding from the purchase of such stock are to be vested in more stock, and so on, until a sum adequate to the accomplishment of the object is obtained; of which I have not the smallest doubt, before many years pass away, even if no aid or encouragement is given by the legislative authority, or from any other source.

Item.—The hundred shares which I hold in the James River Company, I have given and now confirm in perpetuity, to and for the use and benefit of Liberty Hall Academy, in the County of Rockbridge in the Commonwealth of Virginia.

Item.—I release, exonerate, and discharge the estate of my deceased brother, *Samuel Washington*, from the payment of the money which is due to me for the land I sold to *Philip Pendleton*, (lying in the county of Berkeley,) who assigned the same to him, the said *Samuel*, who by agreement was to pay me therefor. And whereas, by some contract (the purport of which was never communicated to me) between the said *Samuel* and his son, *Thornton Washington*, the latter became possessed of the aforesaid land, without any conveyance having passed from me, either to the said *Pendleton*, the said *Samuel*, or the said *Thornton*, and without any consideration having been made, by which neglect neither the legal nor equitable title has been alienated; it rests therefore with me to declare my intentions concerning the premises; and these are, to give and bequeath the said land to whomsoever the said *Thornton Washington* (who is also dead) devised the same, or to his heirs for ever, if he died intestate; exonerating the estate of the said *Thornton*, equally with that of the said *Samuel*, from payment of the purchase money, which, with interest, agreeably to the original contract with the said *Pendleton*, would amount to more than a thousand pounds. And whereas two other sons of my

said deceased brother *Samuel*, namely, *George Steptoe Washington*, and *Lawrence Augustine Washington*, were, by the decease of those to whose care they were committed, brought under my protection, and, in consequence, have occasioned advances on my part for their education at college and other schools, for their board, clothing, and other incidental expenses, to the amount of near five thousand dollars, over and above the sums furnished by their estate, which sum it may be inconvenient for them or their father's estate to refund; I do for these reasons acquit them and the said estate from the payment thereof, my intention being, that all accounts between them and me, and their father's estate and me, shall stand balanced.

Item.—The balance due to me from the estate of *Bartholomew Dandridge*, deceased, (my wife's brother,) and which amounted on the first day of October, 1795, to four hundred and twenty-five pounds, (as will appear by an account rendered by his deceased son, *John Dandridge*, who was the acting executor of his father's will,) I release and acquit from the payment thereof. And the negroes, then thirty-three in number, formerly belonging to the said estate, who were taken in execution, sold, and purchased in on my account, in the year (*blank*), and ever since have remained in the possession and to the use of *Mary*, widow of the said *Bartholomew Dandridge*, with their increase, it is my will and desire shall continue and be in her possession, without paying hire, or making compensation for the same for the time past, or to come, during her natural life: at the expiration of which, I direct that all of them who are forty years old and upwards shall receive their freedom; and all under that age, and above sixteen, shall serve seven years and no longer; and all under sixteen years shall serve until they are twenty-five years of age, and then be free. And, to avoid disputes respecting the ages of any of these negroes, they are to be taken into the court of the county in which they reside, and the judgment thereof, in this relation, shall be final and record thereof made, which may be adduced as evidence at any time thereafter if disputes should arise concerning the same. And I further direct, that the heirs of the said *Bartholomew Dandridge* shall equally share the benefits arising from the services of the said negroes according to the tenor of this devise, upon the decease of their mother.

Item.—If *Charles Carter*, who intermarried with my niece *Betty Lewis*, is not sufficiently secured in the title to the lots he had of me in the town of Fredericksburg, it is my will and desire, that my execu-

tors shall make such conveyances of them as the law requires to render it perfect.

Item.—To my nephew, *William Augustine Washington*, and his heirs, (if he should conceive them to be objects worth prosecuting,) a lot in the town of Manchester, (opposite to Richmond,) No. 265, drawn on my sole account, and also the tenth of one or two hundred acre lots, and two or three half-acre lots, in the city and vicinity of Richmond, drawn in partnership with nine others, all in the lottery of the deceased *William Byrd*, are given; as is also a lot which I purchased of *John Hood*, conveyed by *William Willie* and *Samuel Gordon*, trustees of the said *John Hood*, numbered 139, in the town of Edinburgh, in the County of Prince George, State of Virginia.

Item.—To my nephew, *Bushrod Washington*,* I give and bequeath all the papers in my possession which relate to my civil and military administration of the affairs of this country. I leave to him also such of my private papers as are worth preserving; and at the decease of my wife, and before, if she is not inclined to retain them, I give and bequeath my library of books and pamphlets of every kind.

Item.—Having sold lands which I possessed in the State of Pennsylvania and part of a tract held in equal right with *George Clinton*, late governor of New York, in the State of New York, my share of land and interest in the Great Dismal Swamp, and a tract of land which I owned in the County of Gloucester,—withholding the legal titles thereto, until the consideration money should be paid—and having moreover leased and conditionally sold (as will appear by the tenor of the said leases) all my lands upon the Great Kenhawa, and a tract upon Difficult Run, in the County of Loudoun, it is my will and direction, that whensoever the contracts are fully and respectively complied with, according to the spirit, true intent, and meaning thereof, on the part of the purchasers, their heirs or assigns, that then, and in that case, conveyances are to be made, agreeably to the terms of the said contracts, and the money arising therefrom, when paid, to be vested in bank stock; the dividends whereof, as of that also which is already vested therein, are to inure to my said wife during her life; but the

* As General Washington never had any children, he gave the larger part of his property to his nephews and nieces, and the children of Mrs. Washington's son by her first marriage. The principal heir was Bushrod Washington, son of his brother, John Augustine Washington.

stock itself is to remain and be subject to the general distribution hereafter directed.

Item.—To the *Earl of Buchan* I recommit the "Box made of the Oak that sheltered the great Sir *William Wallace*, after the battle of Falkirk," presented to me by his Lordship, in terms too flattering for me to repeat, with a request "to pass it, on the event of my decease, to the man in my country, who should appear to merit it best, upon the same conditions that have induced him to send it to me." Whether easy or not to select the man, who might comport with his Lordship's opinion in this respect, is not for me to say; but, conceiving that no disposition of this valuable curiosity can be more eligible than the recommitment of it to his own cabinet, agreeably to the original design of the Goldsmiths' Company of Edinburgh, who presented it to him, and, at his request, consented that it should be transferred to me, I do give and bequeath the same to his Lordship; and, in case of his decease, to his heir, with my grateful thanks for the distinguished honor of presenting it to me, and more especially for the favorable sentiments with which he accompanied it.

Item.—To my brother, *Charles Washington*, I give and bequeath the gold-headed cane left me by Dr. *Franklin* in his will. I add nothing to it because of the ample provision I have made for his issue. To the acquaintances and friends of my juvenile years, *Lawrence Washington* and *Robert Washington*, of Chotanck, I give my other two gold-headed canes, having my arms engraved on them; and to each, as they will be useful where they live, I leave one of the spyglasses, which constituted part of my equipage during the late war. To my compatriot in arms and old and intimate friend, Dr. *Craik*, I give my bureau (or, as the cabinet-makers call it, tambour secretary) and the circular chair, an appendage of my study. To Dr. *David Stewart* I give my large shaving and dressing table, and my telescope. To the Reverend, now *Bryan, Lord Fairfax*, I give a Bible, in three large folio volumes, with notes, presented to me by the Right Reverend *Thomas Wilson*, Bishop of Sodor and Man. To General *de Lafayette* I give a pair of finely-wrought steel pistols, taken from the enemy in the revolutionary war. To my sisters-in-law, *Hannah Washington* and *Mildred Washington*, to my friends, *Eleanor Stuart*, *Hannah Washington*, of Fairfield, and *Elizabeth Washington*, of Hayfield, I give each a mourning ring, of the value of one hundred dollars. These bequests are not made for the intrinsic value of them, but as mementos

of my esteem and regard. To *Tobias Lear* I give the use of the farm, which he now holds in virtue of a lease from me to him and his deceased wife, (for and during their natural lives,) free from rent during his life, ; at the expiration of which, it is to be disposed of as is hereinafter directed. To *Sally B. Haynie*, (a distant relation of mine,) I give and bequeath three hundred dollars. To *Sarah Green*, daughter of the deceased *Thomas Bishop*, and to *Ann Walker*, daughter of *John Alton*, also deceased, I give each one hundred dollars, in consideration of the attachment of their fathers to me; each of whom having lived nearly forty years in my family. To each of my nephews, *William Augustine Washington*, *George Lewis*, *George Steptoe Washington*, *Bushrod Washington*, and *Samuel Washington*, I give one of the swords or couteaux, of which I may die possessed; and they are to choose in the order they are named. These swords are accompanied with an injunction not to unsheath them for the purpose of shedding blood, except it be for self-defence or in defence of their country and its rights; and in the latter case, to keep them unsheathed, and prefer falling with them in their hands to the relinquishment thereof.

And now, having gone through these specific devices, with explanations for the more correct understanding of the meaning and design of them, I proceed to the distribution of the more important part of my estate, in manner following;

First.—To my nephew, *Bushrod Washington*, and his heirs, (partly in consideration of an intimation to his deceased father, while we were bachelors, and he had kindly undertaken to superintend my estate during my military services in the former war between Great Britain and France, that, if I should fall therein, Mount Vernon, then less extensive in domain than at present, should become his property,) I give and bequeath all that part thereof, which is comprehended within the following limits, viz. Beginning at the ford of Dogue Run, near my Mill, and extending along the road, and bounded thereby, as it now goes, and ever has gone, since my recollection of it, to the ford of Little Hunting Creek, at the Gum Spring, until it comes to a knoll opposite to an old road, which formerly passed through the lower field of Muddy-Hole Farm; at which, on the north side of the said road, are three red or Spanish oaks, marked as a corner, and a stone placed; thence by a line of trees, to be marked rectangular, to the back line or outer boundary of the tract between *Thompson Mason* and myself; thence with that line easterly (now double ditching, with a post-and-

rail fence thereon) to the run of Little Hunting Creek; thence with that run, which is the boundary between the lands of the late *Humphrey Peake* and me, to the tide water of the said creek; thence by that water to Potomac River; thence with the river to the mouth of Dogue Creek; and thence with the said Dogue Creek to the place of beginning at the aforesaid ford; containing upwards of four thousand acres, be the same more or less, together with the mansion-house, and all other buildings and improvements thereon.

SECOND.—In consideration of the consanguinity between them and my wife, being as nearly related to her as to myself, as on account of the affection I had for, and the obligation I was under to, their father when living, who from his youth had attached himself to my person, and followed my fortunes through the vicissitudes of the late Revolution, afterwards devoting his time to the superintendence of my private concerns for many years, whilst my public employments rendered it impracticable for me to do it myself, thereby affording me essential services, and always performing them in a manner the most filial and respectful; for these reasons, I say, I give and bequeath to *George Fayette Washington* and *Lawrence Augustine Washington*, and their heirs, my estate east of Little Hunting Creek, lying on the River Potomac, including the farm of three hundred and sixty acres, leased to *Tobias Lear*, as noticed before, and containing in the whole, by deed, two thousand and twenty-seven acres, be it more or less; which said estate it is my will and desire should be equitably and advantageously divided between them, according to quantity, quality, and other circumstances, when the youngest shall have arrived at the age of twenty-one years, by three judicious and disinterested men; one to be chosen by each of the brothers, and the third by these two. In the mean time, if the termination of my wife's interest therein should have ceased, the profits arising therefrom are to be applied for their joint uses and benefit.

THIRD.—And whereas it has always been my intention, since my expectation of having issue has ceased, to consider the grandchildren of my wife in the same light as I do my own relations, and to act a friendly part by them; more especially by the two whom we have raised from their earliest infancy, namely, *Eleanor Parke Custis* and *George Washington Parke Custis;* and whereas the former of these hath lately intermarried with *Lawrence Lewis*, a son of my deceased sister, *Betty Lewis*, by which the inducement to provide for them both

has been increased; wherefore, I give and bequeath to the said *Lawrence Lewis*, and *Eleanor Parke Lewis*, his wife, and their heirs, the residue of my Mount Vernon estate, not already devised to my nephew, *Bushrod Washington*, comprehended within the following description, viz. All the land north of the road leading from the ford of Dogue Run to the Gum Spring as described in the devise of the other part of the tract to *Bushrod Washington*, until it comes to the stone and three red or Spanish oaks on the knoll; thence with the rectangular line to the back line (between Mr. *Mason* and me); thence with that line westerly along the new double ditch to Dogue Run, by the tumbling dam of my Mill; thence with the said run to the ford aforementioned. To which I add all the land I possess west of the said Dogue Run and Dogue Creek, bounded easterly and southerly thereby; together with the mill, distillery, and all other houses and improvements on the premises, making together about two thousand acres, be it more or less.

Fourth.—Actuated by the principle already mentioned, I give and bequeath to *George Washington Parke Custis*, the grandson of my wife, and my ward, and to his heirs, the tract I hold on Four Mile Run, in the vicinity of Alexandria, containing one thousand two hundred acres, more or less, and my entire square, No. 21, in the city of Washington.

Fifth.—All the rest and residue of my estate real and personal, not disposed of in manner aforesaid, in whatsoever consisting, wheresoever lying, and whensoever found, (a schedule of which, as far as is recollected, with a reasonable estimate of its value, is hereunto annexed,) I desire may be sold by my executors at such times, in such manner, and on such credits, (if an equal, valid, and satisfactory distribution of the specific property cannot be made without,) as in their judgment shall be most conducive to the interests of the parties concerned; and the moneys arising therefrom to be divided into twenty-three equal parts, and applied as follows, viz. To *William Augustine Washington*, *Elizabeth Spotswood*, *Jane Thornton*, and the heirs of *Ann Ashton*, sons and daughters of my deceased brother, *Augustine Washington*, I give and bequeath four parts; that is, one part to each of them. To *Fielding Lewis*, *George Lewis*, *Robert Lewis*, *Howell Lewis*, and *Betty Carter*, sons and daughters of my deceased sister, *Betty Lewis*, I give and bequeath five other parts; one to each of them. To *George Steptoe Washington*, *Lawrence Augustine Washington*,

Harriot Parks, and the heirs of *Thornton Washington*, sons and daughters of my deceased brother, *Samuel Washington*, I give and bequeath other four parts; one to each of them. To *Corbin Washington*, and the heirs of *Jane Washington*, son and daughter of my deceased brother, *John Augustine Washington*, I give and bequeath two parts; one to each of them. To *Samuel Washington*, *Frances Ball*, and *Mildred Hammond*, son and daughters of my brother *Charles Washington*, I give and bequeath three parts; one part to each of them. And to *George Fayette Washington*, *Charles Augustine Washington*, and *Maria Washington*, sons and daughter of my deceased nephew, *George Augustine Washington*, I give one other part; that is, to each a third of that part. To *Elizabeth Parke Law*, *Martha Parke Peter*, and *Eleanor Parke Lewis*, I give and bequeath three other parts; that is, a part to each of them. And to my nephews, *Bushrod Washington* and *Lawrence Lewis*, and to my ward, the grandson of my wife, I give and bequeath one other part; that is a third thereof to each of them. And, if it should so happen that any of the persons whose names are here enumerated (unknown to me) should now be dead, or should die before me, that in either of these cases, the heir of such deceased person shall, notwithstanding, derive all the benefits of the bequest in the same manner as if he or she was actually living at the time. And, by way of advice, I recommend it to my executors not to be precipitate in disposing of the landed property, (herein directed to be sold,) if from temporary causes the sale thereof should be dull; experience having fully evinced, that the price of land, especially above the falls of the river and on the western waters, has been progressively rising, and cannot be long checked in its increasing value. And I particularly recommend it to such of the legatees (under this clause of my will), as can make it convenient, to take each a share of my stock in the Potomac Company in preference to the amount of what it might sell for; being thoroughly convinced myself that no uses to which the money can be applied, will be so productive as the tolls arising from this navigation when in full operation, (and thus, from the nature of things, it must be, ere long,) and more especially if that of the Shenandoah is added thereto.

The family vault at Mount Vernon requiring repairs, and being improperly situated besides, I desire that a new one of brick, and upon a larger scale, may be built at the foot of what is commonly called the Vineyard Enclosure, on the ground which is marked out; in which

my remains, with those of my deceased relations (now in the old vault), and such others of my family as may choose to be entombed there, may be deposited. And it is my express desire, that my corpse may be interred in a private manner, without parade or funeral oration.

Lastly, I constitute and appoint my dearly beloved wife, *Martha Washington*, my nephews, *William Augustine Washington*, *Bushrod Washington*, *George Steptoe Washington*, *Samuel Washington*, and *Lawrence Lewis*, and my ward, *George Washington Parke Custis* (when he shall have arrived at the age of twenty-one years), executrix and executors of this my will and testament; in the construction of which it will be readily perceived, that no professional character has been consulted, or has had any agency in the draft; and that, although it has occupied many of my leisure hours to digest, and to throw it into its present form, it may, notwithstanding, appear crude and incorrect; but, having endeavored to be plain and explicit in all the devises, even at the expense of prolixity, perhaps of tautology, I hope and trust that no disputes will arise concerning them. But if, contrary to expectation, the case should be otherwise, from the want of legal expressions, or the usual technical terms, or because too much or too little has been said on any of the devises to be consonant with law, my will and direction expressly is, that all disputes (if unhappily any should arise) shall be decided by three impartial and intelligent men, known for their probity and good understanding, two to be chosen by the disputants, each having the choice of one, and the third by those two; which three men, thus chosen, shall, unfettered by law or legal constructions, declare their sense of the testator's intention; and such decision is, to all intents and purposes, to be as binding on the parties as if it had been given in the Supreme Court of the United States.

In witness of all and of each of the things herein contained, I have set my hand and seal, this ninth day of July, in the year one thousand seven hundred and ninety, and of the Independence of the United States the twenty-fourth.*

GEORGE WASHINGTON.

* It appears that the testator omitted the word "nine."

INDEX.

INDEX.

A.

ABERCROMBIE, General—
supersedes General Shirley, i. 209
commander-in-chief, i. 241
encamped at Lake George, i. 246
proceeds against Ticonderoga, i. 246
falls back, i. 248
attacks the French works, i. 248
repulsed by Montcalm, i 249
superseded by Major General Amherst, i. 265
ABERCROMBIE, Lieutenant Colonel, attacks American batteries, iv. 349
ACKLAND, Lady Harriet—
with Burgoyne's army, iii. 206
during the action, iii. 215
her distress, iii. 241
seeks her husband, iii. 244
kind treatment of, iii. 245
subsequent history, iii. 257
ACKLAND, Major—
commands the Grenadiers, iii. 237
wounded and taken prisoner, iii. 237
subsequent history (note), iii. 257
ADAMS, John—
birth of American Independence, i. 302
at town meetings, i. 361
on the General Congress, i. 364
opposes petition to the king, i. 408
on the choice of commander-in-chief, i. 410
proposes Washington as commander-in-chief, i. 412
on the conduct of Washington, i. 413
opposes Lee, and urges Ward as second in command, i. 414
opposed to Lee and Gates, i. 415
on the act of Massachusetts General Court, ii. 73
to General Thomas on Schuyler's unpopularity, ii. 98
picture of festivities at head-quarters, ii. 115
on the defence of New York, ii. 136
member of the Board of War and Ordnance, ii. 209
on the Declaration of Independence, ii. 241
its great importance, ii. 242
concerning sectional jealousies, ii. 271
on committee to confer with Lord Howe, ii. 325
at Washington's inauguration, iv. 473
on presidential etiquette, v. 9
distrusts the French Revolution, v. 90
on the office of Vice President, v. 90
his "Discourses on Davila," v. 99
on the British Constitution, v. 109
concerning Washington's judgment of Genet, v. 180
to his wife on affairs, v. 185
elected President, v. 252
inaugural address, v. 254
convenes Congress, v. 266
address concerning French indignities, v. 236
to Washington, asking advice, v. 272
on the appointment of Washington commander-in-chief, v. 273
nominates minister to France, v. 286
ADAMS, Mrs.—
to her husband on the appearance of Washington, i. 453
description of General Lee, ii. 2
account of party at General Mifflin's, ii. 115
to her husband on the cannonade, ii. 172
ADAMS, Samuel—
as moderator, i. 361
proposes Mr. Duché as chaplain, i. 365
to his wife about Mr. Duché, i. 365
apprised of the movement of troops, i. 391
irresolute as to command-in-chief, i. 411
excepted from proffered pardon, i. 419
on the united command of Schuyler and Gates, ii. 264
meets Washington at Cambridge, v. 40
ADAMS, Sir Thomas, i. 293
ADET, Mr.—
minister from France, v. 214
presents the colors of France, v. 235
complaints against the government of the United States, v. 250
AGNEW, Brigadier General—
in the expedition against Danbury, iii. 47
killed at Germantown, iii. 265
Albany, panic at St. Clair's retreat, iii. 110
ALLEN, the fighting parson, iii. 165

Allen, Ethan—
at the head of the Green Mountain Boys, i. 408
volunteers in the public cause, i. 408
described, i. 408
commands expedition to Ticonderoga, i. 404
proceeds to Shoreham, i. 404
arrives at Shoreham, i. 405
addresses his men, i. 405
surprises Ticonderoga, i. 405
expedition against St. Johns, i. 407
returns to Ticonderoga, i. 407
dealing with Arnold, ii. 33
to New York Congress, ii. 34
to Trumbull, ii. 35
designs on Canada, ii. 40
repairs to Congress, ii. 56
repairs to New York convention, ii. 58
to Trumbull on the invasion of Canada, ii. 70
supersedes Seth Warner, ii. 42
joins as a volunteer, ii. 42
to Trumbull, ii. 45
sent to reconnoitre, ii. 54
report to Schuyler, ii. 55
surrenders, ii. 56
to Montgomery on Canadian volunteers, ii. 73
meets Major Brown, ii. 90
decides to attack Montreal, ii. 90
taken prisoner, ii. 97
reception by General Prescott, ii. 97
sent to England, ii. 97
to Geneva Prescott, ii. 98
memory of, ii. 98
treatment by the British, ii. 206
exchanged for Colonel Campbell, iii. 277
visits Valley Forge, iii. 277
leaves for home, iii. 278
Allen, Levi—
at Washington on the treatment of Ethan Allen, ii. 206
protest to effect his release, ii. 206
Allen, William, ii. 266
Allen, John, Washington's servant, taken ill, i. 173
Ambuscade, engagement with the British, v. 177
Amboy, disaffection of people, ii. 240
American Colonies—
affection for the mother country, i. 200
resolve not to purchase British fabrics, i. 208
American Army—
besieging Boston, its nature, i. 420
disposition of its forces, i. 421
distribution of before Boston, ii. 3
condition and discipline, ii. 3
spirit of insubordination, ii. 4
camp described, ii. 4
strict discipline, ii. 58
scarcity of powder, ii. 98
critical condition, ii. 84
difficulty of filling up, ii. 109
greatly weakened, ii. 129
lack of equipments, ii. 129
strength in and about New York, ii. 236
retreat from before Quebec, ii. 200
British description of, ii. 367
at New Brunswick, ii. 424
contrasted with the British, iii. 10
marches through Philadelphia, iii. 158
described by a Hessian, iii. 272
approach of winter, iii. 305
destitution of, iv. 33
pass through Philadelphia, iv. 316
discontent of, iv. 333
memorial to Congress, iv. 377
anonymous address, iv. 378
other anonymous papers, iv. 380
meeting of officers, iv. 381
addressed by Washington, iv. 381
resolutions of meeting, iv. 384
its breaking up described, iv. 404
contrasted with the British, iv. 406
American Militia—
fly before the British, ii. 233
cowardice of, ii. 269
signalize themselves, iii. 3
gallant exploits, iii. 7
American Prisoners, treatment of, iii. 20, 22
American seamen, impressment of, v. 177
Ames, Fisher—
on the first Congress, v. 37
debate on Jefferson's report, v. 251
on Washington's farewell address v. 346
Amherst, a British spy, iii. 27
Amherst, Major General—
to reduce Louisburg, i. 341
embarks, i. 343
arrives at the bay of Gabarus, i. 344
landing of troops, i. 344
takes Louisburg, i. 345
supersedes General Abercrombie, i. 265
to advance against Ticonderoga and Crown Point, i. 365
embarks for Ticonderoga, i. 367
repairs the works at Ticonderoga and Crown Point, i. 368
consequences of his delay, i. 368
further delay, i. 378
again in the field, i. 380
arrives at Montreal, i. 380
Amherst, Captain, despatched to England with news of the capture of Louisburg, i. 345
Andrews, Ephraim—
plan for destroying British ships, ii. 279
entertained by Congress, ii. 280
to the President of Congress on his progress, ii. 281
André, Major—
and the Mischianza, iii. 273
aide-de-camp to Sir Henry Clinton, iii. 400
correspondence with Arnold, iv. 97
sketch of his life, iv. 99
unequal interview with Arnold, iv. 102
goes on board the Vulture, iv. 104
interview with Arnold, iv. 105
remains ashore all night, iv. 106
anxiety to escape, iv. 107
crosses to Verplanck's Point, iv. 108
stopped by patrolling party, iv. 108
approaches the Neutral Ground, iv. 109

parts with Smith, iv. 200
stopped by Paulding, iv. 199
arrested and searched, iv. 202
taken to North Castle, iv. 203
sent to Arnold, iv. 204
brought back, iv. 214
taken to Lower Salem, iv. 215
to Washington, iv. 216
amuses himself by sketching, iv. 216
propensity for caricature (note), iv. 216
taken to the Robinson House, iv. 220
sent to West Point, iv. 220
conversation with Major Talmadge, iv. 220
his fate predicted, iv. 240
arrives at Tappan, iv. 248
frank confession, iv. 248
confinement as a spy, iv. 248
concerning the Beverly Claypoles, iv. 249
quarters of, iv. 247
execution postponed, iv. 249
affecting appeal to Washington, iv. 241
nature of his mission, iv. 42
British view of his case (note), iv. 244
his execution, iv. 247
burial, iv. 248
transferred to Westminster Abbey, iv. 248
sympathy in behalf of, iv. 248
Andre, Colonel, in the fight at Springfield, iv. 80
Antagonists before the revolution (note), i. 204
Anspachers arrive at New York, iii. 71
Arbuthnot, Admiral—
arrival with troops, ii. 478
convoys expedition to South Carolina, ii. 480
enters Charleston harbor, iv. 40
passes Fort Moultrie, iv. 45
squadron scattered by a storm, iv. 50
encounters the French fleet, iv. 264
Armstrong, Colonel John, commands expedition against Kittanning, i. 337
Armstrong, Major General—
to check the British, ii. 180
at Brandywine, ii. 197
on Washington (note), ii. 180
posted at the Schuylkill, iii. 198
author of anonymous papers, iv. 257
Armstrong, Captain—
commands at Verplanck's Point, iv. 420
pursues Colonel Coates, iv. 300
fights at Quimby Creek, iv. 302
decoyed into an ambush, v. 24
Armstrong, Major, attaches to Mercer, ii. 484
Arnold, Benedict—
arrives at Castleton, i. 404
proposes the surprisal of Ticonderoga and Crown Point, i. 404
aspires to the command, i. 404
serves as volunteer, i. 405
desires to command Ticonderoga, i. 406
is disappointed and protests, i. 406
commands armed schooner, i. 407
surprises St. John's, i. 407
rivalry with Ethan Allen, ii. 38
account of Allen, ii. 39
difficulties with Colonel Hinman, ii. 47
and the committee of inquiry, ii. 48
indignation, ii. 50
sets off for Cambridge, ii. 51
commands the expedition as lieutenant-colonel, ii. 52
sets out for Canada, ii. 57
to Washington, on the expedition, ii. 59
to Washington, on his progress, ii. 64
toils of the expedition, ii. 65
obstacles to the expedition, ii. 71
perseverance, ii. 73
embarks on the Chaudiere, ii. 80
arrives at Point Levi, ii. 80
suffers starvation, ii. 80
at Point Levi, ii. 100
arrives at Wolfe's Cove, ii. 103
lieutenant by a vote from the Lancaster, ii. 103
on the Heights of Abraham, ii. 120
advances before him, ii. 121
leads a council of war, ii. 122
commands a retreat, ii. 122
retires to Point aux Trembles, ii. 122
joined by Montgomery, ii. 122
leads his division against St. Roque, ii. 126
wounded, ii. 129
retreats back to camp, ii. 130
intermittents and resolutions, ii. 130
exhibits results, ii. 130
promoted to brigadier-general, ii. 137
keeps in the barracks, ii. 137
difficulties, ii. 138
accounts, ii. 138
retires over the isthmus, ii. 139
at Montreal, ii. 139
affair at the Cedars, ii. 141
retreats at Isle aux Noix, ii. 142
expenses of prisoners, ii. 142
to Commissioners of Congress, ii. 142
joins Schuyler, ii. 143
commands flotilla at Ticonderoga, ii. 143
at Valcour Island, ii. 147
his fleet, ii. 147
engages the British, ii. 151
escapes the enemy, ii. 153
commands three vessels, ii. 153
burns his vessels, ii. 153
arrives at Crown Point, ii. 154
passed over by Congress, ii. 155
to Washington on his non-promotion, ii. 155
resigns, ii. 155
hastens to Danbury, ii. 157
takes post at Ridgefield, ii. 159
throws up a breastwork, ii. 159
narrow escape, ii. 160
pursues the enemy hard, ii. 161
made major-general, ii. 161
presented with a horse by Congress, ii. 173
declines the command of the Hudson, ii. 177
becomes rich, ii. 178
commands Philadelphia, ii. 178

volunteers to relieve Fort Schuyler, iii. 160
encourages Gansevoort, iii. 171
reinforced, iii. 172
to Gates, determination, iii. 172
success of his stratagem, iii. 178
selects a camping ground, iii. 209
skirmishes with the enemy, iii. 212
impetuous attack, iii. 214
quarrel with Gates, iii. 217
indignant letter to Gates, iii. 219
tries to goad Gates on, iii. 284
rushes to the fight, iii. 288
desperate valor, iii. 288
storms Burgoyne's camp, iii. 289
wounded, iii. 289
to take command of Philadelphia, iii. 388
unsettled accounts, iv. 10
command of Philadelphia, iv. 10
issues proclamation, iv. 11
style of living, iv. 12
disputes, iv. 12
attachment to Miss Shippen, iv. 12
projects a settlement in New York, iv. 13
charges against, iv. 14
sets out for Albany, iv. 14
address to the public, iv. 14
appeal to Congress, iv. 15
exculpated by Congress, iv. 16
resigns his command, iv. 16
dissatisfaction with Congress, iv. 16
to Washington on the court-martial, iv. 16
marries Miss Shippen, iv. 17
application for a guard, iv. 17
tried by court-martial, iv. 18
sentenced to be reprimanded, iv. 19
reprimanded by Washington, iv. 20
projects an expedition, iv. 21
and the French minister, iv. 86
applies to rejoin the army, iv. 87
seeks the command of West Point, iv. 74
appointed to the command of West Point, iv. 76
treason of iv. 96
correspondence with Sir Henry Clinton, iv. 97
desperate state of affairs, iv. 97
takes command of West Point, iv. 98
head-quarters at Robinson House, iv. 98
carries on secret correspondence with André, iv. 98
scheme of treachery, iv. 99
attempted interview with André, iv. 103
accompanies Washington, iv. 103
message to Colonel Robinson, iv. 104
interview with André, iv. 105
the bargain completed, iv. 106
returns to head-quarters, iv. 107
arrival of Washington, iv. 120
hears of André's capture, iv. 120
flight, iv. 121
escapes to the Vulture, iv. 123
gives up his crew as prisoners of war, iv. 123
to Washington concerning his wife, iv. 124
certificate in behalf of André, iv. 134
to Washington, threatening retaliation for André, iv. 139
rewarded by the British, iv. 147
address to the inhabitants of America, iv. 147
proclamation to the American army, iv. 147
letter from his mother (note), iv. 151
subsequent fortunes, iv. 151
commands British detachment, iv. 192
arrives in the Chesapeake, iv. 205
buccaneering ravages, iv. 206
takes post at Portsmouth, iv. 207
returns to New York, iv. 287
commands expedition against New London, iv. 312
attacks New London, iv. 313
ravages the town, iv. 314
Arnold, Mrs., hears of Arnold's ruin, iv. 121
interview with Washington, iv. 127
ordered to leave the State, iv. 130
her fortunes, iv. 130
Asgill, Captain Charles, iv. 365
Asgill, Lady, to the Count de Vergennes, iv. 366
Assistance, Writs of, i. 301
Atlee, Colonel, retires before General Grant, ii. 301
forms an ambush and falls back on Lord Stirling, ii. 301
taken prisoner, ii. 305
Augusta ship of war burned, iii. 274

B.

Babcock, Colonel, to Governor Cooke, on the agitations in New York, ii. 332
operations of the enemy, ii. 338
Bache's Aurora, v. 239
Baird, Sir James, iii. 443
Baker, Remember, Ethan Allen's lieutenant, i. 403
Balcarras, Lord, commands light infantry, iii. 237
defends the intrenchments, iii. 239
Ball, Lieutenant Colonel, takes hostile message to Gates, iii. 84
Barbour, Major, carries message to Baron de Viomenil, iv. 347
Bard, Dr. Sam'l, attends Washington, v. 20
Barras, Count de, arrives at Boston, iv. 275
address to Mr. Monroe, v. 265
Barren Hill, Lafayette stationed on, iii. 375
Barton, Colonel, captures General Prescott, iii. 113
voted a sword and promoted, iii. 113
Bastille, key of, v. 71
Batt's Hill, occupied by General Sullivan, iii. 426
action at, iii. 426
Baum, Lieutenant, commands expedition against Bennington, iii. 161
sets out from camp, iii. 163
slow march, iii. 163
intrenches himself, iii. 165
defeated, iii. 167
Baylor, Lieutenant Colonel, at Old Tappan, iii. 437
surprised by Major General Grey, iii. 437
Baxter, Colonel, at Fort Washington, ii. 395
killed, ii. 397

Beall, General, to secure Pine's Bridge, ii. 372
Beaugen, Capt. de, i. 188
Bedel, Colonel, in command at the Cedars, ii. 212
menaced by Captain Forster, ii. 212
repairs to Montreal for reinforcements, ii. 212
Bedford Pass neglected, ii. 309
Beefsteak (The) and Tripe Club, i. 61
Bellareni, M., and the American envoys, v. 270
Belt of Wampum, i. 73
Bemis's Heights fortified, iii. 209
situation of, iii. 241
Bennington, expedition against, iii. 149
situation of, iii. 161
people on the alert, iii. 165
battle of, iii. 165
second battle, iii. 168
spoils of victory, iii. 168
Benson, Egbert, commissioner to New York, iv. 392
Berkshire Committees acquit Schuyler, ii. 235
Bernard, Gov. Sir Francis, calls upon the General Court to rescind their resolution, i. 314
Berthier, Marshal, iv. 251
Beville, General de, reconnoitres, iv. 252
Bienville, Celeron de, despatched with 300 men to the Ohio, i. 47
orders the English traders to depart, i. 48
Biggin's Bridge secured by the British, iv. 48
Bird, Colonel, commands attack on Peekskill, iii. 29
retreat, iii. 30
Bishop, Washington's servant, i. 252
Black (The) Hunter, i. 149
Black rifle, i. 149
Black Stock Hill, fight at, iv. 182
Blair, John, acting governor, i. 241
judge of Supreme Court, v. 26
Bland, Colonel, at Brandywine, iii. 189
Bland, Richard, delegate to the General Congress, i. 379
Blockade of Boston, a play, ii. 165
Board of War modified, iii. 301
Bolden (The) Book, i. 4
Bompard, Captain, at New York, v. 171
Bonaparte on the death of Washington, v. 299
Bonner, Lieutenant Colonel, slain at Monmouth Court-house, iii. 401
Bordentown, public storehouses burned, iii. 364
Boscawen, Admiral, sails for Louisburg, i. 245
receives a vote of praise by Parliament, i. 246
Boskirk, Lieutenant Colonel, surprises Elizabethtown, iv. 6
Boston resists payment of duties, i. 301
demand for British goods diminished, i. 303
riot against stamp act, i. 309
proceedings in regard to stamp act, i. 310
militia demonstrations, i. 315
convention held at, 315
arrival of British forces, i. 315
town meeting against the right of the king to send troops, i. 315
refuses to quarter the troops, i. 315
massacre, i. 325
arrival of tea, i. 347
destruction of tea, i. 347
passage of the Boston Port Bill, i. 347
rumored cannonading of, i. 355
like a place besieged, i. 355
general league recommended at town meeting, i. 371
Port Bill carried into effect, i. 351
excitement in, i. 355
condition of, i. 361
town meetings, i. 364
besieged, i. 418
arrival of British troops, i. 418
feeling against the British in, ii. 6
in a state of siege, ii. 92
question of bombardment, ii. 75
preparations in the harbor, ii. 103
destitution and sickness, ii. 105
opening of bombardment, ii. 109
British prepare to evacuate, ii. 170
hurried preparations, ii. 180
evacuation, ii. 181
occupied by the Americans, ii. 183
after the siege, ii. 184
people of, project expedition against Penobscot, ii. 471
Boston frigate engagement with the Ambuscade, v. 171
Boston massacre, i. 325
Boston Port Bill, i. 347
Boston tea party, i. 347
Botetourt, Lord, Governor of Virginia, i. 321
his manners, i. 321
his promptness, i. 321
his style and equipage, i. 322
opening of the session, i. 322
dissolves the House of Burgesses, i. 323
conciliatory conduct, i. 324
his death, i. 330
Bottle Hill, Americans encamped at, ii. 5
alarm post, ii. 445
Boudinot, Elias, to Pres. Wharton, iii. 304
Bougainville, De, detached to watch Wolfe's movements, i. 273
arrives too late, i. 277
retires, i. 277
Bouquet, Colonel, stationed at Raystown, i. 271
attacks an officer and men to Indian scouting parties, i. 255
halt at Loyal Hannan, i. 259
sends out a reconnoitring party, i. 259
Bourlamaque dismantles Ticonderoga and Crown Point, i. 268
makes a stand at the Isle aux Noix, i. 268
Braam, Van, (See Van Braam.)
Braddock, Major General Edward, appointed generalissimo of the colonial forces, i. 138
his character, i. 138
anecdotes of, i. 138

lands at Hampton, i. 140
proceeds to Alexandria, i. 142
invites Washington to join his staff, i. 143
holds a council, i. 145
sets out from Alexandria, i. 151
commencement of troubles, i. 151
interview with Franklin, i. 153
sets off for Will's Creek, i. 153
arrives at Fort Cumberland, i. 154
his discipline, i. 156
treatment of Indians, i. 158
to Governor Morris, i. 159
his impatience and obstinacy, i. 160
arrival of conveyances, i. 162
[*See end of the Index.*]
BRADFORD, Wm., attorney general, v. 183
death of, v. 229
BRADSTREET, Lieutenant Colonel, secures a Seminole, i. 249
expedition against Fort Frontenac, i. 249
captures the fort, i. 250
Brandywine (battle of the) cannonading commenced, iii. 188
conflicting reports, iii. 189
desperate conflict, iii. 193
description of the retreat, iii. 193
Brandywine Creek, iii. 186
BRANNAN, Colonel, joins Marion, iv. 182
BRANT, Mohawk Sachem, i. 448
at Niagara, iii. 432
depredations of, iv. 157
Breed's Hill, i. 425
to be fortified, i. 425
fortified, i. 426
under the enemy's fire, i. 430
Breton Club, v. 34
BREYMAN, Colonel, to the relief of Baum, iii. 165
arrives, and renews the battle, iii. 167
mortally wounded, iii. 240
BRIDPORT, Lord, death of Washington, v. 299
Bright Lightning, i. 159
British ministry, efforts to suppress smuggling, i. 302
manufactures, resolutions not to import, i. 303
officers, their scornful spirit, i. 421
troops at Boston, ii. 4
attack the court, ii. 67
plan of operations, ii. 132
officers and their amusements, ii. 166
move against Dorchester Heights, ii. 177
postponed by a storm, ii. 177
retire, ii. 177
preparations for retreat from Boston, ii. 180
embarkation from Boston, ii. 181
designs against New York, ii. 228
plans for the attack on Long Island, ii. 299
crossing from Long Island, ii. 332
land at New York, ii. 333
repulse Americans, ii. 333
land at Throg's Neck, ii. 356
ships move up to Bourdett's Ferry, ii. 366
cross the Hudson above Fort Lee, ii. 403
view of affairs, ii. 420
picket surprised, ii. 471
army contrasted with American, iii. 10
evacuate the Jerseys, iii. 80
invasion from Canada, iii. 86
fleet leaves New York, iii. 119
enters the Delaware, iii. 121
sails out of the Capes, iii. 121
enter the Chesapeake, iii. 135
BRODHEAD, Col., expedition against the Indians, iii. 457
BROMFIELD, Major, attack on Fort Griswold, iv. 314
BROOKE, Judge, on Washington's hilarity, iv. 439
BROOKE, General, meets Washington at Cambridge, v. 40
Brooklyn, defences of, ii. 292
BROOKS, Lieutenant General, attacks Burgoyne's camp, iii. 239
joins Prescott, i. 424
BROWN, Dr., attends Washington, v. 294
BROWN, Lieutenant, brings flag of truce, ii. 252
recognition of Washington's rank, ii. 252
BROWN, Major John, despatched into Canada, ii. 41
sent to reconnoitre, ii. 54
projects with Allen an attack on Montreal, ii. 60
and Major Livingston take Fort Chamblee, ii. 83
drives Colonel Maclean back, ii. 87
successful feint, ii. 146
BROWN, Colonel, surprises Ticonderoga, iii. 216
threatens Diamond Island, iii. 218
BROWN, Lieutenant Colonel, commands expedition to Augusta, iv. 51
BRUDENELL, Mr., accompanies Lady Ackland, iii. 244
Brunswick troops hired by England, ii. 196
BUFORD, Colonel, pursued by Tarleton, iv. 51
rejects Tarleton's proposals, iv. 53
defeated by Tarleton, iv. 53
Bunker's Hill to be fortified, i. 423
position of, i. 425
works thrown up, i. 432
advance of General Pigot, i. 433
effect of the American fire, i. 434
advance of General Howe, i. 434
British checked, i. 434
second attack, i. 435
British again retreat, i. 436
spectators, i. 435
third attack, i. 436
Americans driven from the breastwork on the left, i. 437
British advance with the bayonet, i. 437
American ammunition exhausted, i. 437
desperate struggle, i. 437
American retreat, i. 438
Stark, Reed, and Knowlton maintain their ground, i. 438
Putnam endeavors to rally the troops, i. 438
British take possession, i. 438
résumé, i. 439
relative merits of the American officers, i. 440

occupied by the British, ii. 5
Burgesses, (Va) House of, convened, i. 92
vote thanks to Washington and his officers, i. 124
grant £20,000 for the public service, i. 131
meeting called, i. 351
Bullitt, Captain, brave conduct, i. 260
promoted to Major, i. 261
Burgoyne, General, arrives at Boston, i. 418
surprise, i. 418
cannonading at Bunker's Hill, i. 435
described, ii. 3
history of, ii. 4
accused by Junius, ii. 4
"The Maid of the Oaks," ii. 4
Walpole's witticism, ii. 4
"The Heiress" praised by Walpole, ii. 4
correspondence with Lee, ii. 25
proposes an interview with Lee, ii. 25
in Canada, ii. 224
pursues Sullivan, ii. 226
reported arrival at Quebec, iii. 77
plan of campaign, iii. 86
leaves St. Johns, iii. 87
on Lake Champlain, iii. 89
arrives at Crown Point, iii. 91
advancing, iii. 93
issues proclamation, iii. 94
fortifies Mount Hope, iii. 101
pursues the flotilla, iii. 105
moves towards the Hudson, iii. 140
reaches Fort Anne, iii. 141
feeling towards the Indians, iii. 142
murder of Miss McCrea, iii. 143
at Fort Edward, iii. 145
difficulties at, iii. 148
opposite Saratoga, iii. 163
hears of Baum's surrender, iii. 168
correspondence with Gates, iii. 176
dubious position, iii. 205
to Lord Germain on his prospects, iii. 206
silent preparations, iii. 209
moves across the Hudson, iii. 210
march of his army, iii. 210
encamps near Gates, iii. 212
plan of battle, iii. 212
attacked by Arnold, iii. 214
on the situation of the ladies, iii. 215
critical situation, iii. 216
news from Clinton, iii. 217
sends word to Clinton, iii. 217
harassed by the Americans, iii. 219
within intrenchments, iii. 234
movement against Gates, iii. 235
prepares for battle, iii. 237
retreats to his camp, iii. 239
shifts his position, iii. 241
determines on retreat, iii. 242
at the burial of General Fraser, iii. 243
dismal retreat, iii. 243
concerning Lady Ackland, iii. 244
reaches Saratoga, iii. 245
destruction of Schuyler's property, iii. 246
calls a council of war, iii. 247
fortifies his camp, iii. 247
capitulates, iii. 250
terms of capitulation, iii. 250
number of troops, iii. 251
meeting with Gates, iii. 252
kind reception by Schuyler, iii. 256
question of embarkation, iii. 352
Burke, Judge, denounces the Cincinnati, iv. 419
Burke, Edmund, on the employment of men-of-war as custom-house officers, i. 302
on the state of affairs in America, iii. 1
Burr, Aaron, a volunteer, ii. 53
Montgomery's aide-de-camp, ii. 144
on the designs of the British, ii. 186
on a reconnoitring expedition, iii. 402
Burton, Lieutenant Colonel, ordered to advance, i. 176
the detachments fall back upon him in confusion, i. 176
Bush, Crean, i. 179
Bushnell's submarine battery, ii. 347
Buskirk, Major, iii. 475
Butler, Colonel, accompanies Wayne, iv. 197
Butler, General, reinforces Greene, iv. 243
at Guilford Court House, iv. 245
Butler, Major General, with General St. Clair, v. 97
killed, v. 99
Butler, Lieutenant Colonel, to intercept Colonel Simcoe, iv. 290
Butler, Colonel, at Oriskany, iii. 153
Butler, Colonel John, commands expedition against Wyoming, iii. 433
at Wintermoot's Fort, iii. 433
battle of Wyoming, iii. 434
Butler, Colonel Richard, surprises a party of Hessians, iii. 440
Butler, Colonel Zebulon, in command of Forty Fort, iii. 433
battle of Wyoming, iii. 434
Butlers of Tryon County, i. 448
Butterfield, Major, surrenders the Cedars, ii. 212
Bryant, Lieutenant, at Throg's Neck, ii. 357
Byrd, Colonel, i. 243
Byrd, Mr., visits the garrison, ii. 274
Byron, Admiral, arrives at New York, iii. 441
tries to entrap D'Estaing, iii. 441

C.

Cadwalader, Colonel John, commands detachment of volunteers, ii. 440
stationed at Bristol, ii. 440
prevented by the ice, ii. 456
dilemma, ii. 464
marches to Burlington, ii. 464
to Washington advising pursuit, ii. 465
sends in pursuit of Donop, ii. 467
at Crosswicks, ii. 471
Cadwalader, Lambert, ii. 266
at Fort Washington, ii. 361
posted in the outer lines, ii. 395
forced to retreat, ii. 397
Caldwell, Reverend James, the "rousing gospel preacher," iv. 6
his church burnt, iv. 7

his return home, iv. 60
in the fight at Springfield, iv. 63
CALDWELL, Mrs., killed by the British, iv. 59
popular excitement, iv. 61
CALLBECK, Mr., taken prisoner, ii. 103
to Washington, ii. 103
CALVERT, Benedict, i. 342
Cambridge, assembling of patriots, i. 375
Camden, battle of, iv. 87
flight of American militia, iv. 88
burnt by the British, iv. 297
CAMPBELL, Colonel William, pursues Major Ferguson, iv. 174
in the battle of King's Mountain, iv. 175
at Guilford Court House, iv. 245
at Eutaw Springs, iv. 335
charges the British, iv. 337
his death, iv. 339
CAMPBELL, Colonel, orders a retreat, ii. 148
CAMPBELL, Lieutenant Colonel, to attack Fort Montgomery, iii. 225
checked by the Americans iii. 227
killed, iii. 229
thrown into jail, iii. 17
appeals to Washington, iii. 17
exchanged for Ethan Allen, iii. 377
to surprise New Tappan, iii. 457
sails for Georgia, iii. 442
lands his troops, iii. 443
defeats the Americans, iii. 443
takes Savannah, iii. 443
moderate conduct, iii. 443
detached against Augusta, iii. 444
CAMPBELL, Lord, wounded at Sullivan's Island, ii. 276
CAMPBELL, Major, takes Ethan Allen prisoner, ii. 61
CAMPBELL, Major, killed, iv. 346
Canada, campaign against, i. 229
project of invasion, ii. 38
defences and disposition, ii. 43
force of the enemy in, ii. 224
expedition against projected, iii. 322
found impracticable, iii. 334
suspended by Congress, iii. 336
Lafayette's scheme against, iii. 446
Washington's opposition to, iii. 447
abandoned, iii. 448
Cape Breton to be reduced, i. 241
CARAMIE, Lieutenant Governor, apprised of Arnold's designs, ii. 118
CARLETON, Colonel Guy, commands the grenadiers, i. 268
commands the battery at the Isle of Orleans, i. 269
persuades Indians to war against the Americans, ii. 46
amount of forces, ii. 84
embarks from Montreal, ii. 85
attacked by Colonel Warner, ii. 85
retreats to Montreal, ii. 85
flies from Montreal, ii. 91
escapes in disguise, ii. 91
arrives at Quebec, ii. 122
strength of force, ii. 129
treatment of Montgomery's messengers, ii. 142
captures Dearborn and party, ii. 150
reinforced, ii. 200
makes a sortie, ii. 200
Americans retreat, ii. 201
treatment of Americans, ii. 201
plan of campaign, ii. 335
armament completed, ii. 336
takes possession of Crown Point, ii. 390
returns to Canada, ii. 391
to remain in Canada, iii. 86
arrives at New York, iv. 368
to Washington on peace, iv. 369
to Washington on negotiations for peace, iv. 371
to Washington on peace, iv. 383
preparation to evacuate New York, iv. 391
interview with Washington, iv. 392
evacuates New York, iv. 406
CARLETON, Major, captures Forts Anne and George, iv. 157
CARLISLE, Earl of, commissioner from Great Britain, iii. 379
state of Philadelphia, iii. 380
to George Selwyn, iii. 384
CARNES, Captain, discovers Champe's escape, iv. 153
CARPENTER, Captain, joins Lord Stirling, ii. 302
CARRINGTON, Lieutenant, at Quimly's Creek, iv. 302
CARROLL, of Carrollton, and Miss Custis, v. 262
CASWELL, General, on the road to Camden, iv. 84
at the battle of Camden, iv. 87
Cedars, affair at, ii. 212
Chadd's Ford, iii. 187
CHAMBERLAYNE, Mr., asks Washington to dinner, i. 252
CHAMPE, John, scheme to entrap Arnold, iv. 153
pretended desertion, iv. 153
enlists in Arnold's corps, iv. 155
failure of his plan, iv. 155
rewarded, iv. 155
Champlain, Lake, engagement, ii. 387
killed and wounded, ii. 390
CHAPMAN, Colonel, i. 163
Charleston fortified, ii. 272
joy at General Lee's arrival, ii. 273
expedition against, iii. 433
defences of, iv. 26
reinforced, iv. 45
strength of garrison, iv. 45
summoned to surrender, iv. 46
British batteries opened on, iv. 46
capitulates, iv. 50
loss in the siege, iv. 50
Charlestown, arsenal sacked, i. 375
burned, i. 435
alarm during the play, ii. 165
Charlestown Neck, to be seized by the Americans, i. 422
reconnoitred, i. 423
described, i. 424
Charlottesville, Tarleton enters, iv. 288
CHASTELLUX, Marquis de, arrives at Newport, iv. 60
introduced to Washington, iv. 163

description of his visit, iv. 163
reconnoissance, iv. 282
at Mount Vernon, iv. 320
anecdote of Mr. Secretary Nelson, iv. 343
CHATHAM, Lord, on the opposition of the colonists to the mutiny act, i. 314
opinion of the General Congress, i. 370
vain efforts in behalf of America, i. 389
conciliatory bill, i. 390
Chatterton's Hill, military position, ii. 367
attack of the British, ii. 369
killed and wounded, ii. 370
CHEESEMAN, Captain, before Quebec, ii. 147
death, ii. 147
Cherry Valley, atrocities at, iii. 452
Chesapeake, expedition against, iii. 458
Chestnut Hill, British encamped on, iii. 302
Chesterfield Court House, British maraud, iv. 267
Chestnut Neck, village destroyed by the British, iii. 438
CHEW, Benjamin, mansion of, iii. 261
CHEW's House, fortified by Musgrave, iii. 263
CHEVNEY, Thomas, iii. 189
CHOISEUL, Duke de, prediction, i. 327
CHOISY, General M. de, arrives with troops, iv. 324
crosses York river, iv. 350
skirmish with Tarleton, iv. 331
CHOUIN, Major, at the American headquarters, iii. 416
CHRISTOPHER, Washington's servant, v. 295
CHURCH, Dr. Benjamin, treasonable letter, ii. 69
sentence, ii. 69
mitigation of sentence—death, ii. 70
Cincinnati, Society of, formed, iv. 392
popular jealousy of, iv. 419
modification of its constitution, iv. 420
Cincinnati, Society of Massachusetts, address to Washington, v. 43
CLARK, Colonel, joins Marion, iv. 182
CLARKE, Colonel Elijah, on the retreat, iv. 171
Clermont, exploit of Colonel Washington, iv. 188
CLEVELAND, Colonel, in the battle of King's Mountain, iv. 175
CLINTON, Charles, ii. 209
CLINTON, George, conferences with Washington, ii. 209
descent and career, ii. 209
on the alert for the British, ii. 246
promptness in raising levies, ii. 247
sagacious measures, ii. 263
visits Forts Constitution and Montgomery, ii. 247
arrival of reinforcement, ii. 248
to Washington on the patriotism of the country people, ii. 248
precautions against British ships, ii. 257
contemplates descent on Long Island, ii. 344
on military exigencies, ii. 373
stationed in the Highlands, ii. 379
safety of the Hudson, ii. 412
affair between Generals Lee and Heath, ii. 424
commands the Highland forts, iii. 64
promoted, iii. 64
his patriotism, iii. 64
to Washington on his defences, iii. 65
governor of New York, iii. 122
on the alert, iii. 131
at Kingston, iii. 222
hastens to the Highlands, iii. 223
prepares for an attack, iii. 226
escape, iii. 228
measures to oppose the British, iii. 231
intercepts a letter from Burgoyne to Clinton, iii. 232
reaches Kingston too late, iii. 233
wishes to strengthen the defences of the Hudson, iii. 290
finds money for Hamilton, iii. 291
takes the field, iv. 157
tour with Washington, iv. 400
summons state council at East Chester, iv. 405
at Harlem, iv. 405
enters New York, iv. 406
receives Washington at New York, iv. 471
CLINTON, General James, ii. 209
CLINTON, James, at the Highlands, ii. 209
descent and career, ii. 209
appointed to command Forts Montgomery and Constitution, ii. 218
the conspiracy in New York, ii. 234
put on the alert, ii. 351
in command of Fort Clinton, iii. 223
narrow escape, iii. 228
joins Sullivan, iii. 456
in command of the Northern department, iv. 158
CLINTON, Sir Henry, arrives at Boston, i. 415
joins Howe at Bunker's Hill, i. 456
described, ii. 3
arrives at New York harbor, ii. 157
interview with the mayor, ii. 157
departure, ii. 158
expedition to the South, ii. 273
lands at Long Island, S. C., ii. 273
constructs batteries, ii. 275
attempts to cross from Long Island, ii. 276
repulsed in another attempt, ii. 277
arrival at New York, ii. 282
lands on Long Island, ii. 294
at Flatlands, ii. 298
marches from Flatlands, ii. 299
secures the Bedford Pass, ii. 300
crosses from Long Island, ii. 303
advances against White Plains, ii. 360
awaits reinforcements, iii. 222
moves up the Hudson, iii. 223
lands at Verplanck's Point, iii. 224
plan of operations, iii. 224
crosses to Stony Point, iii. 225
marches round the Dunderberg, iii. 225
divides his force, iii. 225
meets with opposition, iii. 227
letter to Burgoyne intercepted, iii. 232
project to capture, iii. 363
plan to entrap Lafayette, iii. 376
ordered to evacuate Philadelphia, iii. 380
informs Washington of the arrival of commissioners, iii. 381

evacuates Philadelphia, iii. 388
dilatory movements, iii. 389
at Allentown, iii. 390
changes plan of route, iii. 390
changes the line of march, iii. 392
encamps near Monmouth Court House, iii. 392
battle of Monmouth Court House, iii. 397
falls back, iii. 399
silent retreat, iii. 409
arrives at Sandy Hook, iii. 403
arrives at Newport, iii. 428
returns to New York, iii. 428
sends troops into the Jerseys and Westchester County, iii. 436
sets on foot a naval expedition against St. Lucia, iii. 442
confined to predatory warfare, iii. 458
expedition up the Hudson, iii. 460
takes Stony Point, iii. 469
captures Fort Lafayette, iii. 469
returns to New York, iii. 451
desolating expedition against Connecticut, iii. 461
capture of Stony Point by Wayne, iii. 469
hastens up the Hudson, iii. 470
fortifies and garrisons Stony Point, iii. 470
returns to Philipsburg, iii. 470
concentrates his forces at N. York, iii. 479
expedition to South Carolina, iii. 483
damage during the voyage, iv. 25
at Tybee bay, iv. 25
disembarks at St. John's Island, iv. 26
advance to Charleston, iv. 26
on Charleston Neck, iv. 27
reinforced, iv. 49
fall of Charleston, iv. 50
sends expeditions into the interior, iv. 57
garrisons South Carolina, iv. 55
issues a proclamation, iv. 54
embarks for New York, iv. 55
arrives at New York, iv. 61
project against Rhode Island, iv. 73
changes his plan, iv. 75
correspondence with Arnold, iv. 97
releases Arnold's crew, iv. 124
to Washington claiming the release of André, iv. 133
rejects exchange of Arnold for André, iv. 137
sends commission relative to André, iv. 139
detaches Arnold to Virginia, iv. 192
proceedings on the revolt of Pennsylvania line, iv. 198
on the destruction of Cornwallis' baggage, iv. 225
to Cornwallis for troops, iv. 284
hears of the Virginia expedition, iv. 312
promised relief to Cornwallis, iv. 328
tardy movements, iv. 355
refuses to deliver the murderer of Captain Huddy, iv. 364
recalled at his own request, iv. 368
Closter Dock, landing of British, ii. 404
Clough, Major, killed, iii. 438
Coates, Lieutenant Colonel, at Monk's Corner, iv. 299
decamps in silence, iv. 303
bold stand, iv. 308
Cobble Hill, fortified by Putnam, ii. 107
Cochran, Major, expedition against the Onondagas, iii. 456
Cochrane, Major, march from Savannah, iv. 44
Coffin, Major, put to flight, iv. 335
Colburn, Colonel, watches the enemy, iii. 209
Colden, Lieutenant Governor, retires into the fort, i. 310
assailed by the mob, i. 310
burned in effigy, i. 310
Cole, Colonel, i. 292
Collier, Admiral Sir George, convoys expedition to the Chesapeake, iii. 459
expedition up the Hudson, iii. 460
convoys expedition against Connecticut, iii. 462
confers with Sir Henry Clinton, iii. 464
arrives at the Penobscot, iii. 472
relieves the fort, iii. 473
Commissariat, changes in, iii. 127
Commissioners, arrive from Great Britain, iii. 379
land at Philadelphia, iii. 380
letter to Congress, iii. 382
unsuccessful attempts at negotiation, iii. 383
embark for England, iii. 384
Committee of Arrangement, appointed by Congress, iii. 347
report on the sufferings of the army, iii. 349
Committee of Conference with Lord Howe, ii. 325
conference, ii. 326
Committee of Inquiry visit Arnold, ii. 37
their instructions, ii. 37
Committee of Safety, i. 383
suspect a design on the magazine at Concord, i. 391
urge the enlistment of troops, i. 401
appoint Arnold Colonel, i. 404
Conciliatory bills sent to America, iii. 363
effect of, iii. 371
Concord, military stores collected at, i. 384
expedition against, i. 392
alarm of the people, i. 393
exertions to remove and conceal the stores, i. 393
advance of the British, i. 394
take possession of the town, i. 394
destroy the stores, i. 344
British attacked, i. 394
British retreat harassed by the Americans, i. 395
Confederacy, ratification of the, iv. 204
Congress (General) recommended by the Virginia House of Burgesses, i. 350
first meeting fixed upon, i. 350
assembled, i. 363
prayers, i. 365
rumors that Boston had been cannonaded, i. 365
opening speeches, i. 367
declaration of colonial rights, i. 367
resolutions, i. 369

state papers, i. 369
held at New York, i. 309
denounces the acts of Parliament, i. 309
address to the king and petition to Parliament, i. 309
its discussion, i. 369
masterly state papers, i. 369
the second general, i. 408
petition to the king moved, i. 408
federal union formed, i. 409
council of twelve, i. 409
exercise their federated powers, i. 409
retaliating decree, i. 409
declare Massachusetts absolved from the crown, i. 409
adopt the army, i. 413
elect Washington commander-in-chief, i. 413
other military appointments, i. 414
on the English generals, ii. 2
on General Howe, ii. 3
accept Ticonderoga, ii. 34
determine to invade Canada, ii. 39
committee from, confer with Washington, ii. 74
order formation of a new army, ii. 95
to Schuyler on his proposed resignation, ii. 96
order Schuyler to Tryon county, ii. 154
applaud Schuyler's conduct, ii. 155
divide the middle and southern colonies into two departments, ii. 187
enlistment act, ii. 208
establish a war office, ii. 209
declare the United States free and independent, ii. 241
adopt the Declaration of Independence, ii. 241
settle dispute between Schuyler and Gates, ii. 263
action on Lord Howe's overtures, ii. 324
appoint a committee to confer with Lord Howe, ii. 325
leave the question of the abandonment of New York to Washington's discretion, ii. 331
forbid the destruction of New York, ii. 331
reorganizes the army, ii. 343
requests Washington to obstruct the Hudson, ii. 359
clothe Washington with additional powers. ii. 439
invests Washington with dictatorial powers, ii. 468
refuse to comply with Lee's request, iii. 15
retaliatory measures, iii. 16
declines the resignation of Schuyler, iii. 33
reprimands Schuyler, iii. 37
make Arnold major-general, iii. 51
vote Arnold a horse, iii. 52
refuse to admit Gates to the floor, iii. 63
summon Schuyler and St. Clair, iii. 125
appoint Gates to the command of the northern department, iii. 126
proceedings of, at the battle of Brandywine, iii. 195
anonymous letter to, against Washington, iii. 321
refuse to treat with Great Britain, iii. 369
recommend the pardoning of Tories, iii. 369
ratifies treaties with France, iii 370
reception of the despatches of the British commissioners, iii. 382
reply to the commissioners, iii. 382
refuse to negotiate with Johnstone, iii. 383
approves the sentence of Lee, iii 409
informs Washington of the arrival of the French fleet, iii. 413
approve of d'Estaing's conduct, iii. 430
approve Lafayette's Canada scheme, iii. 447
deterioration of, iii. 449
vote a gold medal to Major Henry Lee, iii. 476
financial difficulties, iv. 2
charges against Arnold, iv. 15
order court-martial on Arnold, iv. 16
confirms sentence against Arnold, iv. 19
jealousy of military power, iv 33
appoint a committee to confer with Washington, iv. 33
appoint Gates to the southern department, iv. 69
accepts Greene's resignation, iv. 76
rewards the captors of André, iv. 146
order a court of inquiry into the conduct of Gates, iv. 156
new system for the organization and support of the army, iv. 159
send Colonel Laurens to France, iv. 193
committee to meet Pennsylvania insurgents, iv. 200
appoints heads of departments, iv. 205
rejoicings at the surrender of Yorktown, iv. 356
resolutions concerning Lafayette, iv. 360
murder of Captain Huddy, iv. 364
proclamation concerning peace, iv. 388
resolution concerning the service of the soldiers, iv. 391
threatened by mutineers, iv. 398
discharge of the army, iv. 402
resignation of Washington, iv. 410
its composition, v. 27
reassembles, v. 50
assumption of State debts discussed, v. 60
adopted, v. 63
discords in, v. 65
reassembles at Philadelphia, v. 78
impost and excise bill, v. 79
assembling of the second, v. 93
apportionment bill, v. 104
assembles December, 1793, v. 178
does justice to Washington, v. 180
bill to increase naval force, v. 187
Washington's denunciation of secret societies, v. 205
response to Washington, v. 233
reply to Washington's last address, v. 264
authorizes the enlistment of a provisional army, v. 264
Congress (Massachusetts) at Boston, i. 383
adjourn to Concord, i. 383
assume supreme authority, i. 383
remonstrate with Governor Gage, i. 383
system and order i. 383

nominate general officers, i. 383
Connecticut abets the opposition of Massachusetts, i. 362
people march towards Boston, i. 378
sends volunteers, i. 401
Legislature of, favor the surprisal of Ticonderoga and Crown Point, i. 402
committee appointed, i. 402
Massachusetts and Rhode Island fit out armed vessels, ii. 69
troops desert, ii. 101
reception at home, ii. 102
troops described by Graydon, ii. 267
by Washington, ii. 268
dingy regimentals, ii. 268
their composition, ii. 270
British expedition against, iii. 461
Connecticut Farms, sacked by the enemy, iv. 58
Conspiracy in New York, ii. 229
letter relative to, (note,) ii. 232
its ramifications, ii. 234
Constitution of the United States, formation of, iv. 458
opposition to, v. 2
Continental Army. (See American Army.)
Contrecœur, Captain, surprises the fort, i. 96
Contributions for the Continental Army, iv. 68
Convention of Virginia, at Williamsburg, i. 358
at Richmond, i. 388
for considering and revising the federal system, iv. 457
Conway's Cabal, iii. 278
Conway, General, appointed brigadier general, iii. 42
character of, iii. 42
in Washington's camp, iii. 182
gallant conduct, iii. 195
pretensions of, iii. 276
joins faction opposed to Washington, iii. 277
correspondence with Gates, iii. 280
attempts at explanation, iii. 281
sends in his resignation, iii. 281
promoted, iii. 305
to Washington on his letter, iii. 329
remains at Albany, iii. 336
to be appointed to the Canada expedition, iii. 323
Lafayette's opinion of, iii. 324
downfall of, iii. 366
resignation accepted, iii. 366
fails to get reinstated, iii. 366
duel with Cadwalader, (note,) iii. 367
penitential letter to Washington, (note,) iii. 367
subsequent history, (note,) iii. 367
Cook, James, in the expedition against Quebec, i. 269
sounds the river, i. 271
Copp's Hill, British battery on, i. 424
Corbie's Tavern, ii. 229
rendezvous of conspirators, ii. 230
Cornplanter, at the seat of government, v. 82
Cornwallis, Lord, arrival at New York, ii. 282
lands on Long Island, ii. 295
advances against Hand, ii. 295
posts for the night at Flatbush, ii. 295
leaves Flatbush with the rear-guard, ii. 300
crosses the Hudson above Fort Lee, ii. 404
marches against Washington, ii. 426
at the Delaware, ii. 426
gives up the pursuit, ii. 427
at New York, ii. 441
resumes command in the Jerseys, ii. 470
approaches the American forces, ii. 472
enters Trenton, ii. 473
repulsed by Washington. ii. 473
alarm at the escape of Washington, ii. 481
pushes forward to Princeton, ii. 462
arrives at Brunswick, ii. 482
irksome position, ii. 485
to Washington, concerning Hessian prisoners, iii. 2
gains Washington's rear, iii. 190
advances to the attack, iii. 192
marches into Philadelphia, iii. 203
pursues the Americans, iii. 265
takes Fort Mercer, iii. 294
sent into the Jerseys, iii. 436
in the expedition against South Carolina, iii. 483
completes the investment of Charleston, iv. 50
moves against Colonel Buford, iv. 51
approves of Tarleton's conduct, iv. 54
head-quarters at Charleston, iv. 81
at Camden, iv. 86
amount of force, iv. 86
sends in pursuit of Sumter, iv. 90
vigorous measures, iv. 168
takes post at Charlotte, iv. 170
returns to South Carolina, iv. 173
takes post at Winnsborough, iv. 179
plan for invading North Carolina, iv. 215
pursues Morgan, iv. 223
at Ramsour's Mills, iv. 224
destroys his baggage, iv. 225
affair at McGowan's Ford, iv. 230
encamped at Salem, iv. 233
amount of force, iv. 233
march to the Dan, iv. 234
retrograde movement, iv. 237
takes post at Hillsborough, iv. 238
proclamation, iv. 238
encamps near Alamance Creek, iv. 241
attacks the Americans at Wetzell's Mill, iv. 242
battle of Guilford Court House, iv. 245
retreats to Cross Creek, iv. 250
number of troops. iv. 243
at Guilford Court House, iv. 245
retreats to Wilmington, iv. 254
perplexities, iv. 254
sets off for Virginia, iv. 256
arrives at Petersburg, iv. 270
amount of force, iv. 270
renewed hope, iv. 271
movement against Lafayette, iv. 286
reinforced, iv. 287
pursues Lafayette, iv. 287

retrograde march, iv. 290
at Williamsburg, iv. 290
sets out for Portsmouth, iv. 291
takes post at Yorktown, iv. 317
feeling of security, iv. 317
arrival of De Grasse, iv. 321
retreat cut off, iv. 321
to Clinton on promised relief, iv. 328
draws within the town, iv. 329
to Clinton, critical situation, iv. 349
plan of escape, iv. 350
proposes a capitulation, iv. 351
capitulates, iv. 352
humiliation, iv. 355
treatment by the captors, iv. 355
sails for New York on parole, iv. 358
Corresponding Committees, i. 340
Cortlandt, Van. (See Van Cortlandt.)
Coryell's Ferry, Washington at, iii. 120
Council at Alexandria. i. 145
Council of Indians at Logstown, i. 64
Courtney, Captain, killed in action, v. 181
Cow Boys, iv. 109
Cowpens, situation of, iv. 218
battle of, iv. 220
killed and wounded, iv. 221
spoils taken, iv. 222
Cox, Colonel, dispute with General Herkimer, iii. 152
shot down, iii. 155
Cragie, Andrew, (note,) ii. 12
Cragie House, (note,) ii. 11
Craik, Dr. James, i. 114
advises Washington to retire to Mount Vernon, i. 239
a visitor at Mount Vernon, i. 285
accompanies Washington, i. 331
at Mount Vernon, i. 385
appointed to the Hospital Department, iii. 69
to Washington on his secret enemies, iii. 319
application to Washington, iv. 415
accompanies Washington, iv. 421
attends Washington, v. 294
Crawford, Hugh, brings a message from the Miami tribes, i. 48
Creeks, treaty with, v. 63
Croghan, George, sent from Pennsylvania to treat with the Indians, i. 49
appointed commissioner, i. 140
his reverses, i. 140
to Governor Morris, i. 148
enlists Indians and hunters, i. 149
letter, i. 149
arrives at Braddock's camp with Indians, i. 158
dangers and escapes, i. 332
Croton River, iv. 273
Crown Point, preparations against, i. 402
to be reduced, i. 241
expedition against, i. 200
surprised by Seth Warner, i. 406
abandoned, ii. 262
abandoned by the Americans, ii. 390
Cruger, Lieutenant Colonel, commands expedition to the district of Ninety Six iv. 51
commands at Ninety Six, iv. 297
Custis, John Parke his estate, i. 283
Custis, John Parke, Washington's conduct towards, i. 308
character and education, i. 342
in love, i. 342
marriage, i. 343
death of, iv. 358
Custis, George W. P., accompanies Mrs. Washington, v. 14
Custis, Mrs. Martha, meeting with Washington, i. 252
Custis, Miss, death of, i. 341
Custis, Eleanor, accompanies Mrs. Washington, v. 14
accompanies Washington, v. 25
described, v. 26
halcyon days, anecdote, v. 26
marries Lawrence Lewis, v. 285
Cuyler, Yan Yost, iii. 171
in St. Leger's camp, iii. 173
Currency, derangement of, iv. 2
depreciation of, iv. 31
Cushing, Mrs., to her husband, i. 376
Cushing, Mr., i. 410
Cushing, William, judge of Supreme Court, v. 28
administers the oath of office to Washington, v. 136

D.

Dagworthy, Captain, i. 206
Dallas, Mr., interview with Genet, v. 160
Danbury, expedition against, iii. 47
destroyed by the British, iii. 48
Darke, Colonel, with General St. Clair, v. 97
at St. Clair's defeat, v. 99
Dartmouth, Lord, to General Gage, i. 382
D'Aubry, attempts to relieve Fort Niagara, i. 263
is defeated, i. 267
Davidson, John, Indian interpreter, i. 69
Davidson, General, at McGowan's Ford, iv. 229
death of, iv. 230
Davie, General, and Greene, iv. 296
Davie, William Richardson, on mission to France, v. 305
Davis, Charles Augustus, on Wertmuller's portrait of Washington, (Appendix,) i. 455
Davis, Reverend Samuel, appreciation of Washington, i. 194
Dayton, Colonel Elias, takes Johnson Hall, ii. 216
retires before Knyphausen, iv. 57
falls in with General Maxwell, iv. 58
fight at Springfield, iv. 63
Deane, Mr., and French officers, iii. 41
Deane, Silas, returns to America, iii. 415
Dearborn, Captain, captured by General Carleton, ii. 150
Dearborn, Major, receives Lady Ackland, ii. 245

De Barras, arrival at the Chesapeake, iv. 323
noble conduct, iv. 324
De Berdt, Dennis, on the mission of Lord Howe, ii. 251
Deborre, General, iii 182
resignation, iii. 196
Debt of the United States, v. 54
De Buysson, aide-de-camp to De Kalb, iv. 89
De Fermois, at Ticonderoga, iii. 88
De Grasse, Count de, bound for the Chesapeake, iv. 308
arrives in the Chesapeake, iv. 318
urges Lafayette to attack Yorktown, iv. 322
action with British fleet, iv. 323
junction with De Barras, iv. 323
receives Washington, iv. 325
arrival of Admiral Digby, iv. 326
consents to remain, iv. 327
departure, iv. 358
De Heister, Lieutenant General, on Long Island, ii. 298
reaches Flatbush, ii. 298
cannonades Colonel Hand, ii. 302
advances against Whiteplains, ii. 369
treatment of Lord Stirling, ii. 459
De Kalb, Baron, at Philadelphia, iii. 133
appointed major general, iii. 276
appointed to the Canada expedition, iii. 324
sent to reinforce Lincoln, iv. 30
advance retarded, iv. 83
halts at Deep River, iv. 84
applications for aid, iv. 84
meeting with Gates, iv. 84
at the battle of Camden, iv. 87
death of, iv. 89
De la Croix, M., complaints against the American government, v. 42
Delancey, Lieutenant Governor, i. 145
De Lancey, Oliver, recruiting on Long Island, ii. 344
Delancey, Colonel, loyalists, iv. 273
surprises Colonel Greene, iv. 274
Delaplace, Captain, surprised by Ethan Allen, i. 405
sent prisoner to Hartford, i. 406
Delawares, Shawnees, and Mingoes in council at Logstown, i. 64
De Levi, takes post at Oswegatchie, i. 267
rallies the French forces, i. 278
approaches Quebec, i. 278
lands at Point-au-Tremble, i. 278
is attacked by Murray, i. 279
repulses him, i. 279
opens trenches before Quebec, i. 279
retreat, i. 279
Democratic Society, formation of, v. 164
Democratic Societies, Washington concerning, v. 199
Democrats, party formed, v. 82
Denison, Colonel, at the battle of Wyoming, iii. 434
De Ramsey, commands the garrison at Quebec, i. 278
D'Estaing, Count, arrival with French fleet, iii. 415
to Washington on his arrival, iii. 416
correspondence with Washington, iii 416
plan of operations, iii. 417
off Point Judith, iii. 419
opposite Newport, iii. 420
arrival of Lord Howe's fleet, iii. 420
stands out to sea, iii. 421
manœuvres of the fleets, iii. 421
return to Newport, iii. 422
to Sullivan on his intention of proceeding to Boston, iii. 423
protest of American officers, iii. 424
proceeds to Boston. iii. 424
to Congress, explanatory of his conduct, iii. 430
considerate letter from Washington, iii. 430
sails for the West Indies, iii. 442
proclamation to the French Canadians, iii. 442
arrival on the coast of Georgia, iii. 479
unsuccessful siege of Savannah, iii. 481
wounded, iii. 482
sails for France, iii. 483
Destouches, Chevalier, to send ships to the Chesapeake, iv. 257
encounters the British fleet, iv. 263
Deuxponts, Count de, wounded, iv. 348
De Vaudreuil, fortifies himself at Montreal, i. 280
threatened by General Amherst, i. 280
capitulates, i. 281
Dick, Dr., attends Washington, v. 313
Dickinson, drafts a petition to the king and an address to the people of Canada, i. 369
Dickinson, General Philemon, gallant exploit of, iii. 6
to watch the enemy, iii. 393
alarm signals, iii. 445
Dickinson, Major, slain at Monmouth Court House, iii. 401
Dieskau, Baron de, takes post at Crown Point, i. 201
mortally wounded, i. 203
Digby, Admiral, on negotiations for peace, iv. 371
Digges, Mr., i. 293
Dinwiddie, Governor, i. 67
calls upon the governors of the other provinces to make common cause against the foe, i. 92
convenes the House of Burgesses, 92
to Washington, about Captain Mackay, i. 114
orders Washington to Will's Creek, i. 130
his perplexities, i. 130
refuses to give up the French prisoners, i. 133
efforts to secure Indian allies, i. 141
convenes the Assembly, i. 192
conduct to Washington, i. 193
unsatisfactory relations with Washington, i. 226
his interference with Washington, i. 228
pique against Washington, i. 229
ungracious reply to Washington, i. 232
prejudice against Washington, i. 233
conduct towards Washington, i. 233

sails for England, i. 239
character, i. 239
Dismal Swamp, i. 295
Dismal Swamp Company, i. 296
District of Columbia ceded to the United States, v. 63
Dobb's Ferry, British at, ii. 377
works thrown up, iv. 75
Donop, Count, at Long Island, ii. 295
storms the redoubt, ii. 303
crosses from Long Island, ii. 333
decoyed by Colonel Griffin, ii. 463
precipitate retreat, ii. 465
attacks Fort Mercer, iii. 272
repulsed, iii. 272
death of, iii. 273
Donop's Yagers surprised, iii. 440
Dorchester Heights, to be fortified, i. 423
preparations to occupy, ii. 171
letters relative to, ii. 172
fortification of, ii. 173
effect on the British, ii. 175
cannonaded by the British, ii. 174
Drucour, Chevalier, in command of Louisburg, i. 245
defence and surrender, i. 245
Drummond's Pond, i. 295
Duane, Mr., controversy with Gates, iii. 62
Duché, Mr., chaplain to the General Congress, i. 365
officiates, i. 365
effect of prayer, i. 366
Ducoudray, Monsieur, iii. 41
Duer, William, to Schuyler, iii. 124
Dumas, Count Matthew, accompanies Washington, iv. 118
Washington's reception by the people, iv. 118
on the French camp, iv. 280
to Washington with pamphlet, v. 268
Dunbar, Colonel, i. 165
his terror, i. 186
Dundas, Colonel, accompanies Arnold, iv. 192
commands at Gloucester Point, iv. 328
foraging, iv. 331
capitulation of Yorktown, iv. 352
Dunlap, William, portrait of Washington, (appendix,) i. 457
Dunmore, Earl of, Governor of Virginia, i. 339
lingers at New York, i. 339
haughty bearing, i. 339
friendly relations with Washington, i. 340
social position, i. 348
dissolves the House of Burgesses, i. 349
seizes the military munitions of Virginia, i. 399
timely concession, i. 399
proclaims martial law, ii. 78
exercises martial law, ii. 110
to Howe, proposing a servile war, ii. 124
Washington's opinion of, ii. 124
Dunmore, Lady, ball in honor of, i. 350
Duplessis, Captain Mauduit, at Fort Mercer, iii. 271
attentions to Count Donop, iii. 273
Du Portail, General, urges the evacuation of Charleston, iv. 49
reconnoitres, iv. 282
Durham, Bishop of, his state and splendor, i. 2
Durkee, Captain, joins Putnam, i. 402

E.

East India Company, affected by the tax on tea, i. 346
ships large quantities to the colonies, i. 346
ships sent back unladen, i. 347
Easton, James, in the expedition against Ticonderoga, i. 404
Easton, Colonel, at Ticonderoga, ii. 38
Eaton, General, reinforces Greene, iv. 243
at Guilford Court House, iv. 245
Eden, William, commissioner from Great Britain, iii. 379
disposition towards America, iii. 380
Edmonson, Captain, in command of Fort Pitt, i. 331
Elizabethtown, Livingston's account of, ii. 240
surprised by the British, iv. 6
Elizabethtown Point, descent of British, iv. 57
Elliot, Lieutenant Governor, on commission concerning André, iv. 139
Ellsworth, in the mission to France, v. 287
Emerson, Rev. William, description of American camp, ii. 7
on the labors of the army, ii. 17
discipline in camp, ii. 18
England prepares for military operations in America, i. 137
plan of campaign, i. 137
detains vessels bound for France, v. 176
impressment of American seamen, v. 177
her infatuation, i. 389
restrictive policy, i. 299
English claims to the Ohio Valley, i. 44
English officers and Indian squaws, i. 159
luxurious habits, i. 164
their baggage and camp equipage, i. 165
bravery, i. 179
Enos, Colonel, leaves Arnold with his command, ii. 88
Erskine, General Sir William, on Long Island, ii. 295
urges a night attack, ii. 473
in the expedition against Danbury, iii. 47
drives back the Americans, iii. 51
Eutaw Springs, battle of, iv. 335
Evans, Rev. Mr., anecdote of, iv. 330
Everett, Edward, Washington on Dorchester Heights, ii. 174
Ewing, Colonel, passage of British ships up the Hudson, ii. 345
Ewing, General, prevented by the ice, ii. 456
Eyre, Lieutenant Colonel, at New London, iv. 313
mortally wounded. iv. 314

F.

FAIRFAX, Bryan, fox hunting, i. 317
to Washington, advising a petition, i. 355
to Washington, on the resolutions, i. 356
to Washington, in reply, i. 359
effect of the battle of Lexington, i. 399
visits Washington, iii. 353
to Washington on his courtesy, iii. 354
subsequent history, (note,) iii. 354
FAIRFAX, Colonel, to Washington, i. 216
FAIRFAX, George William, fox hunting, i. 291
departs for England, i. 373
in England, iv. 418
(note,) iv. 442
FAIRFAX, Thomas, Lord, his character and history, i. 30
his style of living, i. 41
organizes a troop of horse, i. 195
calls out the militia to defend Winchester, i. 195
menaced by Indians, i. 213
decides to remain, i. 214
occupations, fox hunting, i. 291
hunting, i. 317
his last days, iv. 419
FAIRFAX, William, i. 24
his counsels to Washington, i. 116
Fairfield destroyed by the British, iii. 463
Fair Haven ravaged by the British, iii. 428
FAIRLIE, Major, anecdote, iv. 439
Falls of Montmorency, i. 271
Falmouth destroyed by the British, ii. 71
Faneuil Hall, British troops quartered in, i. 317
meetings at, i. 361
FAUCHET, Mr., succeeds Genet, v. 189
intercepted despatch, v. 221
exonerates Randolph, v. 224
FAULKNER, Captain, with General St. Clair, v. 97
FAUQUIER, Francis, appointed to succeed Dinwiddie, i. 241
FAUQUIER, Lieutenant Governor, dissolves the assembly, i. 306
Federalist, The, v. 5
Federalists spring up, v. 82
FELLOWS, General, opposite Saratoga Ford, iii. 242
opens fire on the British, iii. 246
FELTON, Professor, correction of error, (note,) ii. 11
Fenno's Gazette, Adams' papers, v. 91
FERGUSON, Dr. Adam, secretary to commissioners from Great Britain, iii. 379
FERGUSON, Major Patrick, commands expedition to Little Egg Harbor, iii. 438
massacres American infantry, iii. 439
march from Savannah, iv. 44
described, iv. 47
on violence to women, iv. 48
detached to North Carolina, iv. 168
takes post at Gilbertown, iv. 171
issues an address, iv. 173
retreats, iv. 173
takes post on King's Mountain, iv. 175
defeated, iv. 176
FERMOIS, Brigadier General, accompanies Gates, iii. 37
FERSEN, Count, to hurry on the French troops, iv. 324
Fire-ships, sent to destroy Wolfe's fleet, i. 269
FISHBURN, Benjamin, nomination of, v. 21
Washington's reasons for, v. 22
Fishing in Virginia, i. 292
Fishing Creek, defeat of Sumter, iv. 91
FITZGERALD, Colonel, at Princeton, ii. 478
FITZHUGH, Colonel, i. 132
FLAGG, Major, killed, iv. 274
FLEURY, Louis, iii. 183
presented with a horse by Congress, iii. 195
Col., at Fort Mifflin, iii. 285
promoted, iii. 287
inspector, iii. 358
at the storming of Stony Point, iii. 467
Fontainebleau, treaty of, i. 325
FORBES, Brigadier General, to reduce Fort Duquesne, i. 241
detained at Philadelphia, i. 251
respect for Washington, i. 258
FORBES, Gilbert, conspirator, ii. 230
paid for arms, ii. 231
Foreign officers, applicants for admission to the patriot army, iii. 40
embarrassments about, iii. 41
FOREST, Captain, ii. 451
FORSTER, Captain, besieges the Cedars, ii. 212
captures the post, ii. 212
Fort Anne captured, iv 157
Fort Chamblee taken by Majors Brown and Livingston, ii. 83
Fort Clinton, its strength, iii. 223
attack of the British, iii. 227
captured, iii. 228
Fort Constitution, ii. 217
its garrison, ii. 217, 323
commanded by West Point, ii. 381
evacuated, iii. 230
Fort Cumberland, i. 128
Fort Defiance, iii. 103
erected by Wayne, v. 207
Fort Duquesne, its site, i. 70
completed, i. 117
Washington advises a rapid attack, i. 164
report of scouts, i. 170
to be reduced, i. 242
abandoned by the French, i. 263
name changed to Fort Pitt, i. 263
Fort Edward, i. 200
Fort Frontenac captured, i. 250
Fort George captured by Carleton, iv. 157
Fort George at Coram taken, iv. 182
Fort Griswold taken by the British, iv. 314
Fort Independence, ii. 218
abandoned, ii. 377
evacuated by the Americans, iii. 230
evacuated by the British, iii. 256
Fort Johnson, ii. 272
Fort Lafayette, cannonaded, iii. 460
capitulates, iii. 460
Fort Lee, ii. 361

menaced, ii. 378
preparations to abandon, ii. 403
retreat from, ii. 430
Fort Loudoun, i. 224
Fort Mercer, iii. 259
garrison of, iii. 270
Washington on importance of, iii. 270
attacked by Count Donop, iii. 272
garrison increased, iii. 285
taken by Cornwallis, iii. 294
Fort Mifflin, iii. 259
garrison of, iii. 270
repulses naval attack, iii. 273
garrison increased, iii. 285
attacked by Howe, iii. 285
evacuated, iii. 287
Fort Montgomery, ii. 217
its garrison, ii. 217
the chevaux-de-frise, iii. 223
stormed by the British, iii. 228
Fort Moultrie surrendered, iv. 50
Fort Motte, taken by Marion and Lee, iv. 297
Fort Necessity, i. 114, 120
capitulation of, i. 122
Fort Niagara, besieged, i. 262
surrenders, i. 267
Fort Ninety Six, siege of, iv. 297
Fort Pitt, i. 263
blockaded by Indians, i. 298, 331
Fort Schuyler, invested by Colonel St. Leger, iii. 149
its strength and garrison, iii. 150
summoned to surrender, iii. 150
news of relief, iii. 151
expedition against the Onondagas, iii. 456
Fort Stanwix, invested by Colonel St. Leger, iii. 149
Fort Washington, ii. 218
chevaux-de-frise sunk near by, ii. 282
strongly garrisoned, ii. 360
cannonade at, ii. 366
menaced, ii. 377
question of evacuating, ii. 378
summoned to surrender, ii. 394
amount of garrison, ii. 395
British attack, ii. 396
surrendered, ii. 399
number of prisoners, (note,) ii. 401
Fort Watson, taken by Lee and Marion, iv. 296
Fort William Henry, attacked by Montcalm, i. 236
captured and destroyed, i. 236
Forty Fort, Colonel Zebulon Butler in command of, iii. 433
Fox, opinion of George Johnstone, iii. 380
Fox-hunting in Virginia, i. 33, 290
Foy, Captain, secretary to Earl of Dunmore, i. 340
France, treaty with the United States, iii. 368
ratified by Congress, iii. 370
rejoicing in United States, iii. 370
declares war against England, v. 144
scarcity in, v. 176
violates treaty with the United States, v. 243
indignities towards America, v. 266
threatened war with, v. 271
Francis, Colonel, iii. 104
in St. Clair's retreat, iii. 108
falls, iii. 109
Franklin, Benjamin, arrives at Fredericktown, i. 152
opinion of Braddock and the expedition, i. 152
departs for Lancaster, i. 153
sends conveyances to Braddock, i. 182
observation on Braddock's defeat, i. 189
in London, as American agent, i. 304
before the House of Commons, i. 312
on committee to confer with Washington, ii. 74
on committee to confer with Lord Howe, ii. 325
acquaintance with Howe, ii. 325
to Howe, referring to past acquaintance, ii. 325
and Lord Howe, anecdote, ii. 327
exertions for aid from France, iv. 361
anecdote, iv. 456
Fraser, General, in the invasion from Canada, iii. 87
at Three Mile Point, iii. 94
in Ticonderoga, iii. 105
pursues the Americans, iii. 105
overtakes and attacks St. Clair's rear-guard, iii. 108
in the attack on Gates, iii. 235
commands the advance, iii. 237
shot down, iii. 239
dying request, iii. 241
death, iii. 241
burial of, iii. 242
Frazer, General, at Three Rivers, ii. 224
captures General Thompson, ii. 225
Frazier, John, an Indian trader, i. 51
at Turtle Creek, i. 69
at Venango, i. 74
Washington with, i. 88
Fraunces, Samuel, steward of the Presidential household, v. 16
Freemasons' Tavern, Washington's head-quarters, iii. 5
French claim the Ohio Valley, i. 44
prepare for hostilities, i. 58
launch an armed vessel on Lake Erie, i. 58
influence with Indians increasing, i. 66
deserters, i. 70
Creek, i. 77
surprised by Washington, i. 106
relax their vigilance, i. 128
bravado, i. 168, 169
attack Braddock's advance guard, i. 177
defeat Braddock, i. 176
force engaged, i. 188
attack General Johnson's camp, i. 202
menace Forts Ontario and Oswego, i. 229
fire their camp and retreat, i. 247
defeated by regulars and Indians, i. 267
during the war, i. 301
fleet, arrival of, iii. 415
off Sandy Hook, iii. 416
off Point Judith, iii. 419

return to Newport, iii. 422
scattered by a storm, iii. 423
arrive at Rhode Island, iv. 69
sail from Newport, iv. 261
officers, their camp, iv. 280
reception of Washington, iv. 280
troops cross to Stony Point, iv. 311
move toward Virginia, iv. 311
pass through Philadelphia, iv. 316
revolution, v. 35
FRENEAU, Philip, edits the National Gazette, v. 106
and Hamilton, v. 125
FRESTEL, M., arrives with George Washington Lafayette, v. 229
departs from New York, v. 264
FROTHINGHAM, Richard, jr., history of the siege of Boston, (note,) i. 441
FRY, Colonel, makes a treaty with the Delawares, Shawnees, and Mingoes, on behalf of Virginia, i. 64
FRY, Colonel Joshua, i. 94
death of, i. 113

G.

GABROUSKI, Count, in the expedition to Fort Montgomery, iii. 226
his death, iii. 229
GADSDEN, Colonel, commands Fort Johnson, ii. 272
GADSDEN, Lieutenant Governor, in Charleston, iv. 46
GAGE, General Thomas, i. 173
crosses the Monongahela with the advance, i. 173
wounded, i. 173
to take command of the siege of Fort Niagara, i. 266
military commander of Massachusetts, i. 352
history of, i. 352
erroneous opinion of Americans, i. 350
issues a proclamation, i. 353
perplexities, i. 361
at a loss how to act, i. 361
on the feeling in Berkshire County, i. 362
on the General Congress, i. 362
military measures, i. 374
orders all munitions of war to Boston, i. 375
fortifies Boston Neck, i. 375
to Dartmouth, i. 375
issues writs for a general election, i. 382
countermands the writs, i. 382
enters into explanations with the Assembly, i. 383
critical situation, i. 383
resolves to destroy the magazine at Concord, i. 390
astonishment, i. 397
issues a proclamation, i. 419
astonishment at the fortifications on Breed's Hill, i. 427
determines to carry the works, i. 428
calls a council of war i. 428
in Boston, ii. 5
correspondence with Washington on treatment of prisoners, ii. 26
connection with the burning of Falmouth, ii. 73
sails for England, ii. 73
to Lord Dartmouth, ii. 73
GALL, Brigadier General, commands redoubts, iii. 236
GAMBIER, Admiral, commands the British fleet, iii. 429
GAMBLE, Captain, iii. 20
GANSEVOORT, Colonel. commands Fort Schuyler, iii. 150
sends for succor, iii. 157
GARTH, Brigadier General, expedition against Connecticut, iii. 462
GATES, Horatio, i. 155
before Fort Duquesne, i. 173
at Mount Vernon, i. 385
birth, i. 385
education, i. 385
serves under Cornwallis, i. 385
captain of an independent company of New York, i. 385
in Braddock's campaign, i. 385
with General Monckton in the West Indies, i. 385
at the capture of Martinico, i. 385
despatched to London, i. 385
promotion, i. 385
sells out on half-pay, i. 386
emigrates to Virginia, i. 386
purchases an estate, i. 386
appearance and manners, i. 386
receives the news of Lexington, i. 400
appointed adjutant general, i. 415
arrival in camp, ii. 15
services, ii. 16
estrangement from Washington, ii. 16
sent to Congress with Canadian despatches, ii. 206
promoted, ii. 206
appointed to the command in Canada, ii. 223
question of command with Schuyler, ii. 260
arrives at Crown Point, ii. 261
at Ticonderoga, ii. 262
question of command settled, ii. 263
strengthens his works, ii. 390
in New Jersey with reinforcements, ii. 431
joins Washington, ii. 440
declines to co-operate with Washington, ii. 444
criticism of Washington, ii. 445
question of command, iii. 55
to Mr. Lovell on the command, iii. 56
petulant letter to Washington, iii. 58
to Mr. Lovell, charging Washington with sectional partialities, iii. 59
sets out for Philadelphia, iii. 60
before Congress, iii. 62
ordered to withdraw, iii. 63
commands at Ticonderoga, iii. 31
disappointment, iii. 32
tendered the office of adjutant general, iii. 35
rejects the proposal, iii. 35

committee appointed to confer with him, iii. 37
to command at Ticonderoga, iii. 37
arrives at Albany, iii. 38
on the alert for a command, iii. 123
urged for command of Northern Department, iii. 126
appointed by Congress, iii. 126
to Washington, in high spirits, iii. 175
conduct to Schuyler, iii. 176
correspondence with Burgoyne, iii. 176
anecdote, (note,) iii. 177
at Bemis' Heights, iii. 211
provokes Arnold, iii. 215
jealousy of Arnold, iii. 217
quarrel with Arnold, iii. 217
bides his time, iii. 235
begins the battle, iii. 236
plan of attack, iii. 236
sends to recall Arnold, iii. 238
in Burgoyne's camp, iii. 241
measures to insure a surrender, iii. 242
terms of Burgoyne's capitulation, iii. 250
number of troops, iii. 251
humanity and forbearance, iii. 252
meeting with Burgoyne, iii. 252
appearance of his camp, iii. 252
elation at his success, iii. 278
disrespect to Washington, iii. 278
indisposition to reinforce Washington, iii. 289
president of the Board of War, iii. 301
in the ascendant, iii. 315
the Conway letter, iii. 315
perplexities, iii. 316
to Washington on the Conway letter, iii. 317
projects an invasion of Canada, iii. 322
correspondence with Washington, iii. 323
at Yorktown, iii. 323
on Stark, iii. 324
to Washington on the Conway correspondence, iii. 326
to Washington concerning Conway, iii. 331
to Wilkinson about the Conway letter, iii. 340
reconciliation with Wilkinson, iii. 341
to resume command of the Northern Department, iii. 365
sent to Danbury, iii. 436
to command the Southern Department, iv. 69
meeting with De Kalb, iv. 84
march to Camden, iv. 85
amount of force under, iv. 86
encounters Cornwallis, iv. 87
council of war, iv. 87
battle of Camden, iv. 87
retreats, iv. 88
proceeds towards Charlotte, iv. 90
makes a stand at Hillsborough, iv. 92
to Washington on his defeat, iv. 94
altered fortunes, iv. 156
collects his army at Hillsborough, iv. 183
advances to Charlotte, iv. 184
sympathizing letter from Washington, iv. 184
change of feeling toward Greene, iv. 186
reception by the General Assembly of Virginia, iv. 186
presides over committee of officers, iv. 380
GENET, Edmund Charles, minister to the United States, v. 146
lands at Charleston, v. 147
issues commissions for privateers, v. 147
journey to Philadelphia, v. 147
described, v. 148
reception at Philadelphia, v. 149
presents his letter of credence, v. 152
diplomatic speech, v. 152
takes umbrage, v. 155
dissatisfaction with government, v. 156
demands the release of two Americans, v. 157
case of the Little Sarah, v. 160
at New York, v. 172
grievances of, v. 173
complains of Jefferson, v. 173
appeal to the people, v. 174
to Jefferson on enlistments, v. 188
his recall, v. 189
Gentlemen Associators, i. 220
GEORGE II., anecdote, i. 111
on Lord Howe, ii. 189
GEORGE III., plan of invasion, iii. 86
Georgia joins the league, i. 409
expedition against, iii. 442
reduced to submission, iii. 442
GERARD, Monsieur, arrival of, iii. 415
GERMAIN, Lord George, plan of invasion, iii. 86
on the surrender of Cornwallis, iv. 356
Germantown, Washington's camp at, iii. 121
situation of, iii. 259
battle of, iii. 262
Wayne's attack, iii. 262
Greene's attack, iii. 264
panic in the American army, iii. 264
loss on both sides, iii. 265
Washington on, iii. 266
Captain Heth on, iii. 266
Wayne on, iii. 266
effect of, iii. 267
English opinion of, iii. 267
effect in France, iii. 268
effect on the American army, iii. 268
GERRY, Elbridge, anecdote of Warren, i. 439
suggested to accompany Gen. Lee, ii. 26
envoy to France, v. 268
GIBBON, Lieutenant, leads forlorn hope at Stony Point, iii. 467
GILES, Mr., moves resolutions concerning Hamilton, v. 135
speech concerning Washington's administration, v. 249
GIMAT, Lieutenant Colonel, to lead the advance, iv. 346
GIST, Christopher, despatched to explore the Ohio, i. 49
threatened by traders, i. 50
visits the Shawnees on the Scioto, i. 51
his reception at Muskingum, i. 51
arrives at Piqua, i. 51

forms an alliance with two Miami Tribes, i. 52
returns to the Shawnee town, i. 53
is deterred from descending to Great Falls, i. 53
returns across Kentucky, i. 54
arrives at his home on the banks of the Yadkin, i. 55
his home has been desolated by Indians, but his family are saved, i. 55
rejoins them, i. 55
proceeds to survey the lands of the Ohio Company, i. 57
builds a fort at Shurtee's Creek, i. 65
commences a settlement near Laurel Hill, i. 65
accompanies Washington, i. 69
at Murdering Town, i. 84
crosses the Allegany River, i. 87
hands and feet frozen, i. 88
joins Washington, i. 105
sets off as scout, i. 170
his report, i. 171
to Washington, i. 208
to co-operate with Rodney, iii. 181
skirmishes, iii. 304
Gloucester Point fortified, iv. 327
Glover, General, with Massachusetts regiment, ii. 311
harasses the British, ii. 363
crosses the Delaware, ii. 449
to reinforce Schuyler, iii. 117
to move to Red Bank, iii. 294
Gooch, Captain, takes a message to Magaw, ii. 399
Gouvion, Colonel, reconnoitres the British posts, iv. 162
Grafton, Duke of, resigns, i. 327
Graham, Sergeant, employed by Governor Tryon, ii. 230
Granby captured by Lee, iv. 297
Grant, Major, foolhardiness, i. 259
defeated, i. 260
misrepresentations of America, i. 389
his braggart speech, i. 390
Grant, General, on Long Island, ii. 295
drives in the picket, ii. 301
pushes Stirling, ii. 305
warns Rahl of the attack, ii. 450
commands expedition against St. Lucia, iii. 442
commands the right wing, iii. 260
Graves, Admiral, connection with the burning of Falmouth, ii. 73
arrives at New York, iv. 73
off the capes of Virginia, iv. 322
action with De Grasse, iv. 323
bears away for New York, iv. 324
Gray's Elegy, anecdote of Wolfe, i. 274
Graydon, Alexander, at New York, ii. 266
characterizes Mifflin, ii. 266
appearance of Maryland troops. ii. 267
Pennsylvania troops, ii. 267
Connecticut light horse, ii. 267
at the American camp, iii. 82
account of Wayne, iii. 84
shabby clothing of the troops, iii. 84
Grayson, Colonel, reconnoitring, ii. 311
to Lee on crossing the Hudson, ii. 405
Great Tree, at the seat of government, v. 82
Great Britain, aggressive measures towards the United States, v. 190
excitement on account of, v. 190
treaty with ratified, v. 236
Great Meadows, i. 105, 120
affair of the, i. 121, 126
Greene, Colonel Christopher, commands Fort Mercer, iii. 270
repulses Count Donop, iii. 272
receives thanks of Congress, iii. 275
surprised by Delancey, iv. 274
death and history of, iv. 274
Greene, Nathaniel, appointed brigadier general, i. 414
commanding Rhode Island troops, ii. 7
birth and parentage, ii. 7
early education, ii. 8
military taste, ii. 8
addresses Washington, ii. 8
appearance and manner, ii. 8
under Major General Lee, ii. 18
on the destruction of Falmouth, ii. 72
respect for Franklin, ii. 74
veneration for Washington, ii. 81
sympathizes with Washington, ii. 128
to Henry Ward on the disposition to disband, ii. 128
cheerfulness, ii. 128
stationed on Long Island, ii. 193
pushes the works, ii. 219
meets Alexander Hamilton, ii. 237
becomes acquainted, ii. 239
at Brooklyn, ii. 292
illness, ii. 293
a soldier's yearnings for home, ii. 322
relative to abandoning New York, ii. 330
on the retreat from New York, (note,) ii. 334
to Washington offering aid, ii. 357
promoted, ii. 347
attack on the British frigates, ii. 366
precautions against the enemy, ii. 377
to Washington against abandoning Fort Washington, ii. 378
reinforces Fort Washington, ii. 392
reinforces Magaw, ii. 394
on the movements of Lee, ii. 425
ardor for the attack on Trenton, ii. 448
harasses the enemy's advance, ii. 472
at Morristown, iii. 4
despatched to Philadelphia, iii. 28
to repair to Red Bank, iii. 294
inspects the Highland forts, iii. 66
advances to the relief, iii. 192
desperate conflict, iii. 193
at the battle of Germantown, iii. 264
on exploit of Lafayette, iii. 299
appointed quartermaster-general, iii. 360
detached to flank the enemy, iii. 394
repulses the enemy, iii. 398
detached to the expedition against Rhode Island, iii. 418
on board of the French fleet, iii. 419
interview with D'Estaing, iii. 423
in command at Short Hills, iv. 62

fight at Springfield, iv. 64
difficulty with Congress, iv. 76
resignation accepted, iv. 76
presides over board of general officers, iv. 134
meets the British commissioners, iv. 139
ordered to West Point, iv. 152
appointed to command the southern army, iv. 156
arrives at Charlotte, iv. 184
delicacy to Gates, iv. 185
to Washington on Gates, iv. 185
number of troops, iv. 186
military aphorisms, iv. 187
state of the country, iv. 187
reorganizes the army, iv. 188
at Cheraw Hills, iv. 189
to Washington on the state of the army, iv. 189
to Washington on the battle of the Cowpens, iv. 226
hastens to Morgan's camp, iv. 227
to Huger on Cornwallis's movements, iv. 227
his Fabian policy, iv. 228
disposition of his troops, iv. 228
Mrs. Steele, anecdote, iv. 232
at Guilford Court House, iv. 233
summons a council of war, iv. 233
amount of force, iv. 233
pushes for the Dan, iv. 233
masterly retreat, iv. 235
crosses the Dan, iv. 235
to Jefferson on his retreat, iv. 236
to Washington on the same, iv. 236
recrosses the Dan, iv. 239
at Troublesome Creek, iv. 242
reinforced, iv. 243
number of troops, iv. 243
at Guilford, iv. 243
disposition of troops, iv. 245
battle of Guilford Court House, iv. 245
orders a retreat, iv. 247
to Washington on Cornwallis, iv. 249
pursues Cornwallis, iv. 251
at Deep River, iv. 251
reduction of force, iv. 251
change of plans to Washington, iv. 252
to Lafayette on Cornwallis, iv. 253
discharges his militia, iv. 253
sets out for Camden, iv. 253
at Hobkirk's Hill, iv. 295
retreats before Lord Rawdon, iv. 296
on the Wateree, iv. 296
gloomy prospects, iv. 296
before the fortress of Ninety Six, iv. 297
retreats across the Saluda, iv. 298
to Washington on cavalry, iv. 298
pursued by Rawdon, iv. 298
on the Wateree, iv. 299
to Sumter urging active measures, iv. 299
from Washington concerning reinforcements, iv. 305
on the hills of Santee, iv. 333
marches against Colonel Stuart, iv. 334
battle of Eutaw Springs, iv. 335
resumes his position, iv. 339
follows Stuart, iv. 340
to Washington on the battle of Eutaw Springs, iv. 340
Washington in the dance, iv. 437
death of, iv. 443
Green Mountain Boys, i. 403
fresh corps to be raised, ii. 36
elect Warner lieutenant colonel, ii. 42
arrival at camp, ii. 56
Greenway Court, i. 41
menaced by Indians, i. 213
Gregg, Colonel, in quest of Indians, iii. 164
Grenville, George, advises American taxation, i. 303
dismissed from the Cabinet, i. 311
explanation of British measures, v. 191
Grey, Major General Sir Charles, sent to surprise Wayne, iii. 200
presses the American troops, iii. 265
on a ravaging expedition, iii. 428
surprises Baylor's dragoons, iii. 437
raised to the peerage, iii. 441
Gridley, Colonel, commanding artillery, i. 420
reconnoitres Charlestown Neck, i. 423
accompanies detachment for Bunker's Hill, i. 424
plans fortifications, i. 425
superintends fortification of Dorchester Heights, ii. 174
Gridley, Captain Samuel, commands artillery, i. 423
Griffin, Colonel, co-operates with Washington, ii. 446
decoys Donop, ii. 463
Griffith, Colonel, joins Washington at New York, ii. 223
Guilford Court House, battle of, iv. 245
after the battle, iv. 248
loss on both sides, iv. 248

H.

Hackensack, American army at, ii. 407
Haff, James, confession, ii. 234
Hale, Colonel, gives way, iii. 108
death, iii. 110
Hale, Nathan, sketch of, (note,) iv. 131
Half Town, at the seat of government, v. 82
Halifax intrenched by Kosciuszko, iv. 237
Halket, Sir Peter, i. 163
Hall, Colonel, at McGowan's Ford, iv. 230
Hamilton, Governor, i. 49
Hamilton, Brigadier General, in the invasion from Canada, iii. 87
command of Burgoyne's camp, iii. 236
Hamilton, Alexander, commands a provincial company, ii. 237
birth and early days, ii. 233
education, ii. 238
addresses a public meeting, ii. 239
captain of artillery, ii. 239
acquaintance with General Greene, ii. 271
brings up the rear in the retreat, ii. 313
interview with Washington, ii. 339
at the Raritan, ii. 417
on the situation of Cornwallis, ii. 486

rapid rise, iii. 83
despatched to Congress, iii. 135
mission to Gates, iii. 279, 288
concludes his mission, iii. 289
and Putnam's hobby-horse, iii. 290
emphatical letter to Putnam, iii. 291
on the reluctance of the troops, iii. 291
reasons against the abduction of Sir Henry Clinton, iii. 363
on the decision of council of war, iii. 389
boards the French fleet, iii. 416
to Washington on the enemy, iv. 60
breakfasts with Arnold, iv. 120
learns of Arnold's treason, iv. 122
sent in pursuit of Arnold, iv. 122
return to Washington with letters, iv. 124
describes interview between Washington and Mrs. Arnold, iv. 127
account of Arnold's conduct, iv. 135
at dinner with Chastellux, iv. 165
eulogium of Washington, iv. 208
misunderstanding with Washington, iv. 209
dislike of the office of aide-de-camp, iv. 211
ambitious for distinction, iv. 212
reconciliation with Washington, iv. 213
leads the advance on the redoubts, iv. 346
enters the redoubts, iv. 346
at Washington's inauguration, iv. 475
and the new constitution, v. 5
on presidential etiquette, v. 10
on the French revolution, v. 37
report on the national debt, v. 53
plan for its liquidation, v. 54
opposition to, v. 54
monarchical views, v. 59
conversation with Jefferson, v. 61
urges a national bank, v. 79
on the British constitution, v. 109
on monarchy and stock gambling, v. 118
urges Washington to serve another term, v. 121
attack on Jefferson, v. 124
to Washington on dissension with Jefferson, v. 126
on the French revolution, v. 150
concerning French prizes, v. 155
case of the Little Sarah, v. 162
intention to resign, v. 168
on war with Great Britain, v. 192
recommends Jay, v. 193
plan for the redemption of the public debt, v. 208
sends in his resignation, v. 209
to Washington on his resignation, v. 210
on Rufus King, v. 238
to Washington, his farewell address, v. 245
to Washington on threatened war with France, v. 271
to Washington on his appointment as commander-in-chief, v. 274
second in command, v. 275
Hammond, Mr., British minister, and Genet, v. 148
Hampton, Colonel, iii. 200
Hampton, Colonel Henry, to watch Orangeburg, iv. 300
Hampton, Col. Wade, at Dorchester, iv. 360
before Charleston, iv. 366
at Eutaw Springs, iv. 337
rallies the cavalry, iv. 338
Hamtramck, Major, sent after deserters, v. 96
Hancock, John, president of the provincial Congress, i. 383
apprised of the movements of troops, i. 391
president of Congress, i. 408
ambition to be commander-in-chief, i. 411
mortification, i. 412
excepted from proffered pardon, i. 419
invites Washington to be his guest, ii. 208
ordering Gates to the command of the northern department, iii. 37
invitation to Washington, v. 39
observance of etiquette, v. 39
reception of Washington, point of etiquette, v. 40
waives the point, v. 42
visit to Washington, v. 43
Hand, Colonel, retreats before the enemy at Gravesend, ii. 294
prepared for defence, ii. 295
watches the central road, ii. 296
holds the bridge at Throg's Neck, ii. 357
intercepts the Hessians, ii. 455
society of the Cincinnati, iv. 392
Hanging Rock successfully attacked by Sumter, iv. 83
Harcourt, Colonel, joins Howe, ii. 365
captures General Lee, ii. 434
Hardin, Col., scouring the country, iv. 333
decoyed into an ambush, v. 76
battle with Indians, v. 76
Harmer, Brigadier General, leads an expedition against the Indians, v. 75
destroys Miami village, v. 76
expedition reported to Congress, v. 82
Harnage, Major, iii. 215
Harrison, Benjamin, delegated to the General Congress, i. 359
on committee to confer with Washington, ii. 74
on the bombardment of Boston, ii. 75
member of the board of war and ordnance, ii. 209
Harrison, Colonel Robert H., secretary to Washington, ii. 76
characterized, iii. 5
referee for exchange of prisoners, iii. 14
to Congress predicting the enemy's repulse, iii. 188
appointment of, v. 26
Hartshorn, Ensign, decoyed into an ambush, v. 76
Haslet, Colonel John, joins Lord Stirling's brigade, ii. 293
statement of, ii. 304
attempt to take Rogers the renegade, ii. 364
publicly thanked, ii. 364
detached to Chatterton's Hill, ii. 368
killed at Princeton, ii. 479
Hay, Colonel, to Washington on the protection of the Highlands, ii. 258

HAVILAND, Colonel, crosses Lake Champlain, i. 280
HAZARD, postmaster, to Gates concerning Lee, ii. 354
on the Hessians, (note,) iii. 3
HAZELWOOD, Commodore, in the Delaware, iii. 270
receives thanks of Congress, iii. 275
HEATH, General, takes command of the minute men, i. 396
brings them to a halt i. 397
appointed brigadier general, i. 414
to fortify Lechmere Point, ii. 108
despatched to New York, ii. 191
on the discipline of Mifflin's troops, ii. 291
preparations to receive the enemy, ii. 291
retreat from Long Island, ii. 315
to keep guard on New York island, ii. 331
landing of the British at Throg's Neck, ii. 356
skilful distribution of his troops, ii. 357
appearance of the enemy at White Plains, ii. 369
the two armies at White Plains, ii. 371
American defences, ii. 371
to secure the Highlands, ii. 379
in command at the Highlands, ii. 383
described, ii. 383
refuses to obey Lee, ii. 411
to Washington for instructions, ii. 412
refuses to order troops for Lee, ii. 423
military punctilio, ii. 424
on the conduct of Lee, ii. 424
to march into the Jerseys, ii. 466
advances towards New York, ii. 485
pompous summons to Fort Independence, ii. 485
rebuked by Washington, ii. 485
stationed in the Highlands, iii. 482
charmed with the French officers, iv. 72
commands West Point, iv. 309
HENDERSON, Lieutenant Colonel, joins Greene, iv. 334
at Eutaw Springs, iv. 335
severely wounded, iv. 337
HENDRICK, Mohawk warrior, slain, i. 203
HENFIELD, Gideon, case of, v. 164
HENRY, Patrick, introduces his resolutions, i. 305
speech on his resolutions, i. 306
anecdote, i. 306
delegate to the General Congress, i. 359
sets out for Philadelphia, i. 363
sectional distinctions, i. 364
speech at the opening of the General Congress, i. 367
opinion of Washington, i. 370
speech before the convention at Richmond, i. 388
letter to against Washington, iii. 320
declines appointment, v. 287
HERKIMER, General, commands in Tryon County, iii. 95
at Oriskany, iii. 151
dispute with his officers, iii. 152
attacked by the enemy, iii. 153
wounded, iii. 153
death, iii. 155
HERRICK, Colonel, at Bennington, iii. 166
HERTBURN, William de, progenitor of the Washingtons, i. 3
Hessians hired by England, ii. 196
in Canada, ii. 197
arrive in America, ii. 282
sanguinary fury, ii. 304
reinforce Howe, ii. 365
American opinion of, ii. 441
stationed at Trenton, ii. 442
captured by Washington, ii. 455
treatment, ii. 459
plunder both sides, iii. 3
described by Hazard, (note,) iii. 3
tactics, iii 165
HETH, Captain, on the battle of Germantown, iii. 266
to Colonel Lamb, on the same, iii. 268
HICKEY, Thomas, Washington's body guard, ii. 230
convicted and hanged, ii. 232
Highlands, state of defences, iii. 222
HILL, Lieutenant Colonel, attacks Colonel Long, iii. 107
HINMAN, Colonel, to reinforce Ticonderoga, ii. 34
arrives at Ticonderoga, ii. 36
difficulties with Arnold, ii. 37
in command of Ticonderoga, ii 40
HITCHCOCK, Colonel, reinforces Cadwalader, ii. 440
Hobkirk's Hill, affair at, v 295
HOLBOURNE, Admiral, demonstration against Louisburg, i. 237
HOLMES, Rear-Admiral, i. 272, 273
HOOD, Commodore, on the troubles in Boston, i. 315
to Grenville on the sedition i. 325
HOTHAM, Commodore, convoys expedition against St. Lucia, iii 442
HOUDON'S bust of Washington, (appendix,) i. 459
takes a model of Washington, iv. 431
House of Representatives on the public credit, v. 25
opposition to Washington, v. 236
make provision for the treaty v. 237
reply to Washington's last address, v. 248
HOWARD, Major, retreating, iii. 395
HOWARD, Colonel, under Morgan, iv. 189
at the battle of the Cowpens, iv. 219
HOWE, Lord, in the expedition against Ticonderoga, i. 246
dies while leading the van, i. 247
HOWE, Admiral Lord, fondness for business, ii. 199
character and services, ii. 1[illegible]
arrives at New York, ii. 2[illegible]
proclamation of, ii. 2[illegible]
comes as a mediator, ii. 2[illegible]
sends flag of truce, ii. 252
sends General Sullivan on parole to Congress with overtures, ii. 324
plan of compromise, ii. 324
to Franklin on re-union of Great Britain and America, ii. 325
conference with Commissioners, ii. 326
and Franklin, anecdote, ii. 327

conflagration in New York, ii. 342
issues proclamation, ii. 419
to Washington on the treatment of prisoners, iii. 20
gets his fleet into the Delaware, iii. 258
at Sandy Hook, iii. 403
brings his fleet to the relief of R.I., iii. 420
manœuvres of the fleets, iii. 421
bears away to New York. iii. 423
return to England, iii. 429
HOWE, General Robert, at Savannah, iii. 443
defeated by the British, iii. 443
HOWE, Major General, quells mutiny, iv. 203
despatched to quell a mutiny, iv. 398
HOWE, Sir William, in the expedition against Quebec, i. 268
ascends the heights of Abraham, i. 275
arrives at Boston, i. 418
lands with troops at Moulton's Point, i. 431
reconnoitres the American works, i. 431
sends for reinforcements, i. 431
prepares for the assault, i. 433
advances against the fence, i. 434
troops thrown into confusion, i. 434
makes a feint of attacking the fence, i. 456
wounded, i. 457
description of, ii. 2
reproached by Congress, ii. 3
intrenched, ii. 5
measures taken, ii. 77
issues proclamation, ii. 78
to Washington concerning Ethan Allen, ii. 105
measures to repress excesses, ii. 166
perplexed, ii. 177
declines attacking Dorchester Height ii. 177
retreat from Boston, ii. 181
steers for Halifax, ii. 186
indolent disposition, ii. 186
arrives at New York, ii. 235
to his government on the state of affairs, ii. 235
plans for the battle of Long Island, ii. 299
accompanies division from Flatlands, ii. 300
at Throg's Neck, ii. 363
lands on Pell's Point, ii. 363
at New Rochelle, ii. 364
postpones the assault, ii. 372
plan of attack on Fort Washington, ii. 395
the attack, ii. 396
conduct of the seamen, ii. 404
hears of the capture of the Hessians, ii. 470
on the march, ii. 472
contrasted with Washington, iii. 9
to Washington concerning Lee, iii. 14
to Lord Germaine, relative to Lee, iii. 14
prepares to attack Peekskill, iii. 29
crosses to the Jerseys, iii. 71
sallies from Brunswick, iii. 72
endeavors to draw Washington out, iii. 76
another attempt, iii. 78
evacuates the Jerseys, iii. 80
leaves New York, iii. 119
enters the Delaware, iii. 121
sails out of the capes, iii. 121
lands from the fleet, iii. 179
issues proclamation, iii. 181
at Elkton, iii. 185
battle of Brandywine, iii. 188
neglects to pursue his advantage, iii. 197
pushes for Philadelphia, iii. 202
halts at Germantown, iii. 203
detaches a force against Billingsport, iii. 259
head-quarters, iii. 260
constructing redoubts on Province Island, iii. 284
attacks Fort Mifflin, iii. 285
expedition against Fort Mercer, iii. 294
preparing to drive Washington beyond the mountains, iii. 302
meditates attack on the American camp, iii. 302
manœuvres, iii. 303
retires to Philadelphia, iii. 304
excesses of foraging parties, iii. 364
resignation accepted, iii. 372
the Mischianza, iii. 372
HUBBARD, Colonel, at Bennington, iii. 166
HUDDY, Captain Joseph, murdered in revenge for Philip White, iv. 364
Hudson River, defences of, ii 159
strategetical position, ii. 255
defences, ii. 347
British ships move up, ii. 347
new obstructions, ii. 349
opened for the British, iii. 230
HUGER, Brigadier General, at Monk's Corner, iv. 46
surprised by Tarleton, iv. 48
in command on the Pedee, iv. 227
at Guilford Court House, iv. 233, 245
HUGHES, Colonel, ordered to impress water-craft, ii. 312
HUMPHREYS, Colonel, on preparation for attacking the British posts, iv. 162
accompanies Washington to Mount Vernon, iv. 320
to Washington on the troubles in Massachusetts, iv. 452
meets Washington, iv. 457
inauguration of Washington, iv. 473
Washington's first levee, anecdote, v. 12
HUNTINGDON, Colonel, hangs on the enemy's rear, iii. 50
HUNTINGTON, Major, ii. 423
HUNTINGTON, General, to join Varnum, iii. 294
on the destitution of the troops, iii. 308
society of the Cincinnati, iv. 392

I.

INDEPENDENCE, dawning spirit of, i. 197
Indian council at Logstown, i. 64, 71
Indian traders, described, i. 45
Indian warfare, iii. 432
Indian war dance, i. 38
Indians, leave Braddock, i. 161
retreat, i. 198
outrages of, i. 213
troubles with, i. 331

visit Washington at Cambridge, ii. 45
with Burgoyne iii. 141
murder Miss McCrea, iii. 143
desert Burgoyne, iii. 147
described by a Hessian, iii. 162
oblige St. Leger to decamp, iii. 173
difficulties with, v. 74
hostilities north of the Ohio, v. 177
treaty with Wayne, v. 231
INNES, Colonel, at Winchester, i. 114
concerning the Indians, i. 161
IREDELL, James, judge of supreme court, v. 26
Iroquois, stand aloof, i. 249
IRVINE, Colonel, taken prisoner, ii. 225
IRVINE, James, Brigadier General, taken prisoner, iii. 303

J.

JACK, Captain, commands hunters, i. 149
at Little Meadows, i. 165
departs with his band, i. 166
JACKSON, Andrew, v. 250
JACKSON, Major, accompanies Washington, v. 38
Washington's reception at Boston, v. 40
Jacobin Club, v. 48
JACOBS, Captain, Indian sachem, i. 221
killed, i. 223
JAMESON, Lieutenant Colonel, sends papers found on Andre to Washington, iv. 114
informs Arnold of the capture of André, iv. 114
JAY, John, drafts address to the people of Great Britain, i. 369
and the conspiracy in New York, ii. 229
to Rutledge, ii. 351
to Gouverneur Morris, on the defence of New York, ii. 352
to Rutledge, concerning Lee, ii. 354
on the opposition to Washington, (note,) iii. 346
approves of Arnold's plan of settlement in New York, iv. 13
correspondence with Washington, iv. 449
at the head of affairs, v. 4
appointed chief justice, v. 26
on republicanism, v. 58
concerning Genet, v. 175
envoy to Great Britain, v. 193
progress of negotiations, v. 212
his treaty with France, v. 213
return to America, v. 214
elected Governor of New York, v. 214
JEFFERSON, Thomas, Arnold's invasion, iv. 205
correspondence with Washington, iv. 207
escapes to Carter's Mountain, iv. 289
on Knox and Humphreys, v. 12
anecdotes related by, v. 12
sketch of character and opinions, v. 28
in Paris, v. 29
opinions on the new constitution, v. 30
re-eligibility of the President, v. 30
horror of kingly rule, v. 31
on titles, v. 31
Washington's election to the Presidency, v. 32
on French politics, v. 32
and the leading patriots, v. 33
to Paine on the National Assembly, v. 34
on the French revolution, v. 35
appointed secretary of state, v. 48
arrives at New York, v. 57
impressions concerning the political tone of society, v. 57
conversation with Hamilton, v. 61
remonstrates with Washington on ceremonials, v. 64
discords in Congress, v. 65
concerning Hamilton, v. 66
accompanies Washington to Rhode Island, v. 73
opposed to a National Bank, v. 80
rivalry with Hamilton, v. 81
sympathy with the French revolution, v. 90
hatred of royalty, v. 92
intention of retirement, v. 106
concerning Hamilton, v. 108
appreciation of Hamilton, v. 109
conversation between Hamilton and Adams, v. 109
urging Washington not to retire, v. 114
to Lafayette, suspicions, v. 117
conversation with Washington on political matters, v. 119
to Washington on dissensions with Hamilton, v. 123
concerning Gouverneur Morris, v. 137
on the atrocities of the French revolution, v. 139
to Madison, on the war between England and France, v. 148
to Madison on Genet's speech, v. 152
conversation with Washington on attacks of the press, v. 153
on Freneau's paper, v. 154
concerning French prizes, v. 155
relative to Washington's illness, v. 157
case of the Little Sarah, v. 160
concerning recall of Genet, v. 165
intention to resign, v. 168
interview with Washington, v. 169
to Genet, announcing application for his recall, v. 172
report on the state of trade, v. 181
rebuke to Genet, v. 182
retirement from office, v. 183
at Monticello, v. 184
character of Washington, v. 184
on war with Great Britain, v. 191
to Tench Coxe, from Monticello, v. 194
to Monroe, on Washington's influence, v. 239
on breach of official trust, v. 239
elected vice-president, v. 252
takes the oath of office, v. 254
JESKAKAKE, Shannoah sachem, i. 73
JOHNSON FAMILY, power in New York, i. 447
style of living, i. 448
adherents, i. 448
incite the Indians to hostility, ii. 82

JOHNSON, Colonel Guy, supports the royal cause, i. 448
fortifies Guy's Park, i. 448
holds an Indian council, i. 448
doubtful intentions, i. 449
at Montreal, ii. 43
contemplates hostilities, ii. 215
JOHNSON, Sir John, supports the royal cause, i. 448
fortifies the family hall, i. 448
fortifies Johnson Hall, ii. 154
prepares for hostilities, ii. 154
surrenders to General Schuyler, ii. 155
contemplates hostilities, ii. 216
retreats among the Indians, ii. 216
rumoured to be in the field, ii. 216
contemplated inroad of, iii. 77
on his way to attack Fort Schuyler, iii. 91
depredations, iv. 157
JOHNSON, Sir William, i. 146
expedition against Crown Point, i. 200
defeats the French, i. 202
erects Fort William Henry, i. 204
made baronet and superintendent of Indian affairs, i. 204
joins Abercrombie, i. 248
to attack Fort Niagara, i. 266
conducts the siege, i. 266
captures the fort, i. 267
before Montreal, i. 280
influence with the Six Nations, i. 298
concern at the difficulties, i. 447
death, i. 448
JOHNSON, of Maryland, nominates Washington commander-in-chief, i. 413
JOHNSTONE, George, commissioner, from Great Britain, iii. 379
Fox's opinion of, iii. 380
on the state of Philadelphia, iii. 381
attempt to bribe General Reed, iii. 382
to Robert Morris, attempts at corruption, iii. 383
JONCAIRE, Captain, i. 55
his history, i. 55
appears at Logstown, i. 56
addresses the chiefs, i. 56
writes to the Governor of Pennsylvania, i. 57
interview with Washington, i. 74
entertains Washington at supper, i. 75
his diplomacy with the Indians, i. 76
JONES, David, Lieutenant, and Miss McCrea, iii. 142
JONES, Honorable Joseph, letter on army grievances, iv. 383
JUMONVILLE, his death, i. 107
instructions found upon him, i. 107
JUNIUS, description of Lord Botetourt, i. 321

K.

KELLY, Major, destroys bridge at Stony Brook, ii. 479
KENE, Maj., letter to, intercepted, ii. 68
Kentucky admitted into the Union, v. 83
KEPPEL, Commodore, arives with his squadron, i. 140
furnishes cannon, i. 141
KIASHUTA, a Seneca sachem, i. 335
KING, Rufus, concerning Genet, v. 175
character of, v. 238
minister to Great Britain, v. 238
King's Bridge to be fortified, ii. 161
reconnoitred by Washington, ii. 218
works at, ii. 218
fortified camp at, ii. 337
demonstration at, iv. 382
relinquished by the British, iv. 405
King's County committee, accusing Schuyler, ii. 203
disaffected, ii. 286
King's Mountain, situation, iv. 175
battle of, iv. 175
its effect, iv. 177
Kingston burnt by the British, iii. 232
KINGSTON, Lieutenant, bears a note to Gates, iii. 250
KINLOCK, Captain, takes summons to Colonel Buford, iv. 53
Kip's Bay, landing of British, ii. 333
anecdote of Washington, ii. 333
KIRKWOOD, at Eutaw Springs, iv. 337
KITCHEL, Anna, (note,) iv. 4
Kittanning, taken and burned, i. 222
KNOWLTON, Captain, joins Putnam, i. 402
leads a fatigue party, i. 423
puts up a rampart, i. 432
repulses General Howe, i. 434
maintains his position, i. 438
promoted to major, ii. 18
captures a British guard, ii. 165
to attack Staten Island, ii. 280
gallant affair at an outpost, ii. 330
wounded, ii. 341
death, ii. 341
KNOX, Henry, offers to obtain artillery and ordnance stores, ii. 79
account of, ii. 79
instruction, ii. 80
sets off on his errand, ii. 80
to Washington concerning artillery and stores, ii. 132
arrival at camp, ii. 168
stentorian lungs, ii. 440
promoted, iii. 4
sent to Massachusetts, iii. 24
inspects the forts of the Highlands, iii. 67
objects to leave Chew's house garrisoned, iii. 263
accompanies Washington, iv. 113
described by Chastellux, iv. 165
despatched to the eastern States, iv. 193
and Washington, anecdote, iv. 348
moves patriotic resolutions, iv. 384
suggests the society of the Cincinnati, iv. 392
at Harlem, iv. 405
enters New York, iv. 406
parting with Washington, iv. 407
to Washington concerning Massachusetts insurgents, iv. 451
meets Washington, iv. 457
reception of Washington, iv. 471

at Washington's inauguration, iv. 475
officiates as Secretary of War, v. 4
described, v. 6
presidential etiquette, v. 12
appointed Secretary of War, v. 34
in favor of a national bank, v. 80
sides with Hamilton, v. 81
concerning French prizes, v. 155
case of the Little Sarah, v. 162
concerning recall of Genet, v. 165
and Washington, anecdote, v. 166
to Washington resigning, v. 210
position assigned to, v. 277
to Washington on his appointment, v. 277
to Washington on his reply, v. 279
KNOX, Lieutenant, leads forlorn hope at Stony Point, iii. 467
KNYPHAUSEN, Gen., reinforces Howe, ii. 365
menaces Fort Washington, ii. 377
at Cecil Court House, iii. 185
attempts to cross Chadd's Ford, iii. 192
moves with the British vanguard, iii. 393
sent into Westchester County, iii. 456
left in command of New York, iii. 483
prepares for defence, iv. 5
sends expeditions against Newark and Elizabethtown, iv. 6
plans descent into the Jerseys, iv. 57
passes through Elizabethtown, iv. 57
sack of Connecticut farms, iv. 58
presses on toward Morristown, iv. 59
halt before Springfield, iv. 59
retreat, iv. 59
indecision, iv. 61
assailed for the murder of Mrs. Caldwell, iv. 61
moves against Springfield, iv. 62
engages the Americans, iv. 63
retreat, iv. 65
KOSCIUSZKO, Thaddeus, joins the army, iii. 43
fortifies Bemis' Heights, iii. 209
advances to the Dan, iv. 234
intrenches Halifax, iv. 237

L.

LAFAYETTE, George Washington, v. 142
arrives in America, v. 229
accompanies Washington, v. 256
departs from New York, v. 264
rejoins his family, v. 264
LAFAYETTE, Madame de, v. 142
LAFAYETTE, Marquis de, at Philadelphia, iii. 133
offers letters of recommendation, iii. 134
his appeal, iii. 134
appointed major general, iii. 134
meets Washington, iii. 134
description of American army iii. 136
modest reply to Washington, iii. 136
nature of his appointment, iii. 137
joins Sullivan's division, iii. 190
wounded, iii. 192
on Howe's neglect, iii. 197
to Washington, account of skirmish, iii. 300
appointed to a division, iii. 300
proceeds to Yorktown, iii. 323
toasts the commander-in-chief, iii. 324
sets out for Albany, iii. 324
to Washington, anticipations, iii. 324
perplexities, iii. 334
to Washington on his troubles, iii. 335
returns to Valley Forge, iii. 336
keeps watch in Philadelphia, iii. 375
encamps on Barren Hill, iii. 375
nearly surrounded, iii. 377
extricates himself, iii. 377
commands the advance, iii. 390
resigns command to Lee, iii. 397
detached to the expedition against Rhode Island, iii. 418
interview with D'Estaing, iii. 423
sets out for Boston to see D'Estaing, iii. 425
returns to the American camp, iii. 427
brings off the pickets and covering parties, iii. 427
asks leave of absence, iii. 446
project for the conquest of Canada, iii. 446
arrival at Boston, iv. 34
reaches the American camp, iv. 35
reception by Congress, iv. 35
despatched to the French commanders, iv. 72
accompanies Washington, iv. 118
proposes exchange of André for Arnold, iv. 137
commands the advance guard, iv. 160
attempted enterprise, iv. 160
anxious for action, iv. 161
in the camp of the Pennsylvania mutineers, iv. 199
to Washington on Hamilton, iv. 213
in command of detachment, iv. 258
instructions, iv. 258
sets out on his march, iv. 259
further instructions, iv. 260
forced marches for Virginia, iv. 262
at the Head of Elk, iv. 263
arrives at York, iv. 263
marches to join Greene, iv. 266
saves Richmond, iv. 268
to Washington on Lund Washington's compromise, iv. 269
refuses to correspond with Arnold, iv. 287
retires from before Cornwallis, iv. 287
assumes the aggressive, iv. 289
joined by Steuben, iv. 290
follows Cornwallis, iv. 291
retreats to Green Springs, iv. 294
account of his campaign, iv. 294
to Washington on the embarkation of the British, iv. 307
measures to cut off Cornwallis's retreat, iv. 317
to Washington urging him to command, iv. 318
prevails on De Grasse to remain, iv. 327
to storm a redoubt, iv. 345
carries the works, iv. 347
false statement concerning, (note,) iv. 347
concerning Hamilton, iv. 348
asks leave of absence, iv. 353
to Congress with news of peace, iv. 388
at Mount Vernon, iv. 420

on the French revolution, v. 46
to Washington on the same, v. 69
to Washington presenting the key of the Bastille, v. 71
on affairs in France, v. 88
downfall of, v. 138
prisoner at Rochefort, v. 139
on his way to Paris, v. 263
correspondence with Washington, v. 283
La Force, accompanies Washington, i. 77
prowling about the country, i. 102
Washington's opinion of, i. 105
in Washington's power, i. 107
kept in prison, i. 134
his fortunes, i. 134
Lake of the Dismal Swamp, i. 295
Lamb, Colonel, arrives before St. Johns with artillery, ii. 59
before Quebec. ii. 143
effective fire from the ice battery, ii. 143
relative to Aaron Burr, ii. 144
in the attack, ii. 148
wounded. ii. 149
assists Arnold, iii. 50
wounded, iii. 51
receives Washington at West Point, iv. 121
Lameth, Chevalier de, wounded in the attack, iv. 347
Langdon, President, offers prayers, i. 424
Langlade, commands the Indians, iii. 141
Laurens, Col., duel with Lee, iii. 410
boards the French fleet, iii. 416
carries a protest to D'Estaing, iii. 424
informs Washington of affairs in Charleston, iv. 28
on Andre's fate. iv. 149
special minister to France, iv. 193
visits the camp of the Pennsylvania mutineers, iv. 199
arrives from France with the loan, iv. 315
capitulation of Yorktown, iv. 351
Laurens, Mr., remits letter to Washington, iii. 321
Lauzun, Duke de, at Newport, iv. 71
to join the American Army, iv. 277
skirmish with Tarleton, iv. 331
Lawrence, Colonel, i. 146
Lawrence, Colonel John, judge advocate general, iv. 134
Lawson, General, reinforces Greene, iv. 243
at Guilford Court House, iv. 245
Lear, Tobias, Washington's private secretary, iv. 430
on Washington's character, iv. 434
at the inauguration of Washington, iv. 473
accompanies Washington, v. 38
Washington's state coach, v. 78
concerning St. Clair's defeat, v. 101
Washington's illness, v. 293
last hours of Washington, v. 294
death of Washington, v. 296
Learned, Col., receives flag of truce, ii. 178
Lechmere Point, fortified by Putnam, ii. 107
Ledyard, Colonel William, defence of Fort Griswold, iv. 313
Lee, Arthur, in the treasury board, v. 4
Lee, General Charles, at Boston, i. 376
history, i. 377
his birth, i. 377
serves in America, i. 377
adopted by the Mohawks, i. 377
wounded at the battle of Ticonderoga, i. 377
at the siege of Fort Niagara, i. 377
joins Amherst at Crown Point, i. 378
at the surrender of Montreal, i. 378
in Portugal, i. 378
brave conduct, i. 378
opposes the ministry, i. 378
received by Frederick the Great, i. 379
at Warsaw, i. 379
accompanies the Polish ambassador to Constantinople, i. 379
dangers and escapes, i. 379
again in England, i. 379
reception, i. 379
censured by a friend, i. 379
embittered against the king and ministers, i. 380
returns to Poland, i. 380
hopes of active service, i. 380
major general in the Polish Army, i. 380
restless life, i. 381
affair of honor, i. 381
attacks upon the ministry, i. 381
advocates the cause of the colonies, i. 381
visits America, i. 381
reputation, i. 381
to Edmund Burke, i. 382
at Mount Vernon, i. 385
purchases an estate, i. 386
cultivates the acquaintance of leading men, i. 387
efficient in organizing the Maryland militia, i. 387
manners, i. 387
fondness for dogs, i. 387
to Adams, i. 387
at Philadelphia, i. 411
appointed major general, i. 414
elected third in command, i. 414
accepts appointment, i. 414
sets out from Philadelphia, i. 442
anecdote, i. 444
description by Mrs. Adams, ii. 2
Washington's military counsellor, ii. 15
commands left wing, ii. 18
strict discipline, ii. 18
profanity, ii. 18
correspondence with Burgoyne, ii. 25
declines an interview with Burgoyne, ii. 26
on the bombardment of Boston, ii. 75
and Mrs. Adams, ii. 115
to Richard H. Lee, giving his policy, ii. 125
sets out for Rhode Island, ii. 126
test oath, ii. 126
legislative censures, ii. 127
to Washington relative to the defence of New York, ii. 135
at New Haven, ii. 137
military notions, ii. 138
reply to New York Committee of Safety, ii. 139

to Washington on recruiting success, ii. 140
on the disposition of New York, ii. 140
arrives at New York, ii. 156
to Washington, on a resolve of Congress, ii. 156
on the arrival of Sir Henry Clinton, ii. 157
characteristic menace, ii. 157
plans of defence, ii. 158
measures against Tories, ii. 159
defiance of Governor Tryon and Captain Parker, ii. 160
removal of cannon, ii. 161
strengthens New York, ii. 161
ordered to Canada, ii. 162
to Washington on affairs in New York, ii. 162
contempt for titles, ii. 163
appointed to command the southern department, ii. 188
to Washington on his appointment, ii. 188
sets out for the south, ii. 189
opinion of Washington, ii. 189
to Washington from the south, ii. 189
to Washington on Clinton's expedition, ii. 272
foils Clinton, ii. 272
arrives at Charleston, ii. 273
to Washington on the condition of Charleston, ii. 273
encamps on Haddrell's Point, ii. 273
describes the attack on Sullivan's Island, ii. 274
receives thanks of Congress, ii. 277
to Washington for cavalry, ii. 277
expected in camp, ii. 354
to President of Congress on the designs of the British, ii. 354
arrives in camp, ii. 358
to Gates on the meddling of Congress, ii. 358
arrives at White Plains, ii. 367
commands at Northcastle, ii. 380
to Washington on his position, ii. 400
allusion to Greene, ii. 400
to Reed explaining his projects, ii. 408
to Bowdoin, plans and schemes, ii. 409
to Washington on removing troops across the Hudson, ii. 410
to Heath on his right to command, ii. 412
to Reed disparaging Washington, ii. 415
to Washington on his delay, ii. 422
interview with General Heath, ii. 423
question of authority, ii. 424
changes his mind, ii. 424
crosses the Hudson, laggard march, ii. 425
on military greatness, ii. 426
at Morristown, ii. 428
to Congress on his plans, ii. 428
correspondence with Washington, ii. 429
to Heath to forward troops, ii. 430
tardiness of his march, ii. 430
and the militia, ii. 432
to Gates disparaging Washington, ii. 433
captured by Colonel Harcourt, ii. 433
effect of his loss, ii. 435
secret of his conduct, ii. 435
character of, ii. 436
treatment of, iii. 12
to Congress from New York, iii. 15
to Washington on the refusal of Congress, iii. 15
actual treatment of, iii. 16
diminished importance, iii. 23
to Washington on his captivity, iii. 352
exchanged for General Prescott, iii. 377
in command of a division, iii. 386
to Washington on the enemy's plans, iii. 386
opposed to attack, iii. 387
relinquishes the command of the advance to Lafayette, iii. 390
military punctilio, iii. 391
commands the advance, iii. 392
encamps at Englishtown, iii. 392
advances against the enemy, iii. 393
manœuvre, iii. 393
retreat, iii. 395
angry meeting with Washington, iii. 396
battle of Monmouth Court House, iii. 397
conduct, iii. 397
cause of retreat, iii. 399
correspondence with Washington, iii. 404
charges against, iii. 406
court-martialled, iii. 407
concerning Washington, iii. 407
sentenced, iii. 408
sentence approved by Congress, iii. 409
abuse of Washington, iii. 409
duel with Colonel Laurens, iii. 410
retires to his estate, iii. 410
style of living, iii. 410
queries political and military, iii. 411
insolent note to Congress, iii. 411
dismissed the service, iii. 411
to Congress, apologetic, iii. 411
his character, iii. 412
his death, iii. 412
his will, iii. 412
burial, iii. 413
his manuscripts, iii. 413
to Wayne applauding his capture of Stony Point, iii. 469
caution to Gates, iv. 69
Lee, Charles, attorney general, v. 229
Lee, Henry, "Light Horse Harry," iii. 183
repulses a surprise, iii. 350
promoted, iii. 351
surprises a party of Hessians, iii. 440
proposes an attack on Paulus Hook, iii. 473
sets out for Paulus Hook, iii. 475
surprises the post, iii. 475
difficult retreat, iii. 476
rewarded with a gold medal by Congress, iii. 476
joins Washington, iv. 61
fight at Springfield, iv. 63
concerning Arnold's conspiracy, iv. 152
escape of Champe, iv. 154
on the reception of Gates by the General Assembly of Virginia, iv. 186
crosses the Dan, iv. 237
affair with Pyle's loyalists, iv. 240
on Tarleton's escape, iv. 241
skirmish with Tarleton, iv. 244

at Guilford Court House, iv. 245
joins Marion, iv. 295
capture of Fort Watson, iv. 296
capture of Fort Motte, iv. 297
captures Granby, iv. 297
exploits of, iv. 300
pursues Colonel Coates, iv. 301
detached to operate with Sumter, iv. 333
at Eutaw Springs, iv. 333
anecdote of Washington, iv. 440
communicates the death of Greene, iv. 442
to Washington on the presidency, iv. 463
commands the army, v. 201
puts down the insurrection, v. 202
LEE, Richard Henry, delegate to General Congress, i. 359
speech before the General Congress, i. 367
drafts memorial to British colonies, i. 369
urging Washington's presence in Virginia, iv. 281
Legislatures dissolved, i. 314
LEITCH, Major, commands Virginia troops, ii. 266
joins Knowlton in an attack, ii. 340
wounded, ii. 340
death, ii. 342
Lempriere's Point, works thrown up, iv. 46
LESLIE, Captain, killed at Princeton, ii. 479
LESLIE, General, attack on Chatterton's Hill, ii. 369
at Maiden Head, ii. 473
advancing to reinforce Cornwallis, iv. 215
at Guilford Court House, iv. 246
ordered to Portsmouth, iv. 287
LEWIS, Colonel, i. 337
LEWIS, Major Andrew, i. 193
taken prisoner, i. 261
LEWIS, Major Geo., attends on Mercer, ii. 483
LEWIS, Lawrence, aide-de-camp to Morgan, v. 200
invited to Mount Vernon, v. 259
affection for Miss Custis, v. 262
marries Miss Custis, v. 285
LEWIS, Robert, Washington's agent, v. 93
LEXINGTON, battle of, i. 392
loss of Americans and British, i. 398
Liberty Tree, i. 361
Light House Point, surprised by Wolfe, i. 245
LINCOLN, General, contemplates descent on Long Island, ii. 345
at Bennington, iii. 133
at Manchester, iii. 145
to Schuyler on Stark's victory, iii. 169
joins Gates, iii. 218
wounded, iii. 241
commands the southern department, iii. 444
unsuccessful siege of Savannah, iii. 481
to Washington in his perplexity, iv. 25
strengthens Charleston, iv. 26
remains within the city, iv. 27
to Washington on the unwillingness of troops to remain, iv. 44
replies to summons to surrender. iv. 46
in favor of evacuating Charleston, iv. 49
skirmish with the British, iv. 279
grand reconnoissance, iv. 282
opens the first parallel before Yorktown, iv. 342
receives the submission of the royal army, iv. 353
returns north with the army, iv. 358
LIPPENCOTT, Captain, hangs Captain Huddy, iv. 364
tried and acquitted, iv. 365
LISTON, Mrs., at Washington's farewell dinner, v. 253
Little Egg Harbor, expedition against, iii. 438
Little Meadows, i. 101
Braddock's expedition encamped, i. 164
Little Sarah, case of, v. 159
LITTLE TURTLE decoys Colonel Hardin into an ambush, v. 76
Lively ship of war fires on Breed's Hill, i. 426
LIVINGSTON, Brockholst, in correspondence with Schuyler, iii. 208
to Schuyler on the prospect of a battle, iii. 208
LIVINGSTON, Major, and Major Brown take Fort Chamblee, ii. 83
drive Colonel Maclean back, ii. 87
LIVINGSTON, Colonel, joins Schuyler, iii. 174
cannonades the Vulture, iv. 106
LIVINGSTON, Henry Brockholst, on the state of affairs at Ticonderoga, iii. 92
LIVINGSTON, Peter R., ii. 350
LIVINGSTON, Peter Van Burgh, address to Washington, i. 450
LIVINGSTON, Judge Robert R., ii. 44
suggests Arnold as commander of West Point, iv. 74
at the inauguration of Washington, iv. 474
LIVINGSTON, Walter, in the treasury board, v. 4
LIVINGSTON, William, Brig. Gen., ii. 240
sends word of the British plans, ii. 298
to Washington, ii. 417
Logstown, Council of Indians at, i. 64, 71, 333
London Chronicle, remarks on General Burgoyne, ii. 166
LONG, Col., commands the batteaux, iii. 104
arrives at Fort Anne, iii. 106
retreats to Fort Edward, iii. 108
Long Island, Battle of, ii. 291
landing of the British, ii. 293
British occupy Flatbush, ii. 295
reinforced by Hessians, ii. 298
De Heister reaches Flatbush, ii. 298
plan of the British, ii. 299
nocturnal march, ii. 300
occupy the Bedford pass, ii. 300
Gen. Grant engages Lord Stirling, ii. 302
Sir Henry Clinton turns the American left, ii. 303
Sullivan's division defeated, ii. 303
Lord Stirling surrounded, ii. 305
forbearance of the British, ii. 307
killed and wounded, ii. 307
fatal neglect, ii. 308
retreat from, ii. 313
described by a witness, ii. 314
midnight gun, ii. 314

Long Island tradition, ii. 316
alarm of the British, ii. 316
in possession of the British, ii. 318
Lossing, Benson J., on portraits of Washington, (appendix,) i. 456
Loudon, Earl of, i. 209
implied censure of Washington, i. 229
arrives at Albany, i. 230
in winter quarters, i. 231
reception of Washington, i. 234
sets sail for Halifax, i. 235
joins Admiral Holbourne at Halifax, i. 237
returns to New York, i. 237
relieved from command, i. 241
Louisburg to be attacked, i. 235
another attempt to be made, i. 241
invested, i. 245
captured, i. 245
Lovel, General, commands expedition against Penobscot, iii. 472
at first repulsed, but effects a landing, iii. 472
besieges the fort, iii. 472
sends for reinforcements, iii. 472
disastrous retreat, iii. 473
Lovell, James, to Gates on the command, iii. 56
to Gates on his position, iii. 60
to Gates, iii. 293
invocation to Gates, iii. 301
Lowantica Valley, iii. 5
Loyalists in the revolution, ii. 345
Luzerne, Chevalier de la, visits Washington, iii. 479
and Arnold, iv. 36
requests ships to oppose Arnold, iv. 257
banquet to the officers, iv. 319
to Washington on the position of Lafayette, v. 68
Lyman, General, i. 200
Lynch, Thomas, on committee to confer with Washington, ii. 74
on the bombardment of Boston, ii. 75

M.

McCall, Major, at the battle of the Cowpens, iv. 219
McCrea, Jane, iii. 142
murdered by Indians, iii. 143
its effect, iii. 144
the story of her murder, (note,) iii. 145
McDougall, General, strengthens Heath's position, ii. 357
in command at Chatterton's Hill, ii. 368
at Morristown, ii. 466
commands at Peekskill, iii. 29
fires the barracks and retires, iii. 29
commands at Peekskill, iii. 64
commands in the Highlands, iii. 362, 445
joins Gates, iii. 436
commands at West Point, iii. 461
death of, iv. 444
McDowell, Colonel, in the battle of King's Mountain, iv. 175
McGillivray, represents the Creeks, v. 63
McGowan's Ford, affair at, iv. 230
McGowan's Pass, relinquished by the British, iv. 405
McHenry, Major James, breakfasts with Arnold, iv. 120
secretary of war, v. 229
to Washington on the command of the army, v. 272
McLane, Captain Allen, brings word of intended attack, iii. 302
attacks the enemy's van, iii. 302
routs the picket guard, iii. 362
expedition against Paulus Hook, iii. 475
McLeod, Captain, attempt to surprise Jefferson, iv. 289
McPherson, Major, to intercept Simcoe, iv. 291
skirmish with Captain Shank, iv. 290
Mackay, Captain, i. 114
arrives at Washington's camp, i. 117
Mackenzie, Captain Robert, to Washington, i. 370
Maclean, Colonel, and his Highland emigrants, ii. 84
driven back by Majors Brown and Livingston, ii. 87
at Quebec, ii. 119
loyalty, ii. 121
Madison, James, member of Congress, v. 6
ceremonials of the government, v. 60
remonstrates with Washington on his intention to retire, v. 110
prepares a valedictory address for Washington, v. 114
debate on Jefferson's report, v. 186
Magaw, Colonel, ii. 266
commands Fort Washington, ii. 361
cannonades the British frigates, ii. 366
in favor of holding Fort Washington, ii. 393
refuses to surrender, ii. 394
disposition for defence, ii. 395
Majoribanks, Major, at Eutaw Springs, iv. 336
falls back, iv. 338
Malmedy, Col., at Eutaw Springs, iv. 335
Manchester, British maraud, iv. 268
Manchester, Duke of, compares the conduct of Clinton and Dunmore, ii. 158
remarks on siege of Boston, ii. 185
Manly, Captain, captures munitions of war, ii. 102
Marbois, Barbé, iii. 479
Marion, Francis, his character, iv. 180
bye names, iv. 181
pursued by Tarleton, iv. 181
capture of Fort Watson, iv. 296
capture of Fort Motte, iv. 297
attack on Colonel Coates, iv. 303
controls the lower Santee, iv. 333
joins Greene, iv. 324
at Eutaw Springs, iv. 335
Markoe, Capt., escorts Washington, i. 442
Marsh, Rev. John, letter relative to plot in New York, (note,) ii. 232
Marshall, Judge, on Lee's retreat, iii. 408
envoy to France, v. 268
Martha's Vineyard ravaged by the British, iii. 428

MARTIN, Colonel, i. 214
Maryland, General Assembly, confidence in Washington, v. 227
Maryland troops described. ii. 19
sharpshooting, ii. 19
described by Graydon, ii. 267
MASON, Mr., divulges terms of treaty, v. 216
MASON, George, friend of Washington, i. 311
to Washington on non-importation, i. 319
drafts plan of association for the non-importation and use of British goods subject to duty, i. 321
Massachusetts General Court of, advise a Congress, i. 309
petition the king for relief, i. 314
urge the other colonial Legislatures to join for redress, i. 314
refuse to rescind the resolution, i. 314
protest against military occupation, i. 325
refuse to transact business, i. 326
transferred to Cambridge, i. 326
resolution against a standing army, i. 326
refuse to provide for the troops, i. 326
prorogued, i. 326
Assembly recommend a General Congress, i. 350
general election, i. 382
semi-belligerent state of affairs, i. 384
Congress of, raises troops, i. 401
prepare to receive Washington, i. 452
send a deputation to meet Washington, i. 452
address of welcome to General Lee, i. 452
number of troops, ii. 6
their destitution, ii. 9
Washington's apology, ii. 9
liberality, ii. 13
asks for troops, ii. 19
Rhode Island and Connecticut fit out armed vessels, ii. 70
passes an act for fitting out armed vessels, ii. 72
insurrection, iv. 451
quelled, iv. 456
MATHEW, General, in the attack on Fort Washington, ii. 397
expedition against the Chesapeake, iii. 458
takes Portsmouth, iii. 458
ravages the neighborhood. iii. 459
MATHEWS, Colonel, taken prisoner, iii. 265
MATHEWS, John, on committee to confer with Washington, iv. 33
Matson's Ford, Lafayette posted on, iii. 377
MATTHEWS, David, mayor of New York apprehended, ii. 229
detained for trial, ii. 231
MAWHOOD, Colonel, at Princeton, ii. 476
attacks Mercer, ii. 477
retreats towards Trenton, ii. 479
MAXWELL, General, at Morristown, ii. 463
commands light troops, iii. 182
skirmish with the British, iii. 185
engages the enemy's vanguard, iii. 188
sent to the Jerseys, iii. 379
ordered to harass the enemy, iii. 388
MAYNARDS, Judge, i. 60
MEADE, Colonel, Washington's aide-de-camp, iii. 4
Mecklenburg, spirit of the inhabitants, iv. 170
MEIGS, Colonel, enterprise against Sag-Habor, iii. 52
struck while attempting to suppress a mutiny, iv. 38
MERCER, Captain George, Washington's aide-de-camp, i. 207
MERCER, George, declines to act as distributor of stamps, i. 310
MERCER, Hugh, account of, i. 155
arrives at Fort Cumberland wounded, i. 187
with Colonel Armstrong, i. 221
wounded, i. 222
accompanies Washington on a tour of inspection, i. 225
a visitor at Mount Vernon, i. 285
disciplines militia, i. 385
about marching to Williamsburg, i. 399
made brigadier general, ii. 239
joins the army, ii. 239
appointed to a command, ii. 240
on the abandonment of New York, ii. 330
conversation with Washington on resistance, ii. 421
leads the advance on Princeton, ii. 475
encounters Colonel Mawhood, ii. 477
wounded, ii. 477
death, ii. 484
character, ii. 484
MIDDLETON, Cornet, sent in pursuit of Champe, iv. 154
MIFFLIN, General, urges Lee's appointment as second in command, i. 414
aide-de-camp to Washington, ii. 13
secretary to Washington, ii. 76
suggests a name for the captured mortar, ii. 103
Adjutant General, manners and entertainments, ii. 114
promoted, ii. 206
encamped near Kingsbridge, ii. 218
characterized by Graydon, ii. 266
discipline of his troops, ii. 291
arrives with troops, ii. 310
observes movement among the British ships, ii. 311
premature retreat, ii. 315
returns to the lines, ii. 315
retreats in safety, ii. 316
sent to Philadelphia for aid, ii. 408
at Philadelphia, ii. 428
supports the claims of Conway, iii. 277
opposition to Washington, iii. 277
member of the Board of War, iii. 301
to Gates on Conway's letter, iii. 315
meets Washington, iv. 456
receives Washington, iv. 468
case of the Little Sarah, v. 159
MILES, Colonel, commands battalion, ii. 266
at Brooklyn, ii. 296
Militia system, its inefficiency, i. 225
organization of, in Massachusetts, i. 384
Ministerial Army. i. 413

Minute men rally under Gen. Heath, i. 396
form a camp, i. 401
Mirepoix, Marquis de, i. 137
Mischianza in honor of Sir William Howe, ii. 372
Mississippi, navigation of, v. 3
Monckton, Brigadier, in the expedition against Quebec, i. 268
commands battery at Point Levi, i. 270
wounded, i. 277
Monckton, Col., killed in an attack on Wayne, iii. 399
burial, iii. 401
Monk's Corner, Brigadier-General Huger at, iv. 46
surprised by Tarleton, iv. 48
Monmouth Court House, battle of, iii. 397
killed and wounded, iii. 401
Monro, Colonel, in command of Fort William Henry, i. 235
Monroe, James, in the advance against Trenton, ii. 452
takes two cannon, ii. 453
remonstrates against Hamilton, v. 193
minister to France, v. 196
reception in France, v. 196
recalled, v. 242
to Washington on an intercepted letter, v. 242
address to by M. Barras, v. 265
Montcalm, his operations, i. 230
takes Oswego, i. 231
returns in triumph to Montreal, i. 231
again takes the field, i. 235
attacks Fort William Henry, i. 236
captures and destroys it, i. 236
returns to Canada, i. 236
prepares his defence, i. 248
repulses Abercrombie, i. 249
in command of Quebec, i. 269
abandons his intrenchments, i. 275
sends for reinforcements, i. 275
advances against Wolfe, i. 275
receives his death wound, i. 277
to General Townsend, i. 277
to De Ramsay, i. 277
his death, i. 278
Montgomery, Richard, at the landing before Louisburg, i. 244
appointed brigadier general, i. 414
at Ticonderoga, ii. 44
birth and services, ii. 44
emigrates to New York and marries, ii. 44
appointed brigadier general, ii. 45
appearance and manners, ii. 45
embarkation for the Isle aux Noix, ii. 47
invests St. Johns, ii. 59
presses the siege of St. Johns, ii. 83
to Carleton on the treatment of prisoners, ii. 84
takes St. Johns, ii. 86
treatment of prisoners, ii. 86
proceeds to Montreal, ii. 87
takes Montreal, ii. 91
prepares to descend the St. Lawrence, ii. 92
to Schuyler on insubordination of troops, ii. 92
annoyances, ii. 92
intention to resign, ii. 96
joins Arnold, ii. 129
arrives before Quebec, ii. 141
plan of attack, ii. 142
strength of force, ii. 142
on Arnold and his troops, ii. 142
summons Quebec to surrender, ii. 142
to Carleton, ii. 142
prepares to attack, ii. 143
efforts to incite the inhabitants, ii. 143
anecdote, ii. 144
project of an escalade, ii. 145
plan of attack, ii. 145
the attack, ii. 146
leads his men, ii. 147
surprises the picket, ii. 147
death, ii. 147
burial, ii. 151
Montgomery, Major, attack on Fort Griswold, iv. 314
Montour, Andw., acts as interpreter, i. 49
accompanies Adjutant Muse, i. 115
Montreal, capitulates to Amherst, i. 281
taken by Montgomery, ii. 91
Montresor, Captain, enters the deserted American works, ii. 316
bearer of flag to Washington, ii. 343
Morgan, Daniel, arrives at camp, ii. 19
in the attack on Quebec, ii. 148
takes command, ii. 149
carries two batteries, ii. 149
hemmed in, brave defence and surrender, ii. 151
exchanged, ii. 344
recommended to the command of a rifle regiment, ii. 344
mans the lines, ii. 366
sent to fight the Indians, iii. 132
attacks the enemy, iii. 213
effect of his corps on the enemy, iii. 216
to attack Burgoyne, iii. 237
harasses the enemy, iii. 239
to reinforce Maxwell, iii. 389
at Charlotte, iv. 184
detached to South Carolina, iv. 189
on his way to Ninety Six, iv. 216
retreats from Tarleton, iv. 217
at the Cowpens, iv. 218
reasons for selecting, iv. 218
disposition of troops, iv. 219
battle of the Cowpens, iv. 220
spoils taken, iv. 222
pushes for the Catawba, iv. 222
crosses the Catawba, iv. 224
approach of Cornwallis, iv. 226
pushes for the Yadkin, iv. 231
correspondence with Washington, v. 190
left with detachment, v. 203
Morocco, treaty with, v. 4
Morris, Captain, wins Miss Philipse, i. 211
wounded at Sullivan's Island, ii. 276
Morris, Governor, appoints commissioners, i. 140
at Alexandria, i. 145
to Croghan, i. 148
Morris, Gouverneur, on Gates, iii. 176
on Pennsylvania, iii. 348

on the French crisis, v. 33
differs from Jefferson, v. 34
to Washington on the French revolution, v. 35
on the same, v. 69
to Washington on Lafayette, v. 70
to Washington on affairs in France, v. 87
minister to France, v. 137
representation of affairs in France, v. 137
concerning Lafayette and the Reign of Terror, v. 139
relative to Louis XVI., v. 141
on the successes of France, v. 142
to Jefferson on Genot, v. 146
recalled, v. 196
Morris, Robert, sends money to Washington, ii. 468
patriotic exertions, iv. 277
entertains Washington, iv. 315
Morris, Colonel Roger, ii. 338
Morristown, its position, iii. 4
sufferings of the American army at, iv. 1
Mothe, Admiral de Bois de la, arrives at Louisburg, i. 237
Moulder, Captain, at Princeton, ii. 478
Moultrie, Colonel Wm., commands at Sullivan's Island, ii. 272
glorious defence, ii. 277
receives thanks of Congress, ii. 277
proclamation, v. 188
Mount Defiance, strategetical position, ii. 262
Mount Hope, fortified by Burgoyne, iii. 101
Mount Independence, evacuated, iii. 103
Mount Vernon, named in honor of Admiral Vernon, i. 21
quiet disturbed, i. 142
situation of, i. 284
assumes a military tone, i. 385
in danger, ii. 110
saved from ravage, iv. 269
revisited by Washington, iv. 320
Mowat, Lieut., destroys Falmouth, ii. 71
Moylan, Colonel, and Wilkinson, iii. 342
Muhlenberg, Gen., near Suffolk, iv. 263
encounters General Phillips, iv. 267
Mulgrave, Major, to embark, ii. 177
Murdering Town, i. 84
Murray, Brigadier, with Wolfe, i. 268
detached to operate against shipping above Quebec, i. 272
breaks the French centre, i. 276
attacks De Levi, i. 279
is repulsed, i. 279
retreats into Quebec, i. 279
desperate condition, i. 279
arrival of a British fleet, i. 279
ordered to advance against Montreal, i. 280
ascends the river, i. 280
Murray, William Vans, minister to France, v. 287
Murray, Mrs., anecdote, ii. 335
Muse, Major, teaches Washington the art of war, i. 59
arrives in camp, i. 115
charged with cowardice, i. 124
obtains grant of land, (note), i. 337
Musgrave, Colonel, encamped, iii. 261
takes post in Chew's House, iii. 263
Muskingum, i. 50
Mutiny of American troops, iv. 88

N.

Nash, Gen., killed at Germantown, iii. 265
National Bank, v. 79
National Gazette, edited by Philip Freneau, v. 106
Navigation Laws, i. 299
Nelson, Gen. Thos., opposes Arnold, iv. 207
called on for troops, iv. 317
patriotism, iv. 329
another proof, iv. 343
Nelson, Mr., Secretary, anecdote, iv. 343
Neutral ground, iv. 109
Nevil, General, house of, assailed, v. 198
Newark surprised by the British, iv. 6
New Bedford ravaged by the British, iii. 428
New England resists the project of taxation, i. 304
continues the disuse of tea, i. 328
army, its situation, i. 410
New Hampshire sends volunteers, i. 401
grants, i. 402
New Haven taken by the British, iii. 462
New Jersey, opinion of the revolution, ii. 419
prison ship, iii. 22
militia turn out with alacrity, iii. 76
troops, discontent of, iii. 452
Legislature of, satisfies the troops, iii. 455
invaded by Knyphausen, iv. 56
evacuated, iv. 65
troops, mutiny of, iv. 208
New London, expedition against, iv. 312
taken by Arnold, iv. 313
New Orleans, v. 3
Newport, situation of, iii. 419
Newtown, battle at, iii. 456
New York resents the attempt against the independence of the judiciary, i. 302
proceedings in regard to stamp act, i. 310
resists the mutiny act, i. 314
powers of Governor and Assembly suspended, i. 314
at the revolution, i. 446
events in, ii. 33
in a panic at Lee's approach, ii. 138
adverse influences in, ii. 156
arrival of Sir Henry Clinton ii. 157
its effects, ii. 157
letters descriptive of, ii. 192
batteries at, (note,) ii. 207
alarm of conspiracy, ii. 228
arrival of British troops, ii. 233
further arrivals, ii. 234
popular joy at the declaration of independence, ii. 243
destruction of the statue of George III., ii. 243
arrival of more ships, ii. 244
panic of the people, ii. 245
convention at White Plains, ii. 246
arrival of Lord Howe, ii. 249

station secret committee in New York, ii. 250
military measures, ii. 256
arrival of a hundred sail, ii. 281
forces collected in and about, ii. 283
convention order out levies, ii. 286
panic and distress, ii. 295
terror of the inhabitants, ii. 302
question of its destruction, ii 319
letters of British officers relative to, ii. 319
British ships come opposite, ii. 321
question of abandonment, ii. 329
left by Congress to the discretion of Washington, ii. 331
agitations in, ii. 332
more ships move up the Sound, ii. 332
evacuated by Putnam, ii. 335
conflagration in, ii. 342
ascribed to American incendiaries, ii. 342
Committee of Safety, to Washington on the defence of the Highlands, ii. 350
in perturbation on account of French fleet, iii. 417
bay frozen over, iv. 5
scarcity of food and fuel, iv. 5
reduction of, meditated, iv. 36
to be attacked, iv. 276
failure of intended attack on, iv. 279
alarm in, iv. 363
preparations to evacuate, iv. 391
evacuated, iv. 406
excitement concerning the French war, v. 171
Niagara, expedition against, i. 200
rallying place for Indians, Tories, &c., iii. 432
Nichols, Colonel, at Bennington, iii. 166
Nicholson, John, Indian interpreter, i. 333
Nicholson, Commodore, reception of Washington at New York, iv. 470
Nicola, Colonel Lewis, extraordinary letter of, iv. 370
Noailles, Viscount de, capitulation of Yorktown, iv. 351
Non-importation Associations, effect on British commerce, i. 326
Nooks Hill, attempt to fortify, i. 179
North, Lord, premier, i. 327
repeals duties except on tea, i. 327
on the right of taxation, i. 327
bill favoring the export of tea, i. 346
surrender of Cornwallis, iv. 356
North Carolina to be invaded, iv. 79
the people and country, iv. 79
North Church used for fuel, ii. 77
Norwalk devastated by the British, iii. 468

O.

Ogden, Capt. Aaron, concerning the exchange of Arnold for André, iv. 137
Ogden, Colonel Matthias, project to capture Prince William Henry, iv. 362
O'Hara, General, at the Yadkin, iv. 232
surrenders the garrison of Yorktown, iv. 354
Ohio Company, formation of, i. 46
despatch Christopher Gist to explore the Ohio, i. 49
establish a trading company at Will's Creek, i. 55
Ohio Tribes incensed at the French, i. 65
Ohio, expedition to the, i. 330
Old South Church, desecration of, ii. 77
Oldham, Colonel, with St. Clair, v. 98
killed, v. 101
Olney, Mrs., and Washington, iv. 438
Onondagas, settlement destroyed by the Americans, iii. 456
Oriskany, battle of, iii. 153
killed and wounded, iii. 155
Orme, Capt. Robert, hopes of success, i. 142
to Washington, i. 143
Osgood, Samuel, in the treasury board, v 4
Oswald, secretary to Arnold in the attack on Quebec, ii. 148
leads forlorn hope, ii. 149
marches to Danbury, iii. 47
at Monmouth Court House, iii. 397
Otis, James, against writs of assistance, i. 302

P.

Paine, Mr., i. 411
Paine, Thomas, ii. 367
on Washington's retreat across the Jerseys, ii. 436
moral qualities of Washington, ii. 437
to Washington on the key of the Bastille, v. 72
Rights of Man reprinted, v. 91
Palfrey, Colonel William, substitutes an original prayer, ii. 114
Palmer, Edmund, a spy, iii. 131
Paris, treaty of peace signed at, iv. 388
Paris, Colonel, dispute with Herkimer, iii 172
killed by Red Jacket, iii. 155
Parker, Colonel, debate on Jefferson's report, v. 187
Parker, Daniel, commissioner to New York, iv. 392
Parker, Commodore Hyde, expedition against Georgia, iii. 442
Parker, Sir Peter, attacks Sullivan's Island, ii. 274
is repulsed, ii. 276
burns the Actæon, ii. 277
Parliament taxes America, i. 303
imposes fresh duties on American imports, i. 313
extends the mutiny act to America, i. 313
importuned by British merchants, i. 325
passes the Boston Port Bill, i. 347
other acts to the injury of Boston, i. 347
Parsons, General, sent to Peekskill, iii. 81
at West Point, iii. 362
Patterson, Colonel, interview with Washington, ii. 253
Patterson, Brigadier General, moves from Savannah, iv. 44

PAULDING, John, and André, iv. 111
Paulus Hook, situation of, iii. 473
carried by Major Lee, iii. 475
relinquished by the British, iv. 405
PEABODY, Nathaniel, on committee to confer with Washington, iv. 33
PEALE, Charles Wilson, portrait of Washington, (appendix,) i. 456
Peekskill, attack on, iii. 29
PELLEW, Edward, Lord Exmouth on Lake Champlain, ii. 390
PENDLETON, Edmund, delegate to the General Congress, i. 359
sets out for Philadelphia, i. 363
against Washington as commander-in-chief, i. 411
Pennsylvania troops described, ii. 19
sharpshooting, ii. 19
described by Graydon, ii. 267
Legislature of, remonstrate against the army going into winter-quarters, iii. 309
troops, their grievances, iv. 194
revolt, iv. 195
march towards Philadelphia, iv. 196
at Princeton, iv. 199
British emissaries in camp, iv. 201
accept propositions offered, iv. 202
mutiny of, iv. 398
Council of, offer to Washington, iv. 414
insurrection in, v. 197
quelled, v. 202
Penobscot, Bay of, British fort at, iii. 471
expedition against, iii. 472
PERCY, Lord, advances to reinforce Colonel Smith, i. 395
continues the retreat, i. 396
conduct of soldiers, i. 396
sharp skirmishing, i. 396
narrow escape, i. 396
failure of ammunition, i. 397
to lead the attack against Dorchester Heights, ii. 177
on Long Island, ii. 295
leaves Flatlands in Clinton's division, ii. 299
attacks the American lines, ii. 367
to reinforce Howe, ii. 372
menaces Fort Washington, ii. 377
PETERS, Richard, secretary to Governor Morris, i. 147
in camp, i. 157
secretary to board of war and ordnance, ii. 209
PETERS, Judge, receives Washington, iv. 468
Petersburg, ravaged by the British, iv. 267
PEROUNEY, Chevalier de, i. 122
Philadelphia during the battle of Brandywine, iii. 194
strength of the British, iii. 296
question of attack on, iii. 296
British defences, iii. 297
British army described, iii. 349
number of British in, iii. 374
preparations to evacuate, iii. 385
evacuated by the British, iii. 388
PHILIPSE, Miss Mary, i. 210
PHILLIPS, General, commands artillery, iii. 87
fortifies Sugar Hill, iii. 103
demurs to the expedition against Bennington, iii. 161
in the attack on Gates, iii. 235
covers Burgoyne's retreat, iii. 239
visits Baroness de Riedesel, iii. 249
sails from New York, iv. 265
arrives at Portsmouth, iv. 266
marauds the country, iv. 267
regains Petersburg, iv. 269
death of, iv. 270
Phipps' Farm, battery erected on, ii. 109
Phœnix ship of war sails up the Hudson, ii. 245
move up near Fort Montgomery, ii. 257
and Rose retreat, ii. 289
Piankeshas, king of, i. 52
interview with the French ambassadors, i. 52
PICHON, M., to Wm. Vans Murray, v. 286
PICKENS, General, crosses the Dan, iv. 237
affair with Pyle's loyalists, iv. 240
joins Greene, iv. 334
at Eutaw Springs, iv. 335
PICKERING, Colonel Timothy, with the Essex militia, i. 397
quartermaster-general, iv. 80
secretary of war, v. 211
to Washington urging his return, v. 220
secretary of state, v. 229
recommends Hamilton as second in command, v. 275
PIEL, Lieutenant, character of Rahl, ii. 457
account of treatment of Hessian prisoners, ii. 459
PIERCE, Leigh, anecdote of Washington, iv. 457
PIGOT, Gen., ascends Breed's Hill, i. 433
orders a retreat, i. 433
PIGOTT, General Sir Robert, commands at Rhode Island, iii. 419
amount and disposition of force, iii. 419
Pilgrims, i. 300
PINCKNEY, Colonel, commands Fort Moultrie, iv. 28
cannonades the British fleet, iv. 45
withdraws with part of the garrison from Fort Moultrie, iv. 45
PINCKNEY, Mr., concerning British aggressions, v. 191
PINCKNEY, Charles Cotesworth, minister to France, v. 242
dismissed by the French Government, v. 266
envoy to France, v. 268
appointed major general, v. 275
his acceptance, v. 281
PINCKNEY, Thomas, wishes to be relieved, v. 242
PINE, portrait of Washington, (appendix,) i. 457
Pine's Bridge, ii. 372
Piqua, Indian Town, i. 52
PITCAIRN, Major, sent forward to Concord, i. 392

enters Lexington, i. 392
orders the American yeomanry to disperse, i. 392
puts them to flight, i. 393
slain at Bunker's Hill, i. 439
Pitt, William, administration, i. 241
Pittsburg, embryo city, i. 331
Plains of Abraham, i. 270
taken possession of by Wolfe, i. 275
battle, i. 276
victory of the English, i. 277
Pomeroy, Seth, nominated general officer, i. 383
appointed brigadier general, i. 414
in favor of occupying Charleston heights, i. 422
sharpshooting, i. 438
attempts to rally the troops, i. 455
Pontiac's War, i. 297
Pontiac and Colonel Croghan, i. 332
Poor, General, to attack Burgoyne, iii. 237
attacks the enemy, iii. 237
Porterfield, Colonel, commands Virginia troops, iv. 84
joins Gates, iv. 85
mortally wounded, iv. 87
Portraits of Washington, (appendix), i. 455
Port Royal Island, landing of Tarleton, iv. 26
Portsmouth, expedition against, iv. 261
Posey, Major, at the storming of Stony Point, iii. 467
Potomac river, i. 293
Powder, scarcity of, ii. 23
Powel, brigadier general, in the invasion from Canada, iii. 87
Prayers in Washington's camp, i. 116
Prescott, Colonel William, i. 422
to fortify Bunker's Hill, i. 424
leave Cambridge, i. 424
crosses the Neck, i. 425
ascends Bunker's Hill, i. 425
anxiety, i. 426
inspires confidence, i. 427
sends for reinforcements, i. 429
tenders the command to Warren, i. 433
encourages his men, i. 434
orders a retreat, i. 457
services at Bunker's Hill, i. 440
at Throg's Neck, ii. 357
Prescott, General, and Ethan Allen, ii. 64
confined in jail, ii. 107
commands British forces in Rhode Island, iii. 112
exchanged for Lee, iii. 377
Preston, Major, in command of St. Johns, ii. 59
manful resistance, ii. 83
capitulates, ii. 86
Prevost, General, ordered to attack Georgia, iii. 442
takes Sunbury, iii. 444
arrives at Savannah and takes command, iii. 444
Prevost, Bishop, iv. 475
Prideaux, Brigadier General, to attack Fort Niagara, i. 266
embarks at Oswego, i. 262
besieges Fort Niagara, i. 266
is killed, i. 266
Prince William Henry, project to capture, iv. 362
Princeton, British forces assembled at, ii. 470
action at, ii. 478
killed and wounded, ii. 479
Pringle, Captain, conducts British armament on Lake Champlain, ii. 336
engages Arnold, ii. 347
draws off for the night, ii. 388
Prisoners, exchange of, iii. 11
Province Island, fortified by General Howe, iii. 284
Pulaski, Count, a volunteer, iii. 183
obtains a command, iii. 295
infantry massacred by Ferguson, iii. 439
Pusaz, Hugh de, Bishop of Durham, his wealth and retinue, i. 5
prepares to join the crusade, but is induced to remain, i. 6
Putnam, Captain, despatched to Cambridge, i. 432
Putnam, Israel, detached to reconnoitre, i. 246
at Boston, i. 376
his history, i. 376
hears of the battle of Lexington, i. 398
in command of a regiment, i. 401
appointed major general, i. 414
in command of Connecticut troops, i. 420
in favor of occupying Charlestown heights, i. 422
opinion of American soldiers, i. 423
joins Prescott, i. 424
advises fortifying Breed's Hill, i. 425
asks for reinforcements, i. 429
arrives at the redoubt, i. 430
words with Prescott, i. 430
orders a breastwork on Bunker's Hill, i. 430
suggests a novel rampart, i. 431
rallies the reinforcements, i. 435
attempts to rally the troops, i. 438
a leading spirit at Bunker's Hill, i. 440
at Prospect Hill, ii. 4
his merits, ii. 12
complimented by Washington, ii. 17
commands the centre, ii. 18
and his female prize, ii. 68
christens the captured mortar, ii. 102
takes possession of Cobble Hill, ii. 107
fortifies Lechmere Point, ii. 107
anecdote of, ii. 109
treats his men to an exploit, ii. 165
ready to attack Boston, ii. 176
appointed to command in New York, ii. 191
military rule, ii. 191
military devices, ii. 279
to Gates on the British force, ii. 280
in command of Long Island, ii. 297
crosses to Long Island, ii. 297
in favor of abandoning New York, ii. 329
to be stationed in New York, ii. 331
retreat from New York, ii. 335

described by Colonel Humphreys, ii. 335
traditional anecdote, ii. 335
loss in the retreat, ii. 335
at McGowan's Pass, ii. 338
commands troops in the Jerseys, ii. 379
takes command of Philadelphia, ii. 428
ordered to Princeton, iii. 5
amount of force, iii. 5
stratagem to conceal his weakness, iii. 6
to command the Hudson, iii. 68
on the alert, iii. 131
to Sir Henry Clinton on Edmund Palmer, iii. 131
force at Peekskill, iii. 222
to Clinton, on the designs of the enemy, iii. 222
to Clinton on the movements of the enemy, iii. 234
prepares for an attack, iii. 224
outmanœuvred by Sir Henry Clinton, iii. 228
to Washington on the movements of the British, iii. 231
desires to attack New York, iii. 288
his "hobby-horse," iii. 290
goes to Connecticut on private matters, iii. 362
near West Point, iii. 436
at West Point, iii. 437
commands at Danbury, iii. 445
at Smith's Clove, iii. 461
seconds the resolutions of Knox, iv. 384
Putnam, Colonel Rufus, directs the works about Kingsbridge, ii. 218
Pyle, Colonel, defeated by Lee and Pickens, iv. 240

Q.

Quaker Hill occupied by the British, iii. 246
Quebec, its situation, i. 269
capitulates, i. 278
alarm caused by Arnold, ii. 121
besieged by Montgomery, ii. 142
the assault, ii. 146
arrival of reinforcements, ii. 200
blockade raised, ii. 201
Quincy, Josiah, at town meetings, i. 361

R.

Rahl, Colonel, attack on Chatterton's Hill, ii. 369
attack on Fort Washington, ii. 396
drives in Colonel Rawlings, ii. 398
in command of Trenton, ii. 442
described, ii. 442
reconnoitres the banks of the Delaware, ii. 444
warned of the attack, ii. 450
alarm at an outpost, ii. 450
relaxes his vigilance, ii. 451
bewildered by the attack, ii. 454
rash charge, ii. 455
wounded, ii. 455
taken prisoner, ii. 455
his character, ii. 457
dying request, ii. 458
death and burial, ii. 458
Ramsey, Colonel, at Monmouth Court House, iii. 397
Randolph, Edmund, nominated attorney general, v. 25
opinions and presence, v. 26
opposed to a national bank, v. 80
to Washington, urging a continuance of office, v. 122
concerning French prizes, v. 155
succeeds Jefferson as secretary of state, v. 183
Fauchet's despatch, v. 221
correspondence with Washington, v. 223
resigns, v. 224
his vindication, v. 227
to Bushrod Washington, his contrition, v. 228
Randolph, Peyton, heads a company of volunteers, i. 220
elected moderator, i. 324, 351
delegate to General Congress, i. 359
president of second Congress, i. 408
return to Virginia Assembly, i. 408
Randolph, of Tuckahoe, and his horse Shakespeare, i. 286
Rank of officers, i. 133
Rapelye, Mrs., betrays the Americans, ii. 316
Rawdon, Lord, iii 226
embarks from New York, iv. 28
at Camden, iv. 81
concentrates his forces at Camden, iv. 86
on the American yeomanry, iv. 178
affair at Hobkirk's Hill, iv. 295
evacuates Camden, iv. 296
enters Ninety-Six, iv. 298
pursues Grant, iv. 298
at Orangeburg, iv. 298
departs for Europe, iv. 304
Rawlings, Colonel, at Fort Washington, ii. 395
driven in by Rahl, ii. 398
Rawlins bleeds Washington, v. 294
Red Hook, battery erected at, ii. 292
cannonaded, ii. 302
Red Jacket at Oriskany, iii. 155
Reed, Colonel Joseph, ordered to assist Prescott, i. 429
repulses General Howe, i. 454
maintains his position, i. 458
Washington's secretary, ii. 14
remonstrance of friends, ii. 14
on scarcity of powder, ii. 24
on reserve of ammunition, ii. 50
departs for Philadelphia, ii. 75
meets Lieutenant Brown, ii. 252
recognition of Washington's rank, ii. 252
declines to receive the letter, ii. 252
on sectional jealousies, ii. 266
on the policy of remaining in New York, ii. 282
relative to Clinton's arrival at New York. ii. 282
on the British, ii. 285
on Putnam's happiness, ii. 297

to his wife, ii. 319
on the awkward position of the army, ii. 321
concerning desertions, ii 323
to his wife, anxieties, ii. 332
reports a skirmish, ii. 339
insolence of British troops, ii. 340
to his wife, from Harlem Heights, ii. 353
opposed to holding Fort Washington, ii. 393
to Lee, disparaging to Washington, ii. 405
despatched to Burlington, ii. 408
rebuke from Washington, ii. 410
reconcillation, (note,) ii. 417
on Washington's return to Princeton, ii. 425
stationed at Bristol, ii. 440
marches to Bordentown, ii. 464
to Washington from Trenton, ii. 466
sends in pursuit of Donop, ii. 467
surprises a British picket, ii. 471
scours the country, ii. 484
appeal to Washington, iii. 73
to Gates, comparing exploits, iii. 297
to Wharton, relative to attack on Philadelphia, iii. 299
narrow escape of, iii. 303
on keeping the field, iii. 306
reply to Johnstone, iii. 383
drafts proclamation for Arnold, iv. 11
to Greene, on Arnold's conduct, iv. 13
president of the executive council of Pennsylvania, iv. 13
increased powers, iv. 41
revolt of the Pennsylvania line, iv. 200
arrives at Princeton, iv. 201
propositions to the troops, iv. 201
Reign of Terror, commencement of, v. 138
Repaeti, Captain, i. 78, 80
Republicans, party formed, v. 82
Revolution commenced, i. 401
trials of the, iv. 2
Reynell, Lieutenant, iii. 215
Rhode Island, sends volunteers, i. 401
troops, their fine condition, ii. 7
Massachusetts and Connecticut fit out armed vessels, ii. 70
(proper,) situation of, iii. 419
plan of attack, iii. 419
siege abandoned, iii. 425
retreat from, iii. 426
evacuated by the British, iii. 479
Richardson, Colonel, joins Washington at New York, ii. 323
Richmond in Arnold's possession, iv 206
Riedesel, Baron, in Canada, ii. 224
in the invasion from Canada, iii. 87
attacks St. Clair's rear-guard, iii. 108
demurs to the expedition against Bennington, iii. 161
in the attack on Gates, iii. 235
covers Burgoyne's retreat, iii. 239
Riedesel, Baroness de, with Burgoyne's army, iii. 207
account of movement, iii. 207
dines in camp, iii. 240
during the battle, iii. 240
describes burial of General Fraser, iii. 242
exposed to the horrors of war, iii. 248
scarcity of water, iii. 249
reception by Schuyler, iii. 254
Rifle dress, origin of, i. 255
Riker, Lieutenant, ii. 94
Robertson, miniature of Washington, (appendix,) i. 458
Robertson, General, communicates with General Howe, ii. 178
Robertson, Lieutenant General, on commission concerning Andre, iv. 139
to Washington on André, iv. 140
Robinson, Col. Beverly, and Washington, i. 210
in the attack against Fort Montgomery, iii. 226
connection with Arnold's treason, iv. 102
attempted interview, iv. 103
to Washington, interceding for André, iv. 124
accompanies commission, iv. 139
Robinson, Speaker, thanks Washington on behalf of the colony, i. 282
objects to Patrick Henry's resolutions, i. 303
Rochambeau, Count de, expected, iv. 35
arrives at Newport, iv. 60
past history, iv. 60
to Vergennes on the state of affairs, iv. 70
his troops, iv. 71
informs Washington of ships to be sent to the Chesapeake, iv. 257
arranges plan of campaign with Washington, iv. 260
interview with Washington, iv. 275
arrival with troops, iv. 277
at Dobb's Ferry, iv. 280
reconnoitres, iv. 282
awkward predicament, iv. 283
breaks up his camp, iv. 310
visits West Point with Washington, iv 311
pecuniary assistance, iv. 315
accompanies Washington, iv. 320
addresses the Gatinais grenadiers, iv. 345
at Williamsburg, iv. 358
at Verplanck's Point, iv. 372
retrospect of, v. 175
Rochefoucauld, Liancourt, and Louis XVI., v. 35
Rockaway Bridge, Washington at, iv. 62
Rocky Mount attacked by Sumner, iv. 83
Rodney, to advance against the British, iii. 180
Rogers, Col. Robert, the renegade, ii. 345
at Mamaroneck, ii. 364
Romilly, Sir Thomas, on Arnold's conduct, (note,) iv. 148
Rose, ship of war, sails up the Hudson, ii. 245
moves up near Fort Montgomery, ii. 257
and Phœnix retreat, ii. 289
Ross, Major, capitulation of Yorktown, iv. 352
Rugeley, Colonel, taken by Colonel Washington, iv. 188
Rush, Dr. Benjamin, at Mercer's deathbed, ii. 434

RUSSELL, Lieutenant Colonel, takes command of Fort Mifflin, iii. 286
RUTLEDGE, Edward, member of the board of war and ordnance, ii. 209
on committee to confer with Lord Howe, ii. 325
clothed with dictatorial powers, iv. 27
endeavors to rouse the militia, iv. 46
to Washington imploring aid for South Carolina. iv. 100
RUTLEDGE, John, judge of supreme court, v. 26

S.

SACKVILLE, Lord George, and General Lee, i. 379
Sag Harbor, expedition against, iii. 52
SALTONSTALL, Commodore, convoys expedition against Penobscot, iii. 472
Saratoga occupied by Burgoyne, iii. 245
SARGENT, Colonel, estimate of St. Clair's loss, v. 101
SAUNDERS, Admiral, i. 273
Savage Mountain, i. 164
Savannah besieged by D'Estaing and Lincoln, iii. 481
besiegers repulsed, iii. 482
killed and wounded, iii. 482
SCAMMEL, Colonel Alexander, mistake, ii. 314
vigilant guard over André, iv. 133
capture and death, iv. 329
SCAROOYADI accompanies the half-king, i. 106
arrives in camp, i. 113
at Braddock's camp, i. 158
taken by the French, i. 166
his release, i. 167
son killed by mistake, i. 171
remains true to the English, i. 190
accounts for Braddock's defeat, i. 199
opinion of British soldiers, i. 199
SCHUYLER, Philip, appointed major general, i. 414
sets out from Philadelphia, i. 442
his origin and education, i. 442
in the old French war, i. 443
in the expedition against Ticonderoga, i. 443
delegate to Congress, i. 443
sympathy with Washington, i. 443
recollections with Lee, i. 444
letters from, ii. 32
ordered to Ticonderoga, ii. 39
arrives at Ticonderoga, ii. 39
to Washington, picture of a frontier post, ii. 40
complaints to Washington, ii. 41
to Washington, ii. 42
to Washington on invasion of Canada, ii. 43
repairs to Albany, ii. 44
to Washington recommending the employment of savages, ii. 47
to Washington on the expedition to Quebec, ii. 47
returns to Ticonderoga, ii. 48
illness, ii. 48
arrives at the Isle aux Noix, ii. 48
sends Allen and Brown to reconnoitre, ii. 54
skirmish before St. John's, ii. 55
information of the fort, ii. 55
return to the Isle aux Noix, ii. 55
arrival of reinforcements, ii. 55
prepares to invest St. John's, ii. 56
illness, ii. 56
return to Ticonderoga, ii. 56
meets Colonel Warner, ii. 57
on Allen's imprudence, ii. 63
to Washington on his annoyances, ii. 63
to Washington on the Canada expedition, ii. 83
to Congress on the conduct of troops, ii. 93
indignation, ii. 93
high-minded rebuke, ii. 94
intention to retire, ii. 96
to Congress, ii. 96
to Washington, ii. 97
annoyance from sectional prejudice, ii 97
to Washington on the disasters in Canada, ii. 153
urges reinforcements for Canada, ii. 154
besieges and captures Sir John Johnson, ii. 155
conduct applauded by Congress, ii. 155
prejudice against, ii. 203
demands a court of inquiry, ii. 204
question of command with Gates, ii. 260
to Washington concerning the command, ii. 260
arrives at Crown Point, ii. 261
at Ticonderoga, ii. 262
returns to Albany, ii. 263
question of command settled, ii. 263
on the security of the Northern department, iii. 26
direction of affairs, iii. 31
asks a court of inquiry, iii. 32
tenders his resignation, iii. 32
resignation not accepted, iii. 33
to Congress on its resolve, iii. 33
misunderstandings with Congress, iii. 35
reprimanded by Congress, iii. 37
in Philadelphia, iii. 38
takes his seat in Congress, iii. 38
services at Philadelphia, iii. 39
on the point of resigning, iii. 54
report of committee of inquiry, iii. 55
memorial to Congress, iii. 54
reinstated in his command, iii. 60
reception at Albany, iii. 60
on fortifying Mount Independence, iii. 61
enforces cleanliness, iii. 61
at Ticonderoga, iii. 88
hastens to Fort George, iii. 89
to Congress on the invasion from Canada, iii. 89
to Washington, with St. Clair's letter, iii. 91
hopeful letters, iii. 93

to General Herkimer, iii. 95
to Washington on the evacuation of Ticonderoga, iii. 93
throws up works on Moses Creek, iii. 114
to Washington on the enemy's movements, iii. 117
slanders against, iii. 123
desires a scrutiny, iii. 125
summoned to Congress, iii. 125
cause of prejudice against, (note,) iii. 128
retires to Fort Miller, iii. 141
takes post at Stillwater, iii. 145
appeals for reinforcements, iii. 158
recalled to attend court of inquiry, iii. 159
sends relief to Gansevoort, iii. 159
moves from Stillwater, iii. 160
to Duane on the appointment of Gates, iii. 161
to Lincoln on Stark's victory, iii. 169
to Stark on his victory, iii. 169
means augmenting, iii. 174
returns to Albany, iii. 208
promotes the success of the campaign, iii. 208
benevolent conduct, iii. 255
on committee to confer with Washington, iv. 86
to Arnold on Washington's disposition, iv. 41
Schuyler, Mrs., anecdote, i. 444
Scott, Captain, wounded at Sullivan's Island, ii. 276
Scott, General Charles, expedition against Indians, v. 94
Seat of Government, v. 63
Sectional jealousies, Washington to Schuyler, ii. 265
John Adams on, ii. 271
Washington's general order upon, ii. 283
Washington relative to, iii. 26
Sevier, Colonel, in the battle of King's Mountain, iv. 175
Seymour, Colonel Thomas, commands Connecticut light-horse, ii. 268
to Washington, for a discharge of troops, ii. 269
to Gov. Trumbull, explanatory, ii. 270
Shank, Captain, skirmish with McPherson, iv. 290
Sharpe, Governor, i. 132
furnishes waggons, i. 141
Sharpless, portrait of Washington, (appendix,) i. 458
Shaw, Captain, society of the Cincinnati, iv. 302
Shaw, Major, to his father, iii. 268
Washington and the army, iv. 383
Shee, Colonel, ii. 266
Shelburne, Major, and detachment captured, ii. 213
Shelby, Colonel, in the battle of King's Mountain, iv. 175
Shenandoah, Valley of, i. 35
ravaged by Indians, i. 213
Shengis instigates outrages on the colonists, i. 199
at Kittanning, i. 221
Shepard, Colonel, wounded, ii. 364
Sherman, Roger, member of the board of war and ordnance, ii. 209
introduces Gates to Congress, iii. 62
at Washington's inauguration, iv. 475
Shingis, chief of the Delawares, i. 70
blockades Fort Pitt, i. 208
Shippen, Edward, iv. 12
Shippen, Miss Margaret, iv. 12
Shirley, Governor of Massachusetts, i. 145
Shirley, William, to Gov. Morris, i. 161
Shirley, General, expedition against Niagara, i. 200
referred to on a point of rank, i. 247
plan of campaign, i. 200
recalled to England, i. 209
Short Hills, Washington posted at, iv. 59
Shreve, Colonel, retreating, iii. 395
in the fight at Springfield, iv. 63
Shuldham, Admiral, i. 173
Shurtee's Creek, i. 65
Silliman, Gen., rouses the country, iii. 47
joined by Arnold and Wooster, iii. 48
Silver Heels in Braddock's camp, i. 158
Simcoe, Col., accompanies Arnold, iv. 192
devastates Westham, iv. 207
deceives Steuben, iv. 289
ravages, iv. 299
skirmish with Butler, iv. 291
Sireuil, Captain de, slain, iv. 343
Skene, Colonel, joins Burgoyne, iii. 149
suggests an expedition to Bennington, iii. 149
to accompany the expedition, iii. 151
Skenesborough, arrival of flotilla from Ticonderoga, iii. 106
Skinners, iv. 109
Slavery, Washington concerning, v. 298
Smallwood, Colonel, ii. 263
equipment of his battalion, ii. 267
reinforces Washington, ii. 286
bravery of his macaronis, ii. 305
wounded, ii. 370
to co-operate with Rodney, iii. 181
his new militia, iii. 201
stationed on the Catawba, iv. 184
Smith, Joshua Hett, delivers Arnold's letter to Col. Robinson, iv. 104
takes André ashore, iv. 105
accompanies André, iv. 107
parts with André, iv. 109
sent a prisoner to West Point, iv. 128
acquitted, iv. 146
Smith, Lieut. Col., commands expedition against Concord, i. 391
sets out on his march, i. 392
people rising, i. 392
sends for reinforcements, i. 392
sends Major Pitcairn forward, i. 392
arrives at Lexington, i. 393
enters Concord, i. 394
retreats on Boston, i. 394
harassed by the Americans, i. 395
reinforced by Lord Percy, i. 395
Smith, Lieut. Col. Samuel, commands Fort Mifflin, iii. 270
receives thanks of Congress, iii. 275
on the defence of Fort Mifflin, iii. 285

disabled, iii. 286
voted a sword by Congress, iii. 287
Smith, Lieutenant, killed while bearing flag, iii. 263
Smith, William, the historian, on Gage, i. 352
Smith, Chief Justice, William, on commission concerning André, iv. 139
Smith, William S., commissioner to New York, iv. 392
Soldier's claims, i. 330
adjusted, (note,) i. 337
South Carolina, invasion of, iii. 483
condition and population, iv. 23
symptoms of revolt, iv. 81
lower part described, iv. 82
Spain and the Mississippi, v. 5
Specht, Brigadier-General, in command of Burgoyne's camp, iii. 236
Spencer, Joseph, appointed brigadier general, i. 414
offended on a question of rank, ii. 12
at Roxbury, ii. 18
at Harlem, ii. 333
Spicer, Major, at Brandywine. iii. 189
Spotswood, Colonel Alexander, forms Washington's guard, iii. 44
Springfield, N. J., American troops at, iv. 59
fight at, iv. 63
burned by the British, iv. 65
Stamp Act projected, i. 303
its passage, i. 304
first opposition to, i. 304
preparations to enforce it, i. 309
popular agitation, i. 310
repealed, i. 313
Stanislaus, King, makes General Lee his aid-de-camp, i. 379
friendship for General Lee, i. 380
Stanwix, Colonel, i. 234
Stark, John, carries the alarm, i. 398
arrives with troops from New Haven, i. 420
to reinforce Prescott, i. 429
arrives at Bunker's Hill, i. 432
anecdote, i. 432
repulses General Howe, i. 434
maintains his position, i. 438
leads the advance guard, ii. 452
at Bennington, iii. 133
appeal to his patriotism, iii. 158
at Bennington, iii. 163
serves on his own responsibility, iii. 163
insubordination, iii. 164
sallies out and meets the enemy, iii. 164
attacks Baum, iii. 166
defeats Baum, iii. 167
to Lafayette, iii. 334
forage in Westchester county, iv. 167
Staten Island, British throwing up works, ii. 240
treachery of the people, ii. 240
St. Clair, Colonel, detached to Three Rivers, ii. 221
takes command of Ticonderoga, iii. 60
announces the appearance of the enemy, iii. 80
to Schuyler on Burgoyne's force, iii 90
on desperate state of Ticonderoga, iii. 92
his garrison, iii. 94
evacuates Ticonderoga, iii. 96
calls a council of war, iii. 103
evacuates Ticonderoga and Mount Independence, iii. 103
his retreat, iii. 104
attacked by General Fraser iii. 108
reaches Fort Edward, iii. 110
summoned to Congress, iii. 120
insinuations against, iv. 152
in the camp of the Pennsylvania mutineers, iv. 199
sent to reinforce Greene, iv. 358
receives Washington, iv. 469
at Washington's inauguration, iv. 475
commands Indian expedition, v. 84
cautioned by Washington, v. 84
his army, v. 94
character and equipment, v. 95
on his march, v. 95
desertions, v. 96
his encampment, v. 97
surprised by Indians, v. 98
conduct in the battle, v. 99
flight of, v. 100
reach Fort Jefferson, v. 100
arrives at Fort Washington, v. 100
asks for a court of inquiry, v. 110
resigns his commission, v. 111
exculpated by House of Representatives, v. 112
St. Clair, Sir John, precedes Braddock, i. 139
to Governor Morris, i. 139
engages waggons and horses, i. 141
his wrath at Fort Cumberland, i. 147
in the advance to Fort Duquesne, i. 174
orders Washington to Williamsburg, i. 253
Steele, Mrs. Elizabeth, and General Greene, iv. 232
Stephens, Col. Adam, joins Washington, i. 95
promoted by Washington, i. 114
with Washington, i. 193
at Princeton, ii. 418
at the battle of Germantown, iii. 264
dismissed, iii. 300
Sterling, Colonel, lands at Fort Washington, ii. 397
at Princeton, ii. 418
mortally wounded, iv. 57
Steuben, Baron, arrival in camp, iii. 355
his history, iii. 355
to Washington, on his desire to serve America, iii. 356
proceeds to Congress, iii. 356
appointed inspector general, iii. 357
disciplines the army, iii. 358
anecdotes of, iii. 359
character and habits, iii. 359
effect of his discipline, iii. 397
to preside over court of inquiry, iv. 157
commands in Virginia, iv. 205
opposes Arnold, iv. 207
at York, iv. 263
obliged to withdraw, iv. 267

deceived by Simcoe, iv. 289
opens second parallel before Yorktown, iv. 345
society of the Cincinnati, iv. 392
at Washington's inauguration, iv. 475
STEVENS, General, joins Gates, iv. 85
at the council of war, iv. 87
at the battle of Camden, iv. 87
takes charge of Morgan's prisoners, iv. 227
at Guilford Court House, iv. 245
orders a retreat, iv. 246
STEWART, Captain, assists Braddock, i. 180
accompanies Braddock, i. 182
STEWART, Colonel, at Monmouth Court House, iii. 397
accompanies Wayne, iv. 197
STEWART, Colonel, at Guilford Court House, iv. 247
STICKNEY, Colonel, at Bennington, iii. 166
STIRLING, Lord, in command at New York, ii. 191
report on the condition of the Highlands, ii. 217
moves against General Grant, ii. 301
holds him in check, ii. 302
attacks Cornwallis, ii. 305
surrenders himself, ii. 307
exchanged, ii. 344
resolves to entrap Rogers, ii. 364
to cross at King's Ferry, ii. 379
crosses the Hudson, ii. 381
falls back on Trenton, ii. 426
at Matouchin Church, iii. 78
driven in by Cornwallis, iii. 79
in favor of attacking Philadelphia, iii. 296
correspondence with Wilkinson on the Conway letter, iii. 337
appeases the honor of Wilkinson, iii. 343
at Monmouth Court House, iii. 398
encamps at the New Bridge, iii. 475
unsuccessful descent on Staten Island, iv. 5
retreats to Elizabethtown, iv. 6
St. Johns, Canada, expedition against, i. 407
surprised by Arnold, i. 407
General Schuyler appears before it, ii. 55
invested by Montgomery, ii. 59
its resistance, ii. 59
capitulates, ii. 86
St. John's Island, landing of Sir Henry Clinton, iv. 26
ST. LEGER, Colonel, to make a diversion, iii. 87
invests Fort Schuyler, iii. 149
summons it to surrender, iii. 150
tries to intimidate the garrison, iii. 156
makes regular approaches, iii. 157
presses the siege, iii. 172
obliged to decamp, iii. 173
ST. LUC commands Indians, iii. 141
reputation, iii. 162
St. Lucia, expedition against, iii. 442
STOBO, Captain, left as hostage, i. 123
letter from Fort Duquesne, i. 129
imprisoned in Quebec, i. 185
his escape, i. 135
obtains grant of land, (note), i. 337
STOCKWELL, Lieutenant, guides Col. Willett, iii. 157
STODDART, Capt., and Wilkinson, iii. 340
Stonington cannonaded, ii. 67
Stony Point, landing of the British, iii. 225
being fortified, iii. 459
taken by the British, iii. 460
position of, iii. 465
garrison of, iii. 465
plan of attack, iii. 465
stormed by the Americans, iii. 467
killed and wounded, iii. 468
conduct of the Americans, iii. 468
evacuated and destroyed by the Americans, iii. 470
fortified and garrisoned by the British, iii. 470
ST. PIERRE, Chevalier Legardeur de, reception of Washington, i. 77
gives Washington his reply to Gov. Dinwiddie, i. 80
his reply to Governor Dinwiddie, i. 90
commands Canadians and Indians, i. 201
slain, i. 203
STRINGER, Doctor, dismissed, iii. 35
ST. SIMON, Marquis, lands with troops, iv. 319
embarks his troops, iv. 358
STUART, Col., joins Lord Rawdon, iv. 298
encamps on the Congaree, iv. 304
moves to Eutaw Springs, iv. 334
battle of Eutaw Springs, iv. 335
decamps, iv. 339
retreats to Monck's Corner, iv. 340
STUART, Doctor, to Washington on sectional interests, v. 55
to Washington on ceremonials, v. 64
STUART, Gilbert, portrait of Washington, (appendix,) i. 458
Sugar Hill commands Ticonderoga, iii 102
fortified by the British, iii. 103
Sugar House, iii. 22
Sulgrave, "Washington's Manor," described, i. 12
SULLIVAN, General, under Major General Lee, ii. 18
sent to Portsmouth, ii. 72
despatched to New York, ii. 191
despatched to Canada, ii. 195
takes command, ii. 220
to Washington, hopeful, ii. 221
mistakes the enemy's force, ii. 223
to Washington on Thompson's expedition, ii. 224
retreats, ii. 226
joined by Arnold, ii. 226
embarks for Crown Point, ii. 227
requests leave of absence, ii. 262
tenders his resignation, ii. 265
in temporary command, ii. 293
reconnoitres, ii. 302
retreats, ii. 303
taken prisoner, ii. 304
at Vealtown, ii. 431
hastens to join Washington, ii. 435
joins Washington, ii. 440
ordered to advance and charge, ii. 451
attacks Trenton, ii. 453
at Morristown, iii. 4

behind the Sourland Hills, iii. 76
to advance to the Highlands, iii. 81
joins Washington, iii. 182
attempt to surprise the enemy, iii. 182
at Brandywine. iii. 191
at the battle of Germantown, iii. 261
describes Washington at Germantown, iii. 265
to attack Rhode Island, iii. 418
moves from Providence, iii. 420
occupies abandoned works, iii. 420
before Newport, iii. 421
at Honeyman's Hill. iii. 422
protest against D'Estaing's proceeding to Boston, iii. 424
general order on the departure of the French fleet, iii. 424
retreats to Batt's Hill, iii. 426
commands expedition against the Indians, iii. 456
battle at Newtown, iii. 456
lays the Indian country waste, iii 456
thanked by Congress, iii. 456
retires from the service, iii. 457
Hamilton's talent for finance, iv. 208
Sullivan's Island fortified, ii. 272
battle of, ii. 274
bravery of troops, ii. 275
British account, ii. 275
deficiency of powder, ii. 276
enemy repulsed, ii. 276
loss of the Americans, ii. 277
Sumner, Gen., at Eutaw Springs, iv. 335
gives way, iv. 337
Sumter, Thomas, character and services, iv. 81
chosen leader, iv. 82
attacks the British at Rocky Mount, iv. 83
successful attack on Hanging Rock, iv. 83
sends to Gates for reinforcements, iv. 86
reduces redoubt on the Wateree, iv. 89
surprised by Tarleton, iv. 91
again in the field, iv. 181
menaces the British posts, iv. 182
fight at Black Stock Hill, iv. 182
detached to scour the country, iv. 299
pursues Colonel Coates, iv. 301
attack on Colonel Coates, iv. 303
rejoins Greene, iv. 304
Sutherland, Major, commands at Paulus Hook, iii. 474
Symonds Colonel, joins Stark, iii. 165

T.

Talbot, Captain, at Fort Mifflin, iii. 286
wounded, iii. 287
Talleyrand and the American envoys, v. 270
amicable overtures, v. 286
Tallmadge, Major, and André, iv. 114
escorts Andre to the Robinson House, iv. 128
fascinated by André, iv. 129
conversation with André, iv. 129
predicts André's fate, iv. 131
to Colonel Webb, commiserating André, iv. 138
account of André's execution, iv. 145
successful exploit, iv. 167
Tanachariss0n, a Seneca chief, i. 50
accompanies Washington to the French post. i. 73
letter to Washington, i. 104
prepares for battle, i. 110
opinion of white men's warfare, i. 125
his death, i. 125
Tarleton, Lieutenant Colonel Banastre, on the expedition to South Carolina, iv. 23
description of. iv. 25
obtains horses for his dragoons, iv. 26
joins General Patterson, iv. 44
surprises General Huger's camp, iv. 48
surprises Americans at Laneau's Ferry, iv. 49
pursues Colonel Buford, iv. 51
butchery at Waxhaw, iv. 53
his excuse, iv. 54
pursues Sumter, iv. 90
surprises Sumter, iv. 91
in quest of Marion. iv. 181
fight at Black Stock Hill, iv. 182
sent in quest of Morgan, iv. 216
at Pacolet. iv. 217
battle of the Cowpens, iv. 220
detached to Beattie's Ford, iv. 229
surprise at Tarrant's Tavern, iv. 231
recruiting expedition, iv. 239
recalled to Hillsborough, iv. 240
skirmish with Lee, iv. 244
in Virginia, iv. 283
skirmish with the French, iv. 331
Tarrant's Tavern, militia surprised by Tarleton, iv. 231
Tash, Colonel, ordered to Fishkill, ii. 351
Tate, Captain, under Morgan, iv. 189
Taxation of American colonies, i. 301
Ten Broeck, General, iii. 176
arrives on the field, iii. 239
Ternant, M., inspector, iii. 357
Ternay, Chevalier de, to command French fleet, iv. 35
arrives at Newport, iv. 60
Thayer, commands Fort Mifflin, iii. 286
evacuates the Fort, iii. 287
Thicketty Run, Braddock encamps at, i. 170
Thomas, John, appointed brigadier general, i. 414
commands the right wing, i. 421
fortifies Roxbury Neck, ii. 6
offended on a question of rank, ii. 12
at Roxbury, ii. 13
sets out for Dorchester Heights, ii. 173
reinforced, ii. 173
commands in Canada, ii. 189
promotion, ii. 189
head-quarters at Albany, ii. 189
arrives at Quebec, ii. 199
sends a fire-ship, ii. 200
prepares to retreat, ii. 200
at Point Deschambault, ii. 202
retreats to the mouth of the Sorel, ii. 220

illness and death, ii. 220
THOMPSON, Brig. Gen., despatched to Canada, ii. 195
at the mouth of the Sorel, ii. 220
preparing to retreat, ii. 221
captured at Three Rivers, ii. 225
THOMPSON, Col., at Sullivan's Island, ii. 273
repulses Sir Henry Clinton, ii. 276
receives thanks of Congress, ii. 277
Three Mile Run, skirmish at, iii. 302
Throg's Neck, position of, ii. 356
landing of the British, ii. 356
Ticonderoga, to be reduced, i. 241
dismantled, i. 268
expedition against, i. 402
surprised by Ethan Allen, i. 405
strength of garrison, ii. 40
preparations for defence, ii. 385
threatened, iii. 77
approach of Burgoyne, iii. 90
thickening alarms, iii. 92
enemy advancing, iii. 93
evacuated, iii. 96
Burgoyne fortifies Mount Hope, iii. 101
invested, iii. 101
commanded by Sugar Hill, iii. 102
evacuated, iii. 103
effects of evacuation, iii. 110
surprised by Colonel Brown, iii. 216
evacuated by the British, iii. 256
TILGHMAN, Colonel Tench, on General Lee, ii. 361
rival generalship, ii. 374
enemy at Dobb's Ferry, ii. 376
to R. R. Livingston, relative to Greene, ii. 400
Washington's aide-de-camp, iii. 4
Washington's festive gayety, iv. 438
death of, iv. 444
TILLY, M. de, detached to the Chesapeake, iv. 258
failure of the enterprise, iv. 259
TOWNSEND, Brigadier, in the expedition to Quebec, i. 268
sent against Montcalm, i. 275
in command, i. 277
advances to meet De Bougainville, i. 277
and General Lee, i. 379
Travelling in 1755, i. 207
Treasury, secretary of the, importance of the post, v. 24
TREAT, Capt., killed at Fort Mifflin, iii. 285
Treaty with France, iii. 368
ratified by Congress, iii. 370
rejoicings in the United States, iii. 371
with England (Jay's), v. 213
debated in the Senate, v. 214
ratified, v. 215
public outcry against, v. 216
Washington concerning, v. 218
TRENT, Captain William, sent to expostulate with the French, i. 67
returns home unsuccessful, i. 67
despatched to the frontier, i. 91
his behavior, i. 100
Trenton, in command of Col. Rahl, ii. 442
projected attack on, ii. 446
alarm at an outpost, ii. 450
march of American troops, ii. 451
picket driven in, ii. 452
the attack, ii. 452
surrender of the Hessians, ii. 455
number of prisoners, ii. 456
TRIPLET, Captain, under Morgan, iv. 189
TROUP, Major, iii. 53
TRUMAN, Captain, with General St. Clair, v. 97
TRUMBULL, Colonel John, portraits of Washington (Appendix), i. 458
aide-de-camp to Washington, ii. 13
his duties, ii. 14
selects site for a fort, ii. 262
arrives from Europe, v. 45
message from Lafayette to Washington, v. 45
TRUMBULL, Jonathan, patriotism, ii. 10
to Washington, ii. 10
asks protection for New London, ii. 20
to Washington, on desertion of Connecticut troops, ii. 101
aids General Lee, ii. 137
concerning Schuyler and Gates, ii. 265
patriotism of, iii. 122
TRUMBULL, Joseph, appointed commissary general, ii. 18
to Gates concerning Schuyler, ii. 264
to Gates concerning Lee, ii. 354
accusing Schuyler, iii. 34
resigns, iii. 128
TRYON, Governor, absent in England, i. 449
in New York harbor, i. 450
reception in New York, i. 451
letter concerning, ii. 193
in New York bay, ii. 194
conspiracy in New York, ii. 229
offers bounty to recruits, ii. 230
on colonial loyalty (note) ii. 235
conducts an expedition against Danbury, iii. 47
lands at Canopo Hill, iii. 47
destroys Danbury, iii. 48
commences the retreat, iii. 49
intrenched at Ridgefield, iii. 50
reaches Canopo Hill, iii. 51
sends Lord North's bills to Washington, iii. 363
commands expedition against Connecticut, iii. 463
lands near New Haven, iii. 463
takes New Haven, iii. 462
destroys Fairfield, iii. 463
devastates Norwalk, iii. 463
TUPPER, Colonel, attacks the Rose and Phœnix, ii. 283
bravery of the Americans, ii. 283
Turtle Bay cannonaded, ii. 333
TUTTLE, Rev. Joseph F., anecdotes, (note) iv. 4

U.

United Colonies, i. 409

V.

Valley Forge, march to, iii. 306
disposition of the army, iii. 307

condition of the troops, iii. 349
described by British historian, iii. 349
amount of American troops, iii. 374
VAN BRAAM, Jacob, Washington's fencing master, i. 59
accompanies Washington as interpreter, i. 68
made captain, i. 95
recommended by Washington for promotion. i. 114
treats with the French, i. 122
left as hostage, i. 123
accused of treachery, i. 124
imprisoned in Quebec, i. 135
escape and recapture, i. 135
sent to England, i. 135
obtains grant of land, i. 337
to Washington, relating his history, iv. 415
VAN CORTLANDT, Pierre, to General Lee, ii. 139
patriotic zeal, ii. 256
family (note), ii. 258
joins Schuyler, iii. 174
VAN RENSSELAER, General, drives back the marauders, iv. 157
VAN SCHAICK, Colonel, iii. 95
expedition against the Onondagas, iii. 456
VAN WART, Isaac, and André, iv. 111
and the death of André, iv. 146
VARICK, Colonel, in correspondence with Schuyler, iii. 208
fears Burgoyne will decamp, iii. 209
to Schuyler, on Burgoyne's surrender. iii. 251
VARNUM, General, iii. 81
reinforces Washington, iii. 269
at Red Bank, iii. 285
on the destitution of the troops, iii. 308
meets Washington, iv. 457
VAUGHAN, General, to move up the Hudson, iii. 230
expedition up the Hudson, iii. 460
Venango, i. 74
VERGENNES, Count de, prediction concerning the American colonies, i. 281
on the battle of Germantown, iii. 268
solicits the liberation of Capt. Asgill, iv. 366
Vermont admitted into the Union, v. 83
Verplanck's Point, landing of the British, iii. 224
fort erected on, iii. 459
Villiers, Captain de, sallies from Fort Duquesne, i. 119
his account of the affair at Great Meadows, i. 127
VINCENT, Earl St., in the expedition against Quebec, i. 269
VIOMENIL, General, the Baron de, embarked, iv. 260
to storm a redoubt, iv. 345
carries the redoubt, iv. 347
Virginia divided into military districts, i. 58
House of Burgesses convened, i. 102
vote thanks to Washington and his officers, i. 137
grant £20,000 for the public service, i. 145
recruits, their appearance and discipline, i. 156
troops, effective mode of fighting, i. 178
Legislature, reform the militia laws, i. 205
Assembly, vote measures of relief, i. 217
troops, gallant conduct, i. 261
aristocratical days, i. 285
style of living, i. 286
love of horses, i. 286
estate, a little empire, i. 287
Legislature, their proceedings, i. 322
sympathy with the patriots of New England, i. 322
address to the king. i. 323
dissolved by Lord Botetourt, i. 323
adjourn to a private house, i. 324
Peyton Randolph moderator, i. 324
pledge themselves not to use or import taxed British goods, i. 324
public discontents, i. 328
Board of Commissioners, i. 330
renewed public irritation, i. 339
Legislature, call the Earl of Dunmore to account, i. 340
prorogued by the governor, i. 340
convened, i. 340
corresponding committee, i. 350
aristocracy, i. 343
Legislature in session, i. 348
splendid opening, i. 348
indignation at the Boston port bill, i. 349
protest against obnoxious acts of Parliament. i. 349
appoint a day of fasting and prayer, i. 349
dissolved, i. 349
adjourn to the Raleigh tavern, i. 349
resolutions, i. 350
recommend a General Congress, i. 350
meeting called, i. 384
military preparations, i. 384
second convention at Richmond, i. 388
in combustion, i. 389
troops described, ii. 19
sharpshooting, ii. 19
General Assembly of, conduct toward Gates, iv. 186
defenceless state, iv. 205
Assembly, reception of Washington, iv. 424
appropriation to Washington, iv. 427
VAN DECHOW, Major, and Col. Rahl, ii. 443
mortally wounded, ii. 456

W.

WADWORTH, Colonel, resigns, iv. 3
WAINWOOD, Mr., intercepts a treasonable letter, ii. 63
WALCOTT, Col., referee for exchange of prisoners, iii. 14
WALDECKERS join General Howe, ii. 365
WALES, Judge, on the bombardment of Boston, ii. 75
WALKER, Capt., interprets for Steuben, iii. 358

WALKER, Thomas, and General Prescott, (note,) ii. 107
WALLACE, Captain, piratical reputation, ii. 67
harasses Rhode Island, ii. 125
before New York, ii. 245
WALLACE, Sir James, to go up the Hudson, iii. 230
WALPOLE, Horace, opinion of Washington, i. 123
anecdotes of Braddock, i. 138
satirical remark on Braddock's delay, i. 173
on Granville, i. 304
on Lord Botetourt, i. 321
and Horatio Gates, i. 285
on Burgoyne's plays, ii. 4
concerning General Gage, ii. 74
on Lord Howe, ii. 187
WALPOLE, Sir Robert, on American taxation, i. 301
Wando, works thrown up, iv. 46
WARD, Artemas, nominated general officer, i 383
commands American camp, i. 402
his services, i. 402
sustained in Congress, i. 412
appointed major general, i. 414
elected second in command, i. 414
head-quarters at Cambridge, i. 420
disposition of troops, i. 421
doubts the expediency of occupying Charlestown Heights, i. 422
reinforces Prescott, i. 429
commands right wing, ii. 17
enters Boston, ii. 183
WARD, Henry, transmits treasonable letter to General Greene, ii. 68
WARNER, Seth, Ethan Allen's Lieutenant, i. 403
in the expedition against Ticonderoga, i. 404
surprises Crown Point, i. 406
repairs to Congress, ii. 36
repairs to New York Convention, ii. 36
elected Lieutenant Colonel, ii. 42
arrives at camp, ii. 56
detached to intercept relief, ii. 59
attacks General Carleton, ii. 85
in St. Clair's retreat, iii. 108
at Manchester, iii. 155
joins Stark, iii. 164
arrives at the scene of action, iii. 168
WARREN, Dr. Joseph, member of Committee of Safety, i. 391
gives the alarm, i. 391
arrives from Boston i. 396
doubts the expediency of occupying Charlestown Heights, i. 422
arrives at the heights, i. 432
noble conduct, i. 433
declines the command, i. 433
death, i. 437
public loss, i. 439
WASHINGTON, modifications of the name, i. 11
WASHINGTON, Augustine, father of George, born, i. 16
marries Jane Butler, and afterwards Mary Ball, i. 16
his death, i. 21
WASHINGTON, George, genealogy of, i. 1
birth of, i. 16
the house of his boyhood, i. 18
his early education, i. 19
his martial spirit, i. 20
school exercises, i. 23
physical strength, i. 23
his code of morals and manners, i. 26
influence of soldier's tales, i. 23
obtains a midshipman's warrant, i. 27
relinquished on his mother's remonstrance and returns to school, i. 28
studies and exercises, i. 28
school-boy passion, i. 28
attempts at poetry, i. 29
appearance and character at sixteen, i. 32
letters to friends, i. 32
engaged as surveyor, i. 34
expedition beyond the Blue Ridge, i. 35
life in the wilderness, i. 37
completes his surveys and returns home, i. 39
appointed public surveyor, i. 40
appointed adjutant general, i. 50
prepares himself for his new duties, i. 50
accompanies Lawrence to the West Indies, i. 60
arrives at Barbadoes, i. 60
witnesses a dramatic performance for the first time, i. 60
attacked with small-pox, i. 61
recovery, i. 61
returns to Virginia, i. 62
appointed executor of his brother Lawrence's will, i. 63
chosen to negotiate with the Indians, i. 67
his instructions, i. 68
departs on his mission, i. 68
arrives at Wills' Creek, i. 68
meets Mr. Gist, whom he engages, i. 68
his description of the country, i. 69
invites Shingis, chief of the Delawares to the council at Logstown, i. 70
arrives at Logstown, i. 70
interview with the half-king, i. 70
meets the Indians in council, i. 71
first lesson in Indian diplomacy, i. 72
sets out for the French post, i. 73
arrives at Venango, i. 74
meets Captain Joncaire, i. 74
at supper with Joncaire, i. 75
sets out from Venango, i. 77
reaches the French fort, i. 77
his reception, i. 78
communication with the French officers, i. 78
takes observations of the fort, &c., i. 79
prepares to return, i. 81
receives the reply of the Chevalier de St. Pierre to Gov. Dinwiddie, i. 81
reaches Venango, i. 82
sets out from Venango homeward, i. 83
severe cold, travel on foot, i. 83

arrives at Murdering Town, i. 84
engages an Indian guide to Shannopins Town, i. 85
treachery of the guide, i. 86
crosses the Alleghany River, imminent peril, i. 87
arrives at Frazier's, i. 88
appeases the anger of Queen Aliquippa, i. 88
reaches Williamsburg, i. 89
his conduct through the expedition, i. 89
made lieutenant colonel, i. 94
on recruiting service, i. 94
sets out with two companies to the fork of the Ohio, i. 95
toilful march to Wills' Creek, i. 96
calls a council of war, i. 98
writes to Governor Dinwiddie, i. 99
at Little Meadows, i. 101
arrives at the Youghiogeny River, i. 102
remonstrates against the insufficient pay, i. 102
his motives of action, i. 103
explores the river in a canoe, i. 103
letter from the half-king, i. 104
rumors of advancing French, i. 104
takes a position at the Great Meadows, i. 105
Interview with the half-king. i. 106
surprises the French, i. 106
letters to Governor Dinwiddie, i 109
expects to be attacked, i. 110
his military excitement, i. 111
whistling of bullets, i. 111
to Croghan for supplies, i. 113
to Governor Dinwiddie in behalf of Van Braam, i. 114
to Governor Dinwiddie in reference to Captain Mackay's company, i. 114
delivers presents to the Indians, i. 116
receives the name of Connotaucarius, i. 116
to Governor Dinwiddie about French prisoners, i. 117
to Governor Dinwiddie concerning Capt. Mackay, i. 118
resumes his march to Redstone Creek, i. 118
retreats, i. 119
reaches Great Meadows, i. 119
strengthens Fort Necessity, i. 120
deserted by the Indians, i. 120
attacked by French and Indians, i. 121
capitulates to the French, i. 122
destroys military stores, i. 123
returns to Williamsburg, i. 124
receives a vote of thanks, i. 124
to William Fairfax about Croghan and Montour, i. 125
rejoins his regiment, i. 128
from Governor Dinwiddie ordering an advance to Wills' Creek, i. 130
his objections to the project, i. 130
leaves the service, i. 132
is urged by Governor Sharpe to continue, i. 132
his reply, i. 132
visits his mother, i. 136
takes up his abode at Mount Vernon, i. 136
his excitement at the military preparations under Braddock, i. 142
desires to join as a volunteer, i. 142
is invited to join Braddock's staff, i. 143
accepts the appointment, i. 143
resists the appeals of his mother, i. 144
arrives at Braddock's head-quarters, i. 144
his reception, i. 144
his predictions, i. 147
horses disabled, i. 151
sent for the military chest, i. 160
notions of frugality outraged by officers of Braddock's expedition, i. 161
counsels Braddock, i. 164
personal example, i. 165
his disappointment with their movements, i. 167
illness, i. 167
rests at the great crossings of the Youghiogeny, i. 168
from Captain Morris, i. 172
rejoins Braddock, i. 172
cordial reception, i. 173
delighted with the appearance of the army, i. 175
in battle, i. 179
danger and preservation, i. 179
sent to Colonel Dunbar's camp for aid, i. 182
returns with supplies, i. 182
reads the funeral service over Braddock, i. 183
reaches Fort Cumberland, i. 184
to his mother and brother, i. 185
at Mount Vernon, i. 190
to Augustine, i. 190
prepares for the public safety, i. 191
his willingness to serve his country, i. 191
declines to solicit the command, i. 192
to his mother, i. 192
appointed commander-in-chief, i. 193
popularity among trials and reverses, i. 193
fixes his head-quarters at Winchester, i. 194
panic at Winchester, i. 195
his difficulties, i. 196
"insolence of the people," i. 196
increased alarms, i. 197
ludicrous result, i. 197
appreciation of Indian aid, i. 199
disciplines his troops, i. 205
questions of precedence, i. 206
sets out for Boston, i. 207
his equipment, i. 207
aristocratical order for clothes, i. 207
the journey, i. 208
interview with Governor Shirley, i. 209
disappointment in not being put upon the regular establishment, i. 209
return to New York, i. 210
meets Miss Mary Philipse, i. 210
admiration of her, i. 211
return to Virginia, i. 211

repairs to Winchester, i. 212
inhabitants in dismay, i. 214
appealed to for protection, i. 215
to Governor Dinwiddie, i. 216
attacked by the press, i. 216
his indignation, i. 216
opposes the plan of defence devised by Governor Dinwiddie, i. 217
plan proposed, i. 218
recommendations with respect to military laws, i. 219
superintends the measures taken for frontier security, i. 224
tour of inspection, i. 225
the irregulars, i. 226
cross purposes with Governor Dinwiddie, i. 226
to Mr. Speaker Robinson, i. 228
asks permission to visit Philadelphia, i. 232
to Lord Loudon in vindication of his conduct, i. 233
his reception by Lord Loudon, i. 234
stationed at Winchester, i. 237
misunderstanding with Dinwiddie, i. 238
appeal to Dinwiddie, i. 238
illness, i. 239
retires to Mount Vernon, i. 239
state of health, i. 240
to Colonel Stanwix, i. 240
improved health, i. 240
resumes command of Fort Loudon, i. 240
satisfaction at the decision to reduce Fort Duquesne, i. 242
to Colonel Stanwix, i. 242
to Major Halket, i. 243
orders out the militia, i. 252
sets off for Williamsburg, i. 252
meets Mrs. Martha Custis, i. 253
is smitten, i. 253
courtship, i. 253
engagement, i. 254
military conference, i. 254
arrives at Winchester, i. 254
ordered to Fort Cumberland, i. 254
alters the military dress, i. 254
annoyed by Indians, i. 255
efficiency of Indian scouts, i. 255
discountenances a project of Col. Bouquet, i. 255
proposed as representative to the House of Burgesses, i. 256
elected and chaired, i. 256
hears of Amherst's success, i. 256
to Colonel Bouquet, i. 257
remonstrates against opening a new road, i. 257
ordered to Raystown, i. 258
to Governor Fauquier, i. 261
given command of a division, i. 261
arrives before Fort Duquesne, i. 262
occupies the ruins of Fort Duquesne, i. 263
resigns his commission, i. 264
marries Mrs. Custis, i. 264
at the "White House," i. 282
takes his seat in the House of Burgesses, i. 282
first effort, i. 282
intrusted with the care of the property of Mr. Custis's children, i. 283
intimates a desire to visit England, i. 283
happiness in retirement, i. 283
vestryman, i. 285
deportment in Church, i. 285
his fortune, i. 286
horses, i. 286
dogs, i. 287
riding equipments, (note.) i. 287
management of his estate, i. 288
business habits, i. 288
the reputation of his brand, i. 289
domestic habits, i. 289
treatment of negroes, i. 289
anecdote, i. 290
his new plough, i. 290
fox-hunting, i. 290
hunting dinners, i. 291
hunting memoranda, (note,) i. 291
fishing and shooting, i. 292
defiant oysterman, i. 292
duck shooting, i. 292
chastises a poacher, i. 292
aquatic recreations, i. 293
visits to Annapolis, i. 293
amusements, i. 294
dancing, i. 294
domestic life, i. 294
project to drain Dismal Swamp, i. 295
in the House of Burgesses, i. 305
Stamp Act discussed, i. 305
to Francis Dandridge on the Stamp Act, i. 307
management of his estate, i. 308
conduct towards his wife's son, i. 308
letters to London agents, i. 308
on the Stamp Act, i. 313
life at Mount Vernon, i. 317
to Geo. Mason on non-importation, i. 318
introduces resolutions of non-use and importation, i. 324
on Botetourt, i. 329
expedition to the Ohio, i. 330
arrives at Fort Pitt, i. 331
meets Colonel Croghan, i. 332
interview with Indian chiefs, i. 333
embarks on the Ohio, i. 333
voyage down the river, i. 334
lands at Mingotown i. 334
arrives at Captema Creek i. 334
visits Kiashuta, a Seneca sachem i. 335
encamps at the mouth of the Great Kanawha, i. 336
visited by an old sachem, i. 336
escape at Braddock's defeat, i. 336
return home, i. 337
to Colonel Muse, i. 338
attends the Assembly, i. 340
friendly relations with Lord Dunmore, i. 340
affliction at the death of Miss Custis, i. 341
guardianship of John Parke Custis, i. 341
opposed to premature marriage, i. 342
accompanies John P. Custis to New York, i. 342
to President Cooper, i. 343

to Jonathan Boucher on premature travel, (note,) i. 343
to Benedict Calvert on premature marriage, (note,) i. 344
intimacy with Lord Dunmore, i. 350
attends meeting at Williamsburg, i. 351
presides at a political meeting, i. 354
chairman of committee on resolutions, i. 354
to Bryan Fairfax on a petition to the Throne, i. 355
reports patriotic resolutions, i. 355
delegate to General Convention, i. 357
to Fairfax, i. 357
on non-importation, i. 358
presents resolutions to the convention, i. 358
enthusiasm, i. 359
delegate to the General Congress, i. 359
to Bryan Fairfax, i. 359
sets out for Philadelphia, i. 363
during prayer in the General Congress, i. 366
to Captain Mackenzie on independence, i. 371
returns to Mount Vernon, i. 373
reviews military companies, i. 384
visit of Lee and Gates, i. 385
fox-hunting, i. 388
attends convention at Richmond, i. 388
one of a committee to prepare for war, i. 388
offers to command a company, i. 388
concerning the retreat from Concord, i. 397
hears of the affair at Lexington, i 399
to George William Fairfax, i. 400
hopes of a reconciliation, i. 408
chairman of committees on military affairs, i. 410
urged as commander-in-chief, i. 410
modesty, i. 412
opposed, i. 412
elected commander-in-chief, i. 413
acceptance, i. 413
to his wife, i. 415
to his brother, i. 416
receives his commission, i. 416
beau ideal of a commander, i 417
sets out from Philadelphia, i. 442
harmony with Schuyler, i. 443
news of the battle of Bunker's Hill, i. 445
determines to intrust Schuyler with the command of New York, i. 449
at Newark, i. 449
reply to President Livingston's address, i. 450
instructions to General Schuyler, i. 451
leaves New York, i. 452
at the American camp, i. 452
effect of personal appearance, i. 453
to Governor Trumbull, i. 454
portraits of, (Appendix,) i. 455
takes command of the army, ii. 1
visits the American posts, ii. 2
at Prospect Hill, ii. 4
reconnoitres the British posts, ii. 5
opinion of American troops, ii. 7
to the President of Congress, ii. 9
requests a supply of money. ii. 9
advises hunting shirts for the troops, ii. 9
apology for Massachusetts troops, ii. 9
head-quarters, (note,) ii. 11
style of living in camp, ii. 13
friendship for Joseph Reed, ii. 15
summons council of war, ii. 15
improves the defences, ii. 17
compliments Gen. Putnam, ii. 17
distribution of the army, ii. 17
respect for religion, ii. 19
declines to detach troops, ii. 20
reply to Gen. Assembly of Mass. ii. 20
reply to Gov. of Conn. ii. 21
distresses Boston, ii. 22
scarcity of powder, ii. 23
to Gov. Cooke, ii. 23
arrival of supplies, ii. 24
poverty in ammunition. ii. 25
correspondence with Gen. Gage on the treatment of prisoners, ii. 26
confines British officers in jail, ii. 31
revokes the order, ii. 31
to Schuyler recommending patience, ii. 41
reception of Indians, ii. 45
to Schuyler, ii. 46
to Schuyler recommending the attack of Quebec. ii. 46
endeavors to bring on an engagement, ii. 49
on the reluctance of the British to engage, ii. 50
apprehension of a winter's campaign, ii. 50
summons a council, ii. 51
to President of Congress, ii. 51
detaches troops for the expedition against Canada, ii. 52
to Arnold on the conduct of the expedition, ii. 53
to Arnold concerning Lord Chatham's son, ii. 54
opinion of Gen. Wooster, ii. 57
concern at Schuyler's illness, ii. 57
to Schuyler concerning Arnold, ii. 57
solicitude for Arnold, ii. 57
on Allen's imprudence, ii. 63
to Schuyler about Arnold, ii. 64
treasonable letter, ii. 68
orders the equipment of vessels, ii. 70
on the destruction of Falmouth, ii. 72
measures of retaliation, ii. 73
to Gov. Trumbull on the seizure of Tories, ii. 75
orders Gen. Sullivan to seize public enemies, ii. 78
want of artillery and ordnance stores, ii. 79
to the Pres. of Congress on the re-enlistment of troops, ii. 80
to the same on the want of public spirit, ii. 81
to Reed, ii. 81
confidence in Arnold, ii. 89
to Schuyler on Arnold and the conquest of Canada, ii. 95
to Schuyler on his resigning, ii. 96

summons a council to provide for defence of the lines, ii. 100
to Gov. Trumbull on the desertion of Connecticut troops, ii. 101
arrival of captured munitions, ii. 102
orders restoration of pillage, ii. 103
to Gen. Howe on the treatment of Ethan Allen, ii. 104
to Congress concerning Allen, ii. 105
to Levi Allen, ii. 106
prepares to bombard Boston, ii. 107
correspondence with Lund Washington, ii. 110
asks Mrs. Washington to join him at camp, ii. 111
to Lund Washington on his affairs, ii. 111
directions concerning Mount Vernon, ii. 112
to Reed on invitations to dinner, ii. 113
attentions to General Court, ii. 113
relieved from his perplexity, ii. 114
religious duties, ii. 114
quells a brawl, ii. 116
to Arnold concerning capture of Quebec, ii. 123
on Lord Dunmore, ii. 124
to Gov. Cooke on Lee's proceedings in Rhode Island, ii. 127
appeals to the soldiers' patriotism, ii. 127
cheering news from Canada, ii. 129
strength of the army, ii. 129
to Reed on the critical state of the army, ii. 130
anxious vigils, to Reed, ii. 130
to Reed concerning attack on Boston, ii. 131
from Knox, ii. 132
apprehensions for the safety of N.Y., ii. 134
authorizes Lee to carry out his plans, ii. 137
despatches from Schuyler, ii. 141
to Schuyler on the death of Montgomery, ii. 154
solicitude about New York, ii. 153
to Lee relative to Tories, ii. 159
to Lee on Capt. Parker's passivity, ii. 160
anxiety to attack Boston, ii. 164
to Reed, confidential, ii. 166
to Reed in favor of attacking Boston, ii. 167
proposes an attack in council, ii. 168
arrival of Knox, ii. 168
active measures, ii. 169
public gloom, ii. 169
plan of operations, ii. 170
fortifies Dorchester Heights, ii. 174
effect on the enemy of the fortification of Dorchester Heights, ii. 175
address to his troops, ii. 176
communication from the "select men" of Boston, ii. 178
enters Boston, ii. 183
on Howe's retreat, ii. 183
throws up works on Fort Hill, ii. 184
national applause, ii. 184
receives a vote of thanks—gold medal commemorative of the evacuation of Boston, ii. 185
on the destination of the British, ii. 186
to Lee on his appointment to command the Southern Department, ii. 188
on the character of Lee, ii. 189
sends detachments to New York, ii. 193
arrives at New York, ii. 194
to the committee of safety, ii. 194
occupations, ii. 194
to Congress on the defence of Canada and New York, ii. 195
secret designs of the enemy, ii. 196
to Schuyler on affairs in Canada, ii. 202
to Schuyler on charges against, ii. 204
sends Gates to Congress, ii. 206
summoned before Congress, ii. 206
general orders, ii. 207
instructions to Putnam, ii. 207
leaves New York, ii. 208
guest of Hancock, ii. 208
conferences with Congress, ii. 208
conferences with George Clinton, ii. 209
affairs in Canada, ii. 215
to Schuyler concerning Indians, ii. 216
to Augustine—bloody prospects, ii. 216
reconnoitres Kingsbridge, ii. 218
reply to Sullivan, ii. 222
to Congress on Sullivan, ii. 222
conspiracy in New York, ii. 231
arrival of British troops, ii. 233
general orders, ii. 233
calls upon the troops to prepare for a momentous conflict, ii. 236
concerning Amboy and Staten Island, ii. 240
joy at the declaration of independence, ii. 242
causes it to be read at the head of each brigade, ii. 242
censures the destruction of the statue of George III. ii. 243
to Clinton on the safety of the Highlands, ii. 246
advises precautions against the Tories, ii. 250
British recognition of his rank, ii. 252
receives Col. Patterson, ii. 253
declines the letter to George Washington, Esq., ii. 254
conduct applauded, ii. 254
sectional jealousies, ii. 265
on Connecticut light-horse, ii. 268
to Gov. Trumbull on the Connecticut troops, ii. 268
concerning Connecticut light-horse, ii. 269
to Schuyler on Sir Peter Parker's repulse, ii. 277
general order concerning Sir Peter Parker's repulse, ii. 278
general order relative to sectional jealousies, ii. 283
to the army on the observance of the Sabbath and blasphemy, ii. 285
to Mercer for reinforcements, ii. 286
general orders on the approach of the struggle, (note,) ii. 287
preparations for the conflict, ii. 287
paternal cares, ii. 288
plans of defence, ii. 292
landing of the British on Long Island, ii. 294
sends reinforcements to Brooklyn, ii. 294

exhortation to the troops, ii. 294
concerning the burning of New York, ii. 295
urges the removal of the helpless, ii. 296
crosses to Brooklyn, ii. 296
instructions to Putnam, ii. 297
reinforces Long Island, ii. 298
visits Brooklyn, ii. 298
returns to New York, ii. 299
at Brooklyn, ii. 303
American left turned, ii. 303
prepares to retreat, ii. 313
plan of retreat, ii. 313
and Gen. Mifflin's premature retreat, ii. 315
successful retreat, ii. 316
to Pres. of Congress on distressed situation of the army, ii. 318
question of destroying New York, ii. 319
removes the sick and wounded, ii. 321
concerning desertions, ii. 322
to Pres. of Congress on the intentions of the enemy, ii. 328
defensive policy, ii. 329
question of abandoning New York, ii. 329
plan adopted, ii. 331
prepares for evacuation, ii. 332
baggage removed to King's Bridge ii. 332
British crossing the river, ii. 332
rage at the cowardice of the troops, ii. 333
perilous situation, ii. 335
head-quarters, ii. 338
fortifies the approaches to his camp, ii. 338
on the conduct of his troops, ii. 338
interview with Hamilton, ii. 339
successful skirmish, ii. 340
general orders, reference to Knowlton, ii. 341
on the reorganization of the army, ii. 343
exchange of prisoners, ii. 344
uncertainty of the enemy's intentions, ii. 346
ceaseless vigilance, ii. 346
reconnoitrings, ii. 347
to Congress on the safety of the Highlands, ii. 359
measures taken, ii. 361
accident on board his yacht, ii. 353
enemy lands at Throg's Neck, ii. 356
reconnoitres Throg's Neck ii. 356
throws up works, ii. 357
receives Lee, ii. 358
council of war, ii. 359
forms four divisions of the army, ii. 362
at White Plains, ii. 363
offers reward for troopers, ii. 365
movement of the enemy, ii. 365
draws his troops into White Plains, ii. 365
situation of the camp, ii. 367
reconnoitring, ii. 368
British advance, ii. 368
sick and wounded removed, ii. 371
strengthens his position, ii. 371
condition of troops, ii. 372
shifts position to Northeastle, ii. 374
British retire, ii. 374
to Gen. Wm. Livingston, intentions of the enemy, ii. 376
advises the evacuation of Fort Washington, ii. 378
advises removal of stores from Fort Lee, ii. 378
disposition of troops, ii. 379
instructions to Lee, ii. 380
at Peekskill, ii. 381
visits the Highland posts, ii. 381
reconnoissance, ii. 381
to Lee respecting new levies, ii. 382
leaves Heath in command of the Highlands, ii. 384
intelligence from the Northern army, ii. 384
crosses the Hudson, ii. 392
arrives at Fort Lee, ii. 392
question of abandoning Fort Washington, ii. 393
urges the increase of ordnance and artillery, ii. 394
attack on Fort Washington, ii. 398
Hessian cruelties, anecdote, ii. 398
sends a message to Magaw, ii. 398
surrender of Fort Washington, ii. 399
to Lee on the defence of the Highlands, ii. 399
to Augustine on the loss of Fort Washington, ii. 401
gloomy anticipations, ii. 401
arrives at Fort Lee, ii. 404
retreats from Fort Lee, ii. 404
crosses the Hackensack river, ii. 405
to Lee ordering him to cross the Hudson, ii. 405
further retreat, ii. 407
Lee to Col. Reed, ii. 408
correspondence with Lee on crossing the Hudson, ii. 410
to Lee on his delay, ii. 413
retreats to New Brunswick, ii. 414
Lee's letter to Reed, ii. 415
to Reed, enclosing letter of Lee, ii. 416
concerning Reed, (note,) ii. 417
at Trenton, ii. 418
to Congress explaining his retreat, ii. 418
indomitable spirit, ii. 421
at Trenton, ii. 425
returns to Princeton, ii. 425
crosses the Delaware, ii. 426
to Congress on the enemy's plans, ii. 427
to Lee on the peril of Philadelphia, ii. 427
amount of force, ii. 428
to Trumbull hopefully, ii. 428
to Lee, urging speed, ii. 430
retreat across the Jerseys, ii. 436
moral qualities, ii. 437
to Augustine on Lee's capture, ii. 438
to Augustine on the critical state of affairs, ii. 439
granted new powers, ii. 439
recruitment of the army, ii. 439
meditates a *coup de main*, ii. 441
disposition of the enemy, ii. 441
plan of attack, ii. 446
to Col. Reed concerning the projected attack on Trenton, ii. 447
to Reed relative to the time chosen, ii. 447
from Gates, ii. 448
crosses the Delaware, ii. 449

pushes forward to Trenton, ii. 449
march of troops, ii. 451
burst of indignation, ii. 451
anecdote, ii. 451
advances with the artillery, ii. 453
captures the Hessians, ii. 455
imminent hazard, ii. 456
visits Rahl, ii. 457
described by Hessian officer, ii. 459
by another, ii. 461
follows up the blow at Trenton, ii. 466
troops begin to cross the Delaware, ii. 467
re-enlistments, ii. 468
to Robert Morris for money, ii. 468
invested with dictatorial powers, ii. 468
acknowledgment to Congress, ii. 469
critical situation, ii. 472
takes position on the Assunpink, ii. 472
during the attack, ii. 473
desperate situation, ii. 474
bold expedient, ii. 474
council of war, ii. 475
determines to attack Princeton, ii. 475
the army begins its march, ii. 475
at Princeton, ii. 478
rallies the troops, ii. 478
anecdote, ii. 479
loss of Gen. Mercer, ii. 480
pushes for Morristown, ii. 481
orders Putnam to Crosswicks, ii. 483
to Heath concerning the enemy's panic, ii. 483
to Heath repeating orders, ii. 484
to Maj. Gen. Lincoln ordering an advance on New York, ii. 485
triumphant close of the campaign, ii. 486
the American Fabius, ii. 486
to Cornwallis relative to Hessians, iii. 3
his encampment, iii. 5
prohibits plundering, iii. 7
counter-proclamation, iii. 7
has the troops inoculated, iii. 8
paternal care and sympathy, iii. 8
contrasted with Howe, iii. 9
discourages vice and immorality, iii. 10
to Sir William Howe proposing an exchange for Lee, iii. 13
on the treatment of prisoners, iii. 13
concerning treatment of Colonel Campbell, iii. 17
to Congress on retaliation, iii. 17
to Robert Morris on the same, iii. 18
to Howe on the prison ships, iii. 20
calls for reinforcements. iii. 24
to Governor Cooke on the necessity of union, iii. 25
urges the reinforcement of Schuyler, iii. 26
on sectional jealousies, iii. 26
critical situation, iii. 27
orders troops to Peekskill, iii. 28
designs of the enemy, iii. 28
to Gates on the adjutant generalship, iii. 36
on foreign officers, iii. 40
reprehends distinctions among the troops, iii. 43
forms a guard, iii. 44
questions of rank, iii. 44
to Henry Lee on Arnold's promotion, iii. 45
to Arnold explaining his non-promotion, iii. 46
to Congress on injustice to Arnold, iii. 51
publicly thanks Colonel Meigs, iii. 53
concerning Schuyler, iii. 54
rebukes Gates, iii. 58
to McDougall on the fortifications of the Hudson, iii. 65
to Greene on the forts, iii. 65
his foresight, iii. 65
offers Arnold the command of the Hudson, iii. 67
to McDougall describing Putnam, iii. 68
to Dr. Craik on his appointment, iii. 69
at Middlebrook, iii. 69
amount of force, iii. 69
to Patrick Henry giving warning, iii. 71
strengthens his position, iii. 71
uncertainty of British movements, iii. 72
reply to Reed's appeal, iii. 74
on Burgoyne's reported designs, iii. 77
speculations on the enemy's movements, iii. 80
to Clinton and Putnam ordering out troops, iii. 81
evacuation of Ticonderoga, iii. 95
reinforces Schuyler, iii. 97
news of St. Clair, iii. 98
to Schuyler on St. Clair, iii. 98
to Sir William Howe proposing to exchange Prescott for Lee, iii. 113
to Trumbull on the treatment of Prescott, iii. 113
sends Arnold to Schuyler, iii. 114
to Schuler hopefully, iii. 115
cautions, iii. 116
to Schuyler on the enemy's force, iii. 117
plans to harass Burgoyne, iii. 118
a delusive letter, iii. 119
sets out for the Delaware, iii. 120
to Gates on Howe's movements, iii. 120
moves to Germantown, iii. 121
orders and counter orders, iii. 121
to Putnam relative to Connecticut, iii. 122
declines to nominate commander for the Northern Department, iii. 123
regret at the removal of Schuyler, iii. 126
soothing counsels, iii. 126
news of British fleet, iii. 130
to Putnam to be on the alert, iii. 131
sends Colonel Morgan to fight the Indians, iii. 132
reinforces Gates, iii 133
force in Burgoyne's rear, iii. 133
makes the acquaintance of Lafayette, iii. 134
on foreign appointments, iii. 137
marches through Philadelphia, iii. 138
at Wilmington, iii. 139
to Putnam on Stark's victory, iii. 179
enemy landing, iii. 180
reconnoitres, iii. 180
risk of capture, iii. 181
determines to risk a battle, iii. 154

stirring appeal to the army, iii. 185
changes position, iii. 186
position of the army, iii. 187
battle of Brandywine, iii. 188
profits by Howe's inactivity, iii. 197
retreats to Germantown, iii. 198
manœuvres of the armies, iii. 198
at Warwick Furnace, iii. 199
to Putnam for reinforcements, iii. 202
to Gates for Morgan's corps, iii. 202
rests at Pott's Grove, iii. 203
to Trumbull on the taking of Philadelphia, iii. 203
amount of force, iii. 258
advances to Skippack Creek, iii. 258
to Congress on Howe's situation, iii. 259
determines to attack the British camp, iii. 259
plan of attack, iii. 261
conduct in the battle of Germantown, iii. 266
to Congress on the battle, iii. 266
remains at Perkiomen Creek, iii. 269
reinforced, iii. 269
at White Marsh, iii. 269
intercepts supplies, iii. 269
the importance of Fort Mercer, iii. 271
to Richard Henry Lee on the promotion of Conway, iii. 277
to Gates on the surrender of Burgoyne, iii. 279
to Conway on his letter to Gates, iii. 281
to Patrick Henry, apology for his army, iii. 282
to Thomas Wharton for aid, (note,) iii. 283
in want of reinforcements, iii. 284
instructions in regard to the forts, iii. 285
loss of Fort Mifflin, iii. 287
hopes to keep Red Bank, iii. 287
reprimands Putnam, iii. 292
intrigues against, iii. 292
Fort Mercer taken, iii. 294
arrival of reinforcements, iii. 294
advising the sinking of the American vessels, iii. 295
reconnoitres Philadelphia, iii. 296
opportunity for a brilliant blow, iii. 298
council of war, iii. 298
on the promotion of Lafayette, iii. 300
camp menaced by Howe, iii. 302
skirmishes, iii. 303
encourages his troops, iii. 304
the enemy retire, iii. 304
to Congress on threatened attack, iii. 305
approach of winter, iii. 305
winter-quarters, iii. 306
arrival at Valley Forge, iii. 307
destitution of troops, iii. 308
in vindication, iii. 309
exercises his authority, iii. 312
to Congress on the consequences, iii. 312
retrospect of 1777, iii. 312
to Gates on the Conway letter, iii. 318
to Laurens on the conduct of his enemies, iii. 321
correspondence with Gates, iii. 323
searching reply to Gates's explanation, iii. 329
closing note to Gates, iii. 329
forged letters, iii. 332
to General Henry Lee on the forged letters, iii. 332
to Landon Carter on the same, iii. 333
introduction to forged letters, iii. 333
Canada expedition, iii. 334
to Lafayette, consoling, iii. 336
to Patrick Henry on the cabal, iii. 344
party opposed to Washington, (note,) iii. 346
reforms in the army, iii. 347
destitution in camp, iii. 348
situation described, iii. 349
to Captain Lee on his exploit, iii. 351
recommends Captain Lee for promotion, iii. 351
to General Lee on his exchange, iii. 352
arrival of Mrs. Washington, iii. 353
better times, iii. 353
arrival of Bryan Fairfax, iii. 353
to Bryan Fairfax on their friendship, iii. 354
arrival of Baron Steuben, iii. 355
promotion of Greene, iii. 360
project to capture Sir Henry Clinton, iii. 363
circular on plan of next campaign, iii. 364
to Congress on forming a system, iii. 365
downfall of Conway, iii. 366
sends Lord North's bills to Congress, iii. 368
to Governor Tryon enclosing resolutions of Congress, iii. 369
rejoicings at Valley Forge, iii. 370
council of war determines on defensive measures, iii. 371
American force, iii. 374
solicitude for Lafayette, iii. 377
to Congress on Ethan Allen, iii. 378
prepares to decamp, iii. 379
sends Sir Henry Clinton's letter to Congress, iii. 381
amount of force under, iii. 384
to Lee, admonitory, iii. 386
council of war, iii. 386
Philadelphia evacuated, iii. 388
pursues the enemy, iii. 388
crosses the Delaware at Coryell's Ferry, iii. 388
council opposed to a general action, iii. 389
determines to attack the army, iii. 390
perplexed to satisfy Lee, iii. 391
resolves upon an attack, iii. 392
orders Lee to watch the enemy, iii. 392
orders Lee to attack, iii. 393
sets forward to the attack, iii. 393
retreat of American troops, iii. 394
meets Colonel Shreve and Major Howard retreating, iii. 395
angry meeting with Lee, iii. 396
checks the retreat, iii. 396
dispositions for battle, iii. 397
battle of Monmouth Court House, iii. 397
retreat of the enemy, iii. 400
march to Brunswick, iii. 402
halts at Paramus, iii. 403
correspondence with General Lee, iii. 404

puts Lee under arrest, iii. 406
conduct in relation to Lee, iii. 407
on Lee's abuse, iii. 409
magnanimity in regard to Lee, iii. 413
arrival of French fleet, iii. 415
correspondence with Count D'Estaing, iii. 416
plan of operations, iii. 417
encamps at White Plains, iii. 417
orders Sullivan to prepare for a descent upon Rhode Island, iii. 418
to John Augustine on the failure of the expedition against Rhode Island, iii. 429
anxiety as to its effects, iii. 429
to D'Estaing on his failure, iii. 430
enemy's movements, iii. 435
strengthens the Highlands, iii. 436
moves his camp to Fredericksburg, iii. 436
moves to Fishkill, iii. 437
distribution of troops, iii. 445
head-quarters near Middlebrook, iii. 445
plan of alarm signals, iii. 445
opposes Lafayette's Canada scheme, iii. 447
in Philadelphia, iii. 448
on the deterioration of Congress, iii. 449
to Colonel Harrison on the decline of public spirit, iii. 449
disgust at the neglect of Congress, iii. 451
policy of the next campaign, iii. 451
unjust retaliation on the Indians, iii. 452
discontent of Jersey troops, iii. 452
acts as a mediator, iii 453
address to the officers, iii. 454
reply of the officers, iii. 454
to General Maxwell on the determination of his officers, iii. 455
apprehends an expedition against the Highlands, iii. 459
measures for the protection of West Point, iii. 461
removes to New Windsor, iii. 461
detaches General Heath to act against the British in Connecticut, iii. 464
plans the recapture of Stony Point and Fort Lafayette, iii. 465
proposes the storming of Stony Point to Wayne, iii. 465
plan of surprisal, iii. 465
evacuates Stony Point, iii. 470
at West Point, iii. 470
expedition against Penobscot, iii. 472
on the surprise of Paulus Hook, iii. 474
on the capture of Stony Point and Paulus Hook, iii. 476
furthers the defences of the Hudson, iii. 476
to Edmund Randolph for information of affairs, iii. 477
to Dr. Cochran describing style of living, iii. 477
reception of the Chevalier de la Luzerne, iii. 480
to Lafayette, iii. 480
change of plans, iii. 482
sends troops to the South, iii. 483
to President Reed for aid, iv. 2
on the destitution of the troops, iv. 2
calls upon the counties for supplies, iv. 3
to Colonel Ogden, to regard the rights of the people, iv. 4
bay of New York, frozen over, iv. 5
projects a descent on Staten Island, iv. 5
Arnold's government of Philadelphia, iv. 10
good opinion of Arnold, iv. 10
instructions to Arnold, iv. 11
sympathy with Arnold, iv. 17
reprimand to Arnold, iv. 20
solicitude for the safety of the Southern States, iv. 23
on the safety of Charleston, iv. 28
to Congress, on his situation, iv. 29
reinforces Lincoln, iv. 30
steadfastness of mind, iv. 30
to Baron Steuben on his difficulties, iv. 30
to Congress, on military reforms, iv. 31
committee appointed to consult with, iv. 33
to Lafayette on his return, iv. 34
reception of Lafayette, iv. 35
to Lafayette, on the reduction of New York, iv. 35
reduction of the army, iv. 38
mutiny in camp, iv. 38
to Pres. Reed, for relief, iv. 40
endeavors to rouse Congress, iv. 41
surrender of Charleston, iv. 56
supplies West Point, iv. 56
in position at Short Hills, iv. 59
watches Knyphausen, iv. 61
sets off towards Pompton, iv. 61
enemy move against Springfield, iv. 62
applies to the State Legislature for aid, iv. 67
congratulates the army on the arrival of French troops, iv. 72
his line of conduct, iv. 73
crosses the Hudson, iv. 74
interview with Arnold, iv. 74
withdraws his forces, iv. 76
interposes in the difficulty between Greene and Congress, iv. 76
on the derangement of the commissariat, iv. 77
the reverse at Camden, iv. 92
on militia and regular troops, iv. 92
to Gates on the battle of Camden, iv. 94
prepares to proceed to Hartford, iv. 95
crosses to Verplanck's Point, iv. 104
interview with French officers, iv. 118
returns to head-quarters, iv. 118
reception by the people, iv. 118
detained at Fishkill, iv. 119
ride to the Robinson House, iv. 119
arrives at the Robinson House, iv. 121
at West Point, iv. 121
hears of Arnold's treason, iv. 122
sends in pursuit of Arnold, iv. 122

letters from Arnold and Colonel Robinson, iv. 124
to Colonel Wade, urging vigilance, iv. 125
to General Greene, to proceed to King's Ferry, iv. 125
to Colonel Jameson, to prevent André's escape, iv. 126
interview with Mrs. Arnold, iv. 127
André brought to the Robinson House, iv. 128
to Greene on the custody of André and Smith, iv. 128
refers the case of André to a board of general officers, iv. 134
to Sir Henry Clinton, concerning André, iv. 136
André's appeal, iv. 141
eulogium on the captors of André, iv. 147
on Arnold's address, iv. 148
opinion of Arnold, iv. 149
to Governor Reed on Arnold's conduct, iv. 149
strengthens West Point, iv. 152
takes post at Prakeness, iv. 152
plan to capture Arnold, iv. 153
failure of Champe's design, iv. 155
appoints Greene to command the Southern army, iv. 156
confidence in Greene, iv. 156
state of the army, iv. 158
to Gen. Sullivan on the state of the country and army, iv. 158
to Lafayette on his desire for action, iv. 161
preparations to attack the British posts, iv. 162
his horsemanship, iv. 163
personal appearance, iv. 166
his character, iv. 166
at New Windsor, iv. 167
to Franklin on his disappointment, iv. 191
necessitous state of the country, iv. 192
instructions to Colonel Laurens, iv. 194
revolt of the Pennsylvania line, iv. 195
to Wayne on the revolt, iv. 197
disaffection in the army, iv. 203
suppresses mutiny of Jersey troops, iv. 203
articles of confederation, iv. 204
heads of departments formed, iv. 208
eulogium on Hamilton, iv. 208
misunderstanding with Hamilton, iv. 209
to Lafayette on Hamilton, iv. 213
reconciliation with Hamilton, iv. 213
to Greene on the battle of Guilford Court House, iv. 250
on the destruction of Arnold's corps, iv. 258
instructions to Lafayette, iv. 258
to Steuben on Arnold, iv. 259
sets out for New York, iv. 260
to Lafayette on Cornwallis, iv. 260
at Newport, iv. 260
arranges plan of campaign with Rochambeau, iv. 260
to Lafayette on the sailing of the French fleet, iv. 261
returns to New Windsor, iv. 261
to Greene on the chance of reinforcements, iv. 263
to Colonel Laurens on the failure of the Portsmouth expedition, iv. 264
anxiety for Greene, iv. 265
orders Lafayette to join Greene, iv. 265
to Lund Washington on his conduct towards the enemy, iv. 269
force on the Hudson, iv. 272
death of Colonel Greene, iv. 273
arrival of Count de Barras, iv. 275
interview with Rochambeau, iv. 275
number of force, iv. 276
plan of operations, iv. 277
to Gov. Clinton on his designs, iv. 278
march to King's Bridge, iv. 279
failure of the enterprise, iv. 279
at Dobb's Ferry, iv. 280
to Lee on his plans, iv. 281
reconnoitres the British posts, iv. 281
at King's Bridge, iv. 282
awkward predicament, iv. 283
to Lafayette on the effect of the reconnoissance, iv. 285
disappointment as to reinforcements, iv. 306
to the Eastern States, iv. 306
to Lafayette on the arrival of the Count de Grasse iv. 308
determines to command the expedition, iv. 309
crosses to Haverstraw, iv. 310
visits West Point with Rochambeau, iv. 311
move toward Virginia, iv. 311
to Noah Webster on the Virginia expedition (note), iv. 312
welcome at Philadelphia, iv. 315
concern about De Grasse, iv. 318
to Lafayette on Cornwallis, iv. 318
arrival of the Count De Grasse, iv. 318
reaches the head of Elk, iv. 319
to De Grasse on Cornwallis, iv. 319
at Baltimore, iv. 320
revisits Mount Vernon, iv. 320
pushes on to Williamsburg, iv. 320
hurries on the troops, iv. 321
on board the French fleet, iv. 325
plan of operations, iv. 325
arrival of Admiral Digby, iv. 326
threatened departure of the French fleet, iv. 325
army drawn up at Beaver Dam Creek, iv. 328
strength of forces, iv. 329
anecdote, iv. 331
despatches from Greene, iv. 332
to Greene on the battle of Eutaw Springs, iv. 340
fires the first gun against Yorktown, iv. 342
witnesses the storming of the redoubts, iv. 343
anecdote, iv. 348
and Knox, anecdote, iv. 345
surrender of Yorktown, iv. 352
and General O'Hara, iv. 353
on the victory, iv. 353

reinforces General Greene, iv. 358
dissolution of combined armies, iv. 358
at Eltham, iv. 358
death of John Parke Custis, iv. 358
proceeds to Mount Vernon, iv. 359
to Greene on the improvement of the victory, iv. 359
to Lafayette on the next campaign, iv. 360
reception by Congress, iv. 361
policy of the ensuing campaign iv. 361
bold project of Colonel Ogden, iv. 362
to Greene on retaliation, iv. 363
murder of Captain Huddy, iv. 364
demand on Sir Henry Clinton iv. 364
the case of Capt. Asgill, iv. 365
case of Colonel Webb, (note,) iv. 366
at Newburg, iv. 368
continues his precautions, iv. 368
arrival of Sir Guy Carleton, iv. 368
propositions of peace, iv. 369
discontent in the army, iv. 369
letter from Colonel Nicola, iv. 370
indignant reply to Nicola, iv. 370
negotiations for peace, iv. 371
to Rochambeau, advising a junction, iv. 372
at Verplanck's Point, iv. 372
on the reduction of the army, iv. 373
discontent of the army, iv. 375
anonymous paper, iv. 379
addresses committee of the army, iv. 381
to Congress on behalf of the army, iv. 385
news of peace, iv. 388
a plea for the soldier, iv. 389
general order on peace, iv. 390
grants furloughs, iv. 391
interview with Sir Guy Carleton, iv. 392
president of the Society of the Cincinnati, iv. 393
on the dissolution of the army, iv. 393
mutiny of Pennsylvania troops, iv. 398
to Congress on the mutiny, iv. 399
tour through New York, iv. 399
to Chastellux on his tour, iv. 400
parting address to the army, iv. 402
at Harlem, iv. 405
enters New York, iv. 406
farewell to his officers, iv. 407
adjustment of his accounts, iv. 408
journey to Annapolis, iv. 409
to Baron Steuben on his resignation, iv. 409
resigns his commission, iv. 410
returns to Mount Vernon, iv. 411
to Gov. Clinton on his retirement, iv. 411
to Knox on his retirement, iv. 412
to Lafayette; a soldier's repose, iv. 413
to the Marchioness de Lafayette, iv. 413
manner of living, iv. 414
declines the offer of the Pennsylvania council, iv. 415
applications from authors, iv. 415
to Dr. Craik on his Memoirs, iv. 415
reception of visitors, iv. 417
management of his estate, iv. 417
popular feeling against the Cincinnati, iv. 419
presides at a meeting of the Cincinnati, iv. 420
to Chastellax on his regard, iv. 420
arrival of Lafayette, iv. 420
tour west of the Mountains, iv. 421
observations on internal navigation, iv. 423
to Governor Harrison on internal improvement, iv. 425
reception by the Virginia House of Assembly, iv. 424
joined by Lafayette, iv. 424
parting with Lafayette, iv. 425
to Richard Henry Lee on inland navigation, iv. 226
at Annapolis, iv. 427
appropriation of Virginia Assembly, iv. 427
naval improvements, iv. 428
to Governor Clinton concerning naval matters, iv. 428
burden of correspondence, iv. 429
to Francis Hopkinson on sitting for likenesses, iv. 430
ornamental cultivation, iv. 431
extent of his estate, iv. 432
life at Mount Vernon, iv. 433
private character, iv. 434
fondness for children, iv. 434
in social life, iv. 435
unassuming manners, iv. 435
attention to others, anecdote, iv. 436
social disposition, iv. 437
festive gayety, iv. 438
and Mrs. Olney, iv. 438
laughter, anecdote, iv. 439
anecdote, Judges Marshall and Washington, (note,) iv. 440
anecdote, Colonel Lee, iv. 440
passion for hunting, iv. 441
anecdote, fox hunting, iv. 442
to Geo. Wm. Fairfax about deer, iv. 442
death of Greene, iv. 443
to Lafayette on Greene, iv. 443
to the Marquis de la Rouerie, iv. 444
to Rochambeau, reveries of peace, iv. 445
doubts the solidity of the confederation, iv. 446
to James Warren on the confederation, iv. 447
ideas on national policy, iv. 448
correspondence with John Jay. iv. 449
to Colonel Lee on the Massachusetts insurrection, iv. 451
to Knox on the same, iv. 453
to James Madison on the same, iv. 454
at the head of the Virginia delegation, iv. 455
Massachusetts insurrection quelled, iv. 456
attends the convention, iv. 457
anecdote, iv. 457
to Lafayette on the new constitution, iv. 459
returns to Mount Vernon, iv. 460
on the ratification of the constitution, iv. 461
to Lafayette on the Presidency, iv. 463
to Colonel Lee on the same, iv. 463
to Hamilton on the same, iv. 464

to Lafayette on the same, iv. 465
elected President, iv. 466
parting with his mother, iv. 466
to Knox on his election, iv. 466
sets out for New York, iv. 467
public dinner at Alexandria,] iv. 467
progress to New York, iv. 468
reception at Philadelphia, iv. 469
reception at Trenton, iv. 469
reception at New York, iv. 470
inauguration of, iv. 473
concluding remarks, iv. 476
the new government, v. 1
difficulties of his position, v. 4
confidence in Hamilton, v. 5
and Madison, v 6
privacy invaded, v. 7
Presidential etiquette, v. 8
first levee, anecdote, v. 12
attends balls, v. 13
presidential dinner, v. 15
presidential household, v. 16
his deportment, v. 16
his equipage, v. 18
love of horses, v. 18
residence in New York, (note,) v. 19
alarming illness, v. 20
exercises of the nominating power, v. 21
rebukes the Senate, v. 22
death of his mother, v. 23
nominates Hamilton as secretary of the treasury, v. 24
and Edmund Randolph, v. 25
to Jay, enclosing his commission, v. 26
department of state, v. 28
to Rochambeau on the French revolution, v. 36
to Gouverneur Morris on the same, v. 36
offers to appoint Jefferson secretary of state, v. 37
journey through the Eastern States, v. 38
Hancock's invitation, v. 39
reception at Boston, question of etiquette, v. 40
account of the ceremony, v. 41
reply to Governor Hancock, v. 42
address of the Cincinnati Society of Massachusetts, v. 43
return to New York, v. 44
message from Lafayette on affairs in France, v. 45
appoints Jefferson secretary of state v. 48
opens the session, (note,) v. 50
measures suggested in his address, v. 51
public credit, v. 51
on sectional jealousies, v. 55
assumption of State debts, v. 60
forms and ceremonies, v. 64
to Dr. Stuart on his levees, v. 64
to Lafayette on his cabinet, v. 66
to Luzerne on the French revolution, v. 70
receives the key of the Bastille, v. 72
to Lafayette, solicitude for, v. 72
visits Rhode Island, v. 73
return to Mount Vernon, v. 73
difficulties with the Indians, v. 74
information of Indian expedition, v. 77
residence at Philadelphia, v. 78
national bank, v. 79
his judgment, v. 80
opposite cabinet policy, v. 81
addresses Seneca chiefs, v. 82
on the first Congress, v. 83
cautions General St. Clair, v. 84
tour through the Southern States, v. 85
return to Philadelphia, v. 86
to David Humphreys on the stability of the government, v. 86
public credit, v. 85
to Lafayette on the state of the country, v. 89
to Lafayette on his personal danger, v. 90
concerning the flight and capture of Louis XVI., v. 92
to Lafayette on French affairs, v. 92
at Mount Vernon, v. 93
speech on the opening of the second Congress, v. 93
intelligence of St. Clair's disaster, v. 101
effect upon him, v. 102
vetoes the apportionment bill, v. 105
weary of political strife, v. 106
intention of retirement, v. 106
to St. Clair on a court of inquiry, v. 110
retains his confidence in St. Clair, v. 112
visits Mount Vernon, v. 112
to Madison on his intention to retire, v. 113
asks Madison's advice, v. 113
valedictory address, v. 113
conversation with Jefferson on political matters, v. 119
to Jefferson on his dissensions with Hamilton, v. 125
to Hamilton on the same, v. 126
on taking the oath of office, v. 136
takes the oath of office, v. 136
state of affairs in France, v. 137
Lafayette's downfall, v. 139
atrocities of the French revolution, v. 140
to Madame de Lafayette, v. 141
commencement of second term, v. 144
war between France and England, v. 144
proclamation of neutrality, v. 145
view of French affairs, v. 151
reception of Genet, v. 152
conversation with Jefferson on attacks of the press, v. 153
restitution of French prizes, v. 155
newspaper attacks, v. 157
adherence to duty, v. 157
called to Mount Vernon, v. 159
case of the Little Sarah, v. 163
trial of Gideon Henfield, v. 164
concerning the recall of Genet, v. 165
burst of feeling, v. 166
threatened dissolution of the cabinet, v. 168
interview with Jefferson, v. 169
ill-advised measures of Great Britain, v. 176
Indian hostilities, v. 177
opening address to Congress, v. 178
message relative to Genet, v. 179
to Jefferson on his retirement, v. 183

characterized by Jefferson, v. 184
concerning French expeditions, v. 189
relative to Genet, v. 189
relative to British aggressions, v. 191
wise moderation, v. 192
to Monroe in regard to Hamilton, v. 193
nominates Jay as envoy to Great Britain, v. 193
inimical letter, v. 197
insurrection in Pennsylvania, v. 197
proclamation to the insurgents, v. 198
to Governor Lee on the Democratic Societies, v. 199
issues second proclamation, v. 199
leaves for Carlisle, v. 199
correspondence with Morgan, v. 200
to the Secretary of State, v. 200
arrives at Cumberland, v. 201
to Gov. Lee concerning the army, v. 201
arrives at Philadelphia, v. 202
to Hamilton, his paternal care, v. 203
to Jay on the Pennsylvania insurrection, v. 203
denunciation of self-created societies, v. 205
to Knox on his resignation, v. 211
anxiety about the negotiation with England, v. 212
Jay's treaty, v. 213
ratification of the treaty, v. 215
at Mount Vernon, v. 217
excitement against, v. 217
reply to the select men of Boston, v. 218
public clamors, v. 219
to Randolph requesting to be advised, v. 220
recalled to the seat of government, v. 220
Fauchet's intercepted despatch, v. 221
signs the ratification, v. 223
conduct toward Randolph, v. 223
permits unlimited disclosure, v. 225
malignant attacks of the press, v. 226
reply to the Gov. of Maryland, v. 227
arrival of Lafayette's son, v. 229
to George Cabot concerning young Lafayette, v. 230
speech at the opening of Congress, v. 231
to Gouverneur Morris on the conduct of Great Britain, v. 234
receives the colors of France, v. 235
treaty with Great Britain, v. 236
demand by the House of Representatives, v. 236
reply to the resolution, v. 236
to Colonel Humphrey on the state of politics, v. 238
noble reply to Jefferson, v. 240
to Monroe on intercepted letter, v. 242
determines to retire, v. 244
farewell address, v. 245
sensation produced by, v. 246
last speech to Congress, v. 247
complaints of the French minister, v. 250
letter to Mr. Pinckney, v. 251
to Knox on the prospect of retirement, v. 252
denounces spurious letters, v. 253
farewell dinner, v. 253
at the inauguration of Adams, v. 254
farewell to the people, v. 254
banquet in honor of, v. 254
sets off for Mount Vernon, v. 256
arrives at home, v. 256
letters relating to, v. 257
to Mrs. S. Fairfax on Belvoir, v. 259
strange faces, v. 259
invites Lawrence Lewis to Mount Vernon, v. 259
advice to Nelly Custis, v. 261
anecdote of Miss Custis, v. 263
to Lafayette by his son, v. 264
on the French indignities. v. 267
pamphlet from General Dumas, v. 268
reply to Dumas, v. 269
threatened war with France, v. 271
on accepting the command, v. 273
appointed commander-in-chief, v. 273
accepts the commission, v. 274
to Knox on his appointment, v. 277
to Adams concerning Knox, v. 278
to Knox, explanatory, v. 279
to Knox urging his acceptance, v. 280
repairs to Philadelphia, v. 282
taxed with the cares of office, v. 282
return to Mount Vernon, v. 283
correspondence with Lafayette, v. 284
surprise at the appointment of minister to France, v. 286
the conflict in Europe, v. 287
solicitude for the army, v. 288
life at Mount Vernon, v. 291
plan for the management of his estate, v. 291
to Hamilton on military academy, v. 292
illness, v. 293
remedies, v. 294
his last hours, v. 295
his death, v. 296
his funeral, v. 297
his will, v. 298
to John F. Mercer on slavery, v. 298
to Lawrence Lewis on the same, v. 299
public testimonials of grief, v. 300
retrospect, v. 300
discharge of his civil functions, v. 300
character of, v. 321
his fame, v. 321
Washington, Major George A., v. 93
Washington, John Augustine, raises an independent company, i. 388
entreats Mrs. Washington to leave Mount Vernon, ii. 110
Washington, Lawrence, return from England, i. 19
campaign in the West Indies, i. 20
return home, i. 21
marries Miss Fairfax, i. 21
his attachment to George, i. 23
becomes manager of the Ohio Company, i. 46
his views on restraints on conscience, i. 46
failing health, departs for the West Indies, i. 69

arrives at Barbadoes, i. 60
goes to Bermuda, i. 62
letters home, i. 62
return, i. 63
death, i. 63
his character, i. 63
his will, i. 63
WASHINGTON, Lund, on the danger at Mount Vernon, ii. 111
compromises with the enemy, iv. 269
WASHINGTON, Martha, death and character of, v. 23
WASHINGTON, Mrs., at Mount Vernon, ii. 110
arrival at Cambridge, ii. 112
equipage, ii. 112
presides at head-quarters, ii. 114
celebration of Twelfth Night, ii. 114
at New York, ii. 194
arrival at Valley Forge, iii. 353
presides at Mount Vernon, iv. 417
journey to New York, v. 14
general reception, v. 15
her deportment, v. 17
death of Washington, v. 296
WASHINGTON, Mary, i. 22, 143
WASHINGTON, Colonel William A., leads the advance at Trenton, ii. 452
takes two cannon, ii. 453
described, iv. 44
brush with the enemy, iv. 45
joins Colonel White, iv. 49
surprised at Lancau's Ferry, iv. 49
exploit at Clermont, iv. 187
under Morgan, iv. 189
at the battle of the Cowpens, iv. 219
in charge of the prisoners, iv. 222
at Guilford Court House, iv. 245
with Marion, iv. 333
at Eutaw Springs, iv. 335
brings up the reserve, iv. 337
taken prisoner, iv. 338
WATERBURY, Colonel, raises and disbands a regiment, ii. 137
gallant conduct, ii. 387
taken prisoner, ii. 389
WATSON, Elkanah, picture of Washington in retirement, iv. 435
WATTS, Major, at Oriskany, iii. 153
wounded, iii. 154
Waxhaw, Tarleton's butchery at, iv. 53
WAYNE, Anthony, ii. 266
in command at Ticonderoga, iii. 26
examines the defences of the Highlands, iii. 67
Graydon's account of, iii. 84
at Chester, iii. 133
at Brandywine, iii. 193
hovers about the enemy, iii. 199
to Washington concerning the enemy, iii. 200
hears of premeditated attack, iii. 200
attacked by the British, iii. 200
demands a court-martial, iii. 201
is exonerated, iii. 201
in the battle of Germantown, iii. 262
drives in the enemy, iii. 262
in favor of attacking Philadelphia, iii. 296
detached to the advance, iii. 390
detached to attack the enemy, iii. 393
at Monmouth Court House iii. 398
opposes Cornwallis, iii. 457
to storm Stony Point, iii. 465
anecdote, (note,) iii. 465
marches against Stony Point, iii. 466
carries the fort, iii. 467
on the conduct of his soldiers, iii. 468
revolt of troops, iv. 196
pursues the mutineers, iv. 197
overtakes the troops, iv. 199
in a morass, iv. 292
ordered South, iv. 287
joins Lafayette, iv. 289
appointed to Western command, v. 111
takes the field against the Indians, v. 173
expedition against the Indians, v. 207
builds Fort Defiance, v. 207
overtures of peace, v. 208
defeats the Indians, v. 208
treaty with the Indians, v. 231
WEBB, Colonel, ii. 270
WEBB, Major General, i. 230
marches to the relief of Oswego, i. 230
WEBSTER, Lieutenant Colonel, to break up American posts. iv. 47
WEBSTER, Col., detached to Beattie's Ford, iv. 229
at Guilford Court House. iv. 247
WEEDON, Colonel, conducts Hessian prisoners to Newtown, ii. 459
Westmuller's portrait of Washington, (Appendix,) i. 455
WESHINGTON, William, of Weshington, i. 6
WESSYNGTON, De, origin of the name, i. 5
WEST, Major, iii. 82
West Point, decided to be fortified, iii. 362
Westchester County, British inroad, iv. 7
Wetzell's Mill, affair at, iv. 242
WHIPPLE, Commodore, commands fleet at Charleston, iv. 27
changes his position, iv. 28
retrograde move, iv. 43
WHIPPLE, Gen. Wm., iii. 164
WHITE, Bishop, on Washington's unassuming manners, iv. 436
Washington's farewell dinner, v. 253
WHITE, Col., with American cavalry, iv. 49
surprised by Tarleton, iv. 49
WHITE, Philip, captured and killed, iv. 333
WHITE, Mingo, speech to Washington, i. 333
White Plains, camp at, ii. 367
incendiarism at, ii. 375
WHITE THUNDER with Washington, i. 73
in Braddock's camp, i. 153
WHITING, Mr., death of, v. 159
Wild Hunter of Juniata, i. 149
WILKES on the appointment of the Earl of Carlisle, iii. 379
WILKINSON, General, interview with Gen. Lee. ii. 431
account of Lee's capture, ii. 433
hastens to Sullivan, ii. 435
secret of Lee's conduct, ii. 435
joins Washington, ii. 440
Washington's difficulties ii. 441

takes a letter from Gates to Washington, ii. 448
panders to Gates, iii. 217
watches Burgoyne, iii. 236
at Burgoyne's surrender, iii. 252
despatched by Gates to Congress, iii. 279
to Gates on the respect of Congress, iii. 280
breveted brigadier general, iii. 280
relative to the Conway correspondence, iii. 329
correspondence with Stirling on the Conway letter, iii. 338
honor wounded by Gates, iii. 339
arrives at Yorktown, iii. 340
interview with Capt. Stoddart, iii. 340
meets Lieut. Col. Ball, iii. 340
reconciliation with Gates, iii. 341
subsequent reception by Gates, iii. 342
sends in his resignation, iii. 342
to Stirling on the Conway letter, iii. 342
interview with Washington, iii. 343
to Washington on the Conway letter, iii. 343
resigns position as secretary of the Board of War, iii. 344
retirement, iii. 344
expedition against Indians, v. 94
WILLARD, Counsellor, i. 427
WILLET, Lieut. Col. Marinus, defeats British scouting party, iii. 30
sallies from Fort Schuyler, iii. 151
sacks the enemy's camp, iii. 156
volunteers to seek Schuyler, iii. 157
expedition against the Onondagas, iii. 456
WILLIAMS, David, and André, iv. 111
WILLIAMS, Col., driven in, i. 202
at Brooklyn, ii. 296
WILLIAMS, Col. Jas., takes the field, iv. 172
in the battle of King's Mountain, iv. 175
killed, iv. 177
WILLIAMS, Col. Otho H., commands the rear-guard, iv. 235
crosses the Dan, iv. 235
at Guilford Court House, iv. 245
at Eutaw Springs, iv. 335
attacks the British, iv. 337
WILLIAMS, Major, with the artillery, iii. 237
captured, iii. 238
Williamsburg rejoicings, i. 310
Wills' Creek, i. 65
WILLS, Major, killed in battle, v. 76
Wilmington taken by the British, iv. 228
WILSON, Jas., member of the Board of War and Ordnance, ii. 209
WILSON, James, Judge of Supreme Court, v. 26
Winchester, panic at, i. 195
alarm at, i. 214
attack apprehended, i. 215
WINGATE, Mr., account of presidential dinner, v. 15
Wintermoot's Fort, Colonel J. Butler at, iii. 433
WIRT on the organization of the General Congress, i. 366
WITHERSPOON, Dr., proposes a pair of spurs for Wilkinson, iii. 280
WOLCOTT, Oliver, Secretary of the Treasury, v. 210
WOLCOTT (the elder) on Washington's farewell address, v. 246
WOLFE, military services, i. 243
lands before Louisburg and storms the works, i. 244
surprises Light House Point, i. 245
reception in England, i. 246
to besiege Quebec, i. 265
ascends the St. Lawrence, i. 268
debarks on the Isle of Orleans, i. 269
his transports damaged by a storm, i. 269
establishes batteries, i. 269
crosses the St. Lawrence and encamps below the Montmorency, i. 270
reconnoitres up the river, i. 270
resolves to attack Montcalm in his camp, i. 270
crosses the Montmorency, i. 271
is repulsed, i. 271
his mortification, i. 272
illness, i. 272
calls a council of war, i. 272
changes plan of operations, i. 272
reconnoitres the town, i. 273
his health, i. 273
campaigning song, i. 273
Gray's elegy, anecdote, i. 274
descends the river, i. 274
passes the sentinel, i. 274
lands near Cape Diamond, i. 275
takes possession of the Plains of Abraham, i. 275
attacked by Montcalm, i. 275
wounded, i. 276
his last words and death, i. 276
Wood Creek, fight at, iii. 107
WOODFORD, Brig. Gen., reinforces Charleston, iv. 45
WOOLFORD, Col., reinforces Sumter, iv. 86
WOOSTER, David, appointed brigadier general, i. 414
noble conduct, ii. 58
before Quebec, ii. 199
recalled, ii. 220
hastens to Danbury, iii. 47
joins Silliman and takes command, iii. 49
attacks the British rear-guard, iii. 49
mortally wounded, iii. 49
death, iii. 51
Worcester, military stores collected at, i. 384
WRIGHT, portrait of Washington, (Appendix,) i. 457
Writs of Assistance, i. 301
Wyoming Valley, description of, iii. 432
expedition against, iii. 433
ravaged by Brant and Butler, iii. 434
desolation completed, iii. 435
Wyoming, battle of, iii. 434
massacre of Americans, iii. 434

Y.

Yankee Doodle, i. 395
Yorktown, situation of, iv. 317
its defences, iv. 327

invested, iv. 330
siege of, iv. 342
description of bombardment, iv. 344
storming of the redoubts, iv. 346
capitulates, iv. 352
terms of capitulation, iv. 352
number of prisoners, killed, wounded, and missing, and troops on both sides, (note,) iv. 352
effect of surrender, iv. 356
Young's House, expedition against, iv. 7
taken and burnt, iv. 8

See page 378.

Braddock, General, leaves Fort Cumberland, i. 163
asks the advice of Washington, i. 164
advances to attack Fort Duquesne i. 165
reception of Captain Jack, i. 166
his delay, i. 167
solicitude for Washington, i. 168
continued march, i. 168
deserted Indian camp, i. 168
three stragglers shot and scalped, i. 169
difficulties of the march, i. 169
precautions, i. 170
encamps at Thicketty Run i. 170
sends scouts to Fort Duquesne, i. 170
Scarooyadi's son killed by mistake, i. 177
admirable conduct, i. 171
tardiness of his march, i. 173
crosses the Monongahela, i. 174
commencement of the battle, i. 176
panic of the advanced guard, i. 178
attempts to rally them, i. 178
is wounded; his despair, i. 180
the route, i. 180
reach the Great Meadows, i. 182
his death, dying requests, i. 183
character, i. 184

UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA LIBRARY

THIS BOOK IS DUE ON THE LAST DATE
STAMPED BELOW

30m-6,'14

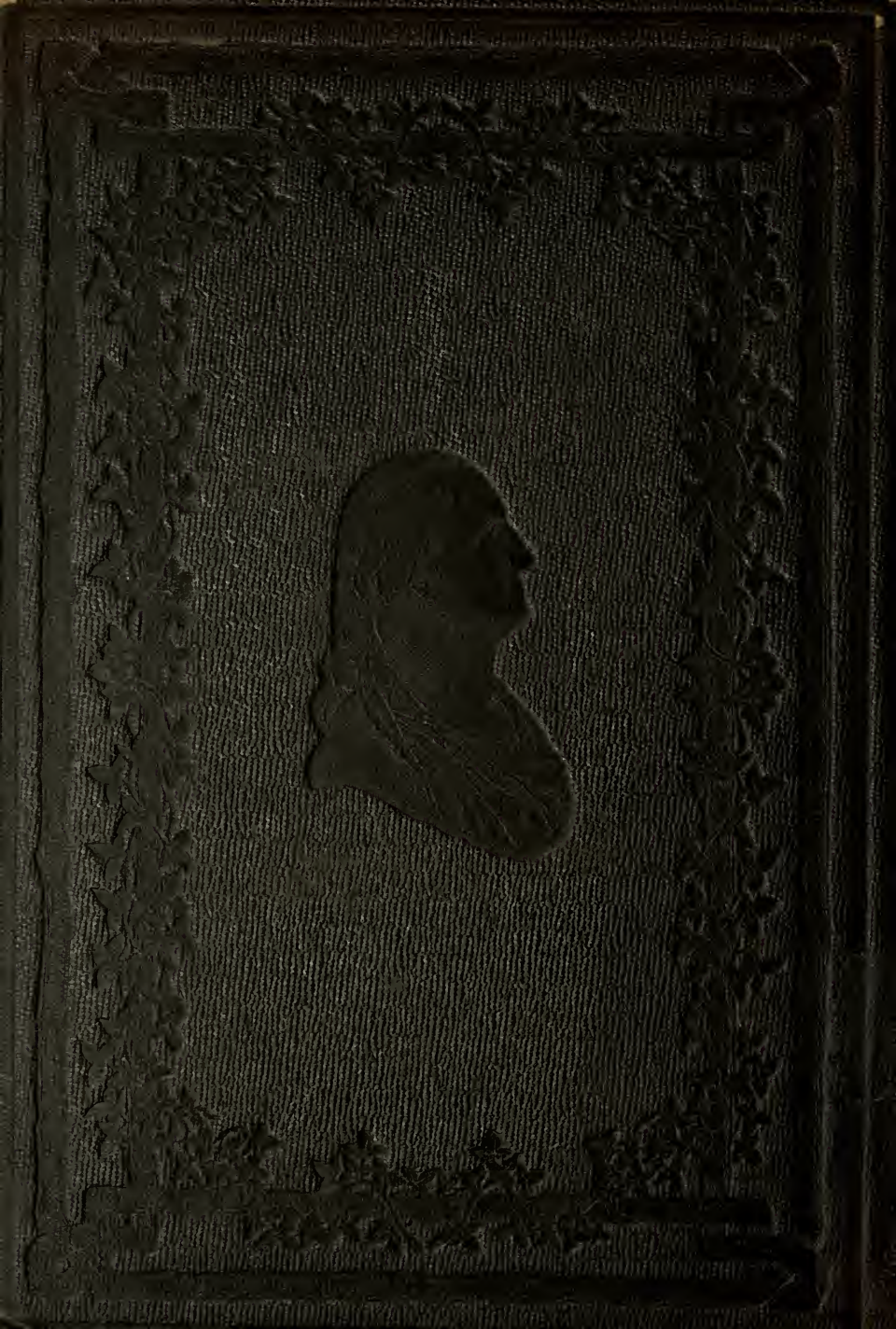
264400

Irving
Works (Life of George
Washington, v.5)

952
I72
1860
v.22

RBR Eng S130 B

OCT 15 1936 A Mathew OCT 3 1936

264400
Irving

UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA LIBRARY